

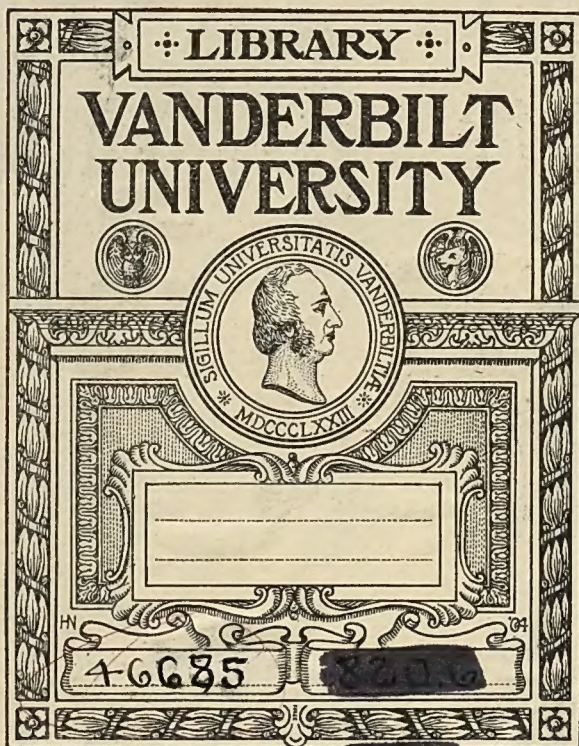
PR 1119.A2 no.136

The Brut

cen



3 0081 003 315 292



136

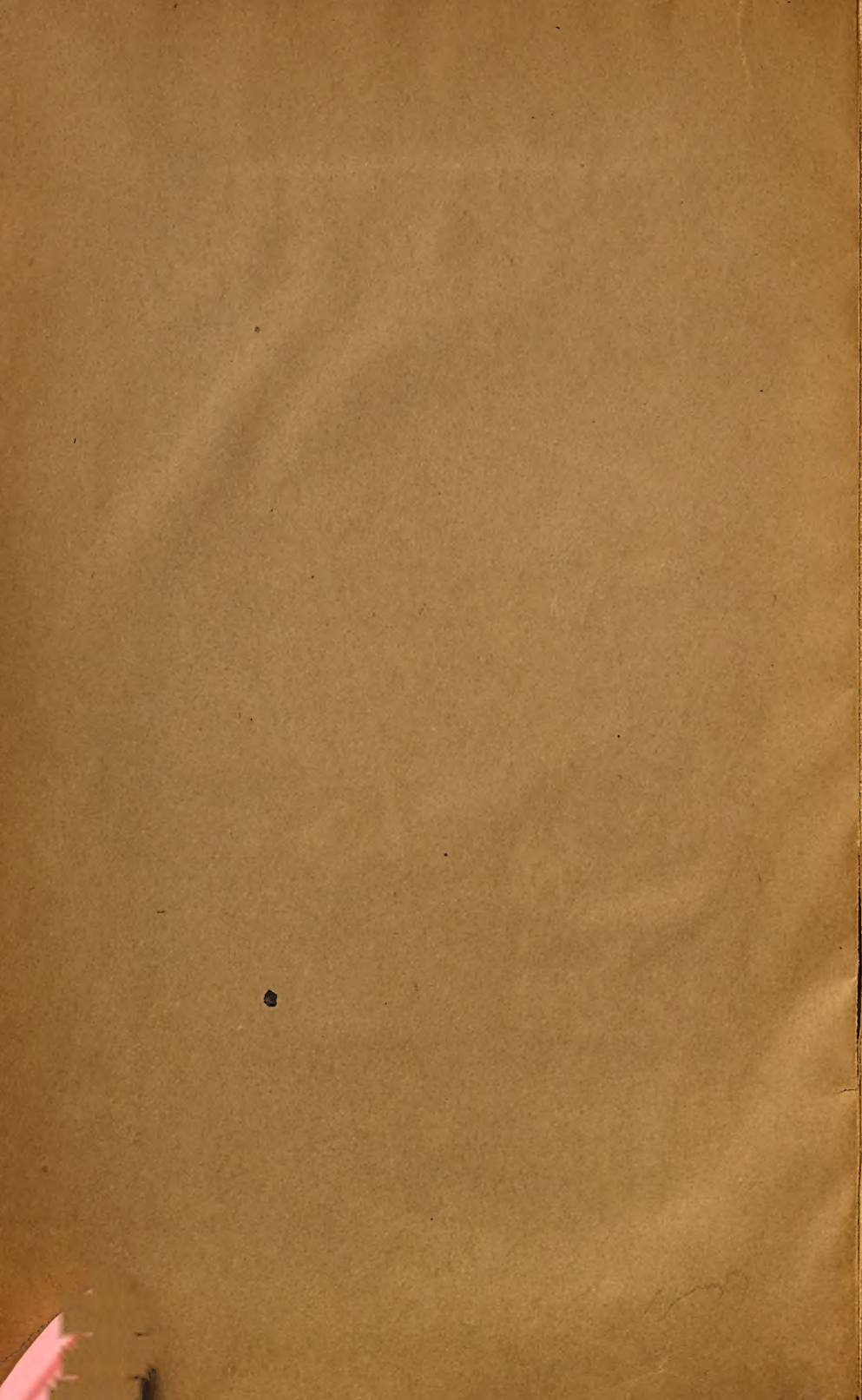
PR
1119
.A2
no.136

46685

Date Due

DEMCO-293

JE 1 49		Ret'd.	
DE 10 '52		27 JUN 1970	
DEC 18 '54		Ret'd.	
		11 JUL 1970	
		JUL 11 1970	
		Ret'd.	
		28 JUL 1970	
		15 MAR 1970	
		Ret'd.	
		20 JUL 1970	
		Ret'd.	
		08 AUG 1970	
		29 MAY 1970	
		Ret'd.	
		22 JUL 1970	
		AUG 28 1970	
		12 JUN 1970	
		RETURNED	
		25 FEB 1984	
		FEB 25 1984	



46685

The Brut

OR

The Chronicles of England,

EDITED FROM

MS. RAWL. B 171, BODLEIAN LIBRARY, &c.

BY

FRIEDRICH W. D. BRIE, PH.D.

WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY.

PART II

*(completing the Text, with the Roll of Battle Abbey, including
the name CHAUCER.)*

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY

BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LTD.,

DRYDEN HOUSE, 43 GERRARD STREET, SOHO, W.

AND BY HENRY FROWDE, OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS,

AMEN CORNER, E.C.

1908.

ERRATA.

- p. 298. The headline must be: *Caen* instead of *Scluse*.
- p. 333. In the head of the page: *MS. Lambeth* 331 instead of *Harley* 331.

Original Series, No. 136.

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED, LONDON AND BUNGAY.

PR
1119
A2
no. 136

46685

v

PREFACE.

THIS second part finishes the text of the Chronicle, or rather, series of Chronicles, contained in the present volumes. In the first part I have printed the text of the common Brut which comes down to A.D. 1333, while this second part contains the continuations of the Brut, composed by various authors at different times, in different places and with very varying intentions. Out of the great number of Continuations I have chosen only such as have not been published as yet; and among these, only such as afford new material for the student of History or Literature. If a Continuation exists in several MSS., I have always chosen the best MS., not the oldest, for publication, and have taken the one or two next best MSS. for collation. In a few cases, however, the Continuations are extant in one recension only. The text has been printed from the MSS. as it stands, without attempting conjectural emendations, but occasionally a word or sentence accidentally omitted has been supplied from the other MSS., in the text instead of in a footnote, for the convenience of readers. But in all cases of this kind the reading of the original has been put in a footnote. Letters or fragments of words accidentally omitted are mostly added in brackets. In the footnotes, mere variations of spelling have not been inserted as a rule, while inversions of words are always noticed.

The present publication will be welcome, as well to the Student of Literature as to the Student of History. The former will recognise in it the work which, in its various forms, has been for three centuries the most popular Chronicle of England, and will find in it some interesting matter, not only in the inserted poems, among which the two mocking songs against the Flemings (p. 582 and p. 600) are published for the first time, but also in a fair number of prose passages of which I shall only refer to that dealing with Henry V's dismissal of his old rioting companions (p. 594).

The Student of History will recognise in our text the first large

Chronicle in the English language which has been laid under contribution by nearly all the great Chronicle-writers of the 16th and 17th centuries. As to its historical value I readily admit that the authors of the common Brut and its Continuations have for the most part recorded such matter as is not new, and much that, in the present state of historical literature, will appear to many readers trivial and unimportant. But these disadvantages are inseparable from the uniform practice of annalists of the middle ages. I am, however, decidedly of opinion that there is an amount of original historical information contained in the various Continuations which outweighs the obvious trivialities, mistakes and repetitions; and even the superficial reader will see that long parts of the Continuations are given with a vividness which marks the narration like that of an eye-witness. The whole discussion of historical points connected with the Brut is reserved for the Introduction and the Notes in the third volume.

The following account of the MSS. used for the text and collation in the present volume may suffice. The letters prefixed to each designate them in the notes below the text:

The *first Continuation* from A.D. 1333 to A.D. 1377 called *B*, is taken from

C = MS. Corpus Christi Coll. Camb. 174, which was written in the beginning of the 15th century and closes with the burial of Edward III in 1377.

The text, though the best among the MSS. of the same recension, is not a good one. It has been collated with

T = MS. Br. Mus. Add. 24,859, a late but accurate transcript from a MS. of the second half of the 15th century which closes with the capture of Rouen in 1419, and

R = MS. Br. Mus. Reg. 17 D XXI, likewise a late but faithful transcript from a MS. of the second half of the 15th century which ends in the same year.

Appendix B describing the character of Edward III, is taken from

W = MS. Harley 753, a late 15th century MS. which closes in the year 1430. It has been collated with

X = MS. Lambeth 331, a 15th century MS. breaking off in 1422.

Preface. MSS. used for *Continuations B, C, D, E, F.* vii

Y = MS. Lambeth 491, which shows a hand of the early 15th century, and ends in 1377.

Z = MS. Lambeth 738, which is written by two 15th century hands, and ends in 1418.

The Continuation from A.D. 1377 to 1419, called *C*, is taken from

Kk = MS. Un. Libr. Camb, Kk I 12, which was written about the middle of the 15th century and closes in the year 1419.

It has been collated with *T* and *R* described above.

Appendix C, a fuller version of the time from A.D. 1399 to 1401, is taken from

Ra = MS. Rawl. B 173, which was written in the 15th century and closes in 1431. It contains a very bad text, but is unique for the piece it contains.

The Continuation from A.D. 1418 to 1430, called *D*, is taken from

G = MS. Galba E VIII, which is written in a fine 15th century hand and closes in 1430. It has been collated with

A = MS. Harley 2256, the text of which agrees in every respect with that of the foregoing Galba MS.; and where *A* is defective, with

B = MS. Harley 266, a MS. of the same type.

Appendix D, which gives additional matter for the years A.D. 1418 to 1430, is taken from

Hh = MS. Un. Libr. Camb. Hh VI 9, which was written in the 15th century, and closes in 1434.

The Continuation from A.D. 1419 to 1431, called *E*, is taken from

E = MS. Egerton 650, which shows a hand of the time about 1450, and closes in 1431.

Appendix E, containing a differing version for the time 1422-31, is taken from *Ra* = MS. Rawl. B 173, which is described above.

The Continuation from A.D. 1430 to 1446, called *F*, is taken from

Tr = MS. Trin. Coll. Camb. O 9, 1 which closes in 1446. It has been collated with

BRUT.

*

viii *Preface. MSS. used for Continuations G, H, I, and K.*

U = MS. Un. Libr. Cambr. Hh VI 9 down to 1434 where *U* closes.

The Continuation from A.D. 1419 to 1461, called *G*, is taken from

Ad = MS. Br. Mus. Add. 10,099, which was written in the end of the 15th century, and closes in 1461. It has been collated with

H = MS. Harley 3730, which breaks off in 1452, and

C = Caxton's first printed edition of 1480, which closes in 1461.

The Collection of various pieces between 1066 and 1436, called *H*, is taken from

Ha = MS. Harley 53 which was written in the 15th century and breaks off during the siege of Calais in 1436. It has been collated with

L = Lambeth 6, a finely illuminated MS., which shows a hand of the end of the 15th century, and closes with the end of the siege of Calais in 1436. Its text, however, is not so good as that of *Ha*.

The Continuation of the foregoing piece *H*, called *I*, is taken from *L*, which is unique in this part.

The Collection of pieces between Havelok's time and A.D. 1475, called *K*, is taken from

La = MS. Lambeth 84, whose unique text shows a hand of the end of the 15th century, and closes in 1475.

For anything else the reader is referred to the third volume of the present edition, which will contain Introduction, Notes, Glossary and Index.¹ Finally, I have again to express my thanks to Dr. Frederick J. Furnivall for his constant and invaluable help. In both volumes the headlines over the pages are added by him.

FRIEDRICH W. D. BRIE.

Marburg a/L., August 1908.

¹ An abstract of the Introduction has appeared in German under the title: *Geschichte und Quellen der mitttelenglischen Prosachronik The Brute of England oder The Chronicles of England*. Marburg. N. G. Elwert. 1905.

SUMMARY OF CONTENTS.

B.

Continuation of the Brut from A.D. 1333 to 1377.

Chapters 224-8.

Edward III takes Berwick. Balliol does homage for Scotland. Cornwall is made a Duchy. Edward claims France, and makes his preparations for war. The English win the battle of Sluys, A.D. 1340, and besiege Tournay. Want of money compels Edward to make peace with France. Storms at sea on his way back. Edward goes to Scotland. His son is made Prince of Wales. Constitution of the Round Table. The English imitate the foolish dress of strangers. Expedition into Brittany, A.D. 1345. Edward enters Normandy at La Hogue. English Victory at Caen. Battle of Crecy, A.D. 1346. Edward besieges Calais. The Scotch invaders beaten at Nevil's Cross. The King of France avoids a proposed combat near Calais. Calais surrenders, A.D. 1347. Citizens kindly treated. The Plague of 1348-9. Frustrated treachery of Geoffrey of Charney at Calais ... pp. 291-303

Chapters 229-231.

Sea-fight between the Spaniards and English, A.D. 1349. New Coinage. General dearth. A Drought. Negotiations about Guienne, furthered by the Pope, but broken up by the English. French attempt on Guienne. Edward crosses the sea, but John of France flees, A.D. 1355. The Scotch try to take the Castle of Berwick. Berwick surrenders. Edward III is crowned King of Scotland. The Black Prince in Gascony. Battle of Poitiers, A.D. 1356. The French King as prisoner in England. The festival of St. George, A.D. 1358. Marriage of Duchess Blanche. Edward invades Burgundy, A.D. 1360, and sets fire to the suburbs of Paris. English naval victories. Great Storm near Orleans. Treaty of Bretigny. King John of France is freed. Thunder-storms, and appearance of the Devil. Anglo-French Treaty confirmed at Westminster. Wonders and apparitions. Marriage of the Prince of Wales to Joan of Kent, A.D. 1361 ... pp. 303-314

Chapters 232-235.

Wind, Rain and Frost. Law-pleading in English, A.D. 1363. Charles of Blois slain, A.D. 1364. Peter's Pence not to be paid. King

Pedro of Spain is deposed by his brother, A.D. 1366. Danish Invaders are repulsed in the North-sea. The Black Prince helps King Pedro of Spain. Battle of Navarra. Marriage of Prince Lionel, Duke of Clarence, A.D. 1366. Great Pestilence, A.D. 1369. Death of the Earl of Warwick at Calais. Sir John Hawkwood. Robert Knollis's expedition to France. Limoges rebels against the Black Prince. The King of Navarra's visit to England. King Pedro's daughters married to the Duke of Lancaster and the Earl of Cambridge. Spaniards surprise Englishmen at Rochelle. pp. 314-326

Chapters 236-239.

The Duke of Lancaster's expedition to Bordeaux, A.D. 1373. Disputes between Edward III and the Pope. Truce with France for one year. Great pestilence. The Earl of Pembroke is taken prisoner by the Spanish, A.D. 1374. The Commons refuse further money unless the King proves his need of it, A.D. 1376. Alice Ferrers and Lord Latimer. Piers de la Mare imprisoned. Death of the Black Prince, A.D. 1377. Revolt of Warwick's tenants. Subsidy granted to Edward III. Sir John Munsterworth executed for treachery. Death of Edward III, A.D. 1377 pp. 326-332

Appendix B.

The Character of Edward III. pp. 333-334

C.

Continuation of the Brut from A.D. 1377 to 1419.

Chapters 239-240.

Coronation of Richard II. Hawle and Shakyll, A.D. 1378. French galleys burn English Towns. Revolt of Jack Straw and Wat Tyler, A.D. 1381. Walworth slays Jack Straw. Punishment of the rebels, Earthquake, A.D. 1382. Crusade of the Bishop of Norwich, A.D. 1383. Fight near Dunkirk, A.D. 1383. Marriage of Richard II with Anne of Bohemia.¹ Expedition of the Duke of Lancaster into Spain, A.D. 1386. The King of Armenia visits England. Treaty with the Scots. The Earl of March slain in Ireland, A.D. 1398. The rising of the Five Lords, A.D. 1387. Flight of the evil counsellors. Tournament for foreigners in London, A.D. 1388. John of Gaunt's Expedition to Spain, A.D. 1387. Dispute between Londoners and the Bishop of Salisbury about a baker's broken head. King Richard's Quarrel with the Londoners. Reconciliation, and great reception of him. Jousts in Smithfield. Death of Queen Anne, A.D. 1394.² pp. 335-348

¹ "Right as our firste lettre is now an A"—Anne, crowned Queen of England on Jan. 14, 1382—Lowes on the date of Chaucer's *Troilus*, Book I, st. 25, in *Publ. of Modern Lang. Assoc. of America*, June 1908.

² See Lowes on the effect of this on the shorter and revised Prologue to Chaucer's *Legend of Good Women*.

Chapters 241-242.

King Richard marries Isabella of France, A.D. 1396. Coronation of the Queen. King Richard arrests the Duke of Gloster, and sends him to Calais, A.D. 1397. Murder of the Duke. Other arrests. The great Parliament at Westminster. Muster of Richard's adherents. The Earl of Arundel sentenced and executed. Others condemned to perpetual imprisonment. Creation of Nobles. Duel between Bolingbroke and Norfolk stopt by the King, A.D. 1398. False Blank Charters. Richard's Expedition to Ireland, A.D. 1399. Return of Bolingbroke. Richard deposed, and Bolingbroke made King pp. 349-359

Chapter 243.

Coronation of Henry IV, A.D. 1399. Richard II starved. Plot against Henry IV; conspirators executed, A.D. 1400. Debate between Owen Glendower and Lord Grey de Ruthin, A.D. 1401. The King invades Wales. A comet, A.D. 1402. Battle of Shrewsbury, A.D. 1403. The Emperor of the Turks in London. The Marriage of Henry IV, A.D. 1403. Marriage of the Princess Blanche. English naval victory near Flanders, A.D. 1404. Execution of Serle. Duel in Smithfield. Archbishop Scrope's rebellion and execution, A.D. 1405. Marriage of the Earl of Kent, A.D. 1407. Death of Sir Robert Knollis. Princess Philippa is married to the King of Denmark, A.D. 1405. Duel in Smithfield. Death of Northumberland and Bardolf, A.D. 1408. The Earl of Kent killed at St. Brioux, A.D. 1408. Six days' jousting by Hainaulters in London, A.D. 1409. Duel in Smithfield between Glocester and Arture. Rys ap Die's Execution. English Victory at St. Cloud, A.D. 1411. Victory at La Hogue, A.D. 1412. Henry IV dies in "Jerusalem," A.D. 1413 pp. 359-372

Chapters 244-245.

Henry V re-buries Richard II, A.D. 1413. Lollards' conspiracy discovered, A.D. 1414. The sending of the tennis-balls. Henry V's war-preparations. Conspiracy against the King's life, A.D. 1415. Henry invades France and besieges Harfleur. Surrender of Harfleur. Battle of Agincourt, A.D. 1415. Killing of the French prisoners. The English Dead. Henry V's reception in London. The German Emperor meets King Henry. Henry V's muster of ships. Second Invasion of France, A.D. 1417. Surrender of the French cities. Siege of Cherbourg. Arrival of the Earl of March in France. Sir John Oldcastle's imprisonment and execution, A.D. 1417. Siege of Rouen, A.D. 1418. Siege of Caudebec. Names of the Governors of Rouen. Distress of the City. Rouen surrenders, A.D. 1419 pp. 373-391

*Appendix C.**Fuller Version of the time from 1399 to 1401.*

Conspirators against Henry IV punished. Execution of Roger Clarendon and the prior of Laund. Rebellion of Owen Glendower.

Lord Grey de Ruthin taken prisoner. The capture of Edmund Mortimer. Henry V's fruitless expedition into Wales ... pp. 392-393

D.

Continuation of the Brut from A.D. 1418 to 1430, including John Page's Poem on the siege of Rouen.

Henry V besieges Rouen, A.D. 1418. Stations of his generals. Chain and bridges across the Seine. Caudebec wants to share the fate of Rouen. Cherbourg won by Humphrey of Gloster. Reinforcements for Henry V. Rumoured approach of the French King. Chief Captains of Rouen. Defence of the city. Henry arranges a sham fight with a rescuing power, to deceive the French in Rouen. Deaths from starvation. Henry feeds the expelled starving Roueniers. The City sends delegates into the English camp. *Beginning of the Poem.* The delegates want safe-conduct to the King. The King is ready to see them. They ask him for mercy. Henry grants them time. Tents are pitched to treat in. The Roueniers refuse the English terms. The poor in Rouen insist on the rich yielding to Henry V. If no rescue comes in eight days, Rouen is to be given up to Henry V. Delivery of the keys. The English welcomed in Rouen. Henry V hears mass in the Minster. *End of the Poem.* Queen Joan arrested. Death of Friar Randulf. Meeting of Henry V and the French Queen. No agreement. Pontoise taken by the English. Treaty of Troyes, A.D. 1420. Henry V weds Katherine of France. Their reception in London. Death of the Duke of Clarence. Birth of Henry VI, A.D. 1421. Henry V besieges Meaux in Brie. Capture of Meaux. Death of Henry V, A.D. 1422.

The child Henry VI reigns. His Guardians. Wonderful escape of Gloster's wife. Quarrel in London, A.D. 1425. Death of the Duke of Exeter, A.D. 1426. The Bishop of Winchester is made Cardinal. Siege of Orleans, A.D. 1428. The Earl of Salisbury killed. Siege of Orleans raised by the French. Boat with Duke of Norfolk swamped, A.D. 1429. Great Dearth. Coronation of Henry VI, A.D. 1430. Reinforcements sent to France. Smithfield Duel stopt. Henry VI crosses the sea. His success in France. Joan of Arc taken, A.D. 1430

pp. 394-439

Appendix D.

Additional matter from the time A.D. 1420 to 1428.

Will Wawe hanged. Great Rain in 1427. Royal Seal counterfeited. A Widow's Murderer stoned. The heretic Richard Hunder burnt pp. 440-443

E.

Continuation of the Brut from the capture of Rouen, A.D. 1419 to 1430.

Queen Joan arrested. Henry V weds Catherine, A.D. 1420. Feast at the Queen's coronation. The *menu* at the banquet. Death of the

Duke of Clarence. Henry V goes to France. Birth of Henry VI, A.D. 1421. Death of Henry V. His corpse brought to London. French homage to Henry VI. The heretic William Taylor burnt. Siege of Orleans raised, A.D. 1429. Lord Talbot taken prisoner. Great dearth. Henry VI in London. His coronation at Westminster. Duel in Smithfield stopt, A.D. 1430 pp. 444-451

Appendix E.

Additional matter for the time from A.D. 1422 to 1431.

The child Henry VI brought to London. Sir John Mortimer beheaded. Quarrel in London, A.D. 1425. Parliament at Leicester. False Wines in London. Siege of Orleans raised, A.D. 1429. Lord Talbot taken prisoner. Coronation of Henry VI, A.D. 1430. Parliament at Westminster pp. 452-455

F.

Continuation of the Brut from A.D. 1430 to 1446.

Spanish Ambassadors insulted, A.D. 1430. A Lollard burnt. Jack Sharp executed, A.D. 1431. Ludgate-prison built. Henry VI's journey from Calais to Rouen. Reception in Paris. Wonderful shows. The King visits his grandmother. Coronation at Paris, A.D. 1431. Reception in London, A.D. 1432. Cornhill and Cheapside. St. Paul's and Westminster Abbey. Parliament at Westminster. Foreign Ambassadors. Convocation at Basel. The Earl of Huntingdon goes into Normandy. Great Pestilence, A.D. 1434. Hard frost. Negotiations for peace with France, A.D. 1435. Money for war granted to Henry VI. English troops to Normandy. Fights round Calais. The English besieged in Calais are rescued, A.D. 1436. Flemish towns taken. Scotch invasion repulsed. Hard Frost, A.D. 1436. Death of Queen Katherine. Foreigners at the English Parliament. The Duke of York comes back to England, A.D. 1437. A Murderer sentenced. Heretics burnt. Dear food. Storms and Earthquake. The Earl of Huntingdon goes to France. Peace-meeting at Calais, A.D. 1439. Cruel murder discovered. Parliament at Westminster and Reading. Ship-thieves hanged. Heretics burnt. Duel in Smithfield, A.D. 1440. Expedition to France. Henry VI visits the City. Storm raised by witches. The clerk Roger retracts his devilish art. Eleanor Cobham found guilty of treason and witchcraft, A.D. 1441. Her public penance. The clerk Roger is hanged. Duel in Smithfield. Lord Talbot's expedition to France, A.D. 1442. Arrant thieves hanged. A woman pressed to death for bad language. Negotiations for Henry VI's marriage. King's offender pardoned. Princess Margaret betrothed to Henry VI, A.D. 1444. St. Paul's steeple burnt, A.D. 1445. King Henry's wedding. Queen Margaret's procession and coronation. French Ambassadors come to treat for peace
pp. 456-490

G.

*Continuation of the Brut from the Capture of Rouen,
A.D. 1419 to A.D. 1461.**Chapters 245¹-251.*

Murder of the Duke of Burgundy, A.D. 1419. Queen Joan arrested. Henry V weds Katherine of France, A.D. 1420. The Duke of Clarence slain. Birth of Henry VI, A.D. 1421. The Queen visits Paris. Death of Henry V, A.D. 1422. Praise of Henry V, who was wild in youth, but virtuous when King. His French wars incited by the clergy. His foundations of religious houses. Gloster made Protector. Battle of Verneuil, A.D. 1424. Gloster weds the Duchess of Holland. His Hainault attack fails. Affray in the City, A.D. 1425. Henry VI and Nobles knighted. Much rain. Lord Salisbury shot at Orleans, A.D. 1428. Widow's murderer stoned. Henry VI crowned, A.D. 1430. Joan of Arc burnt, A.D. 1431. Henry VI's coronation at Paris. Rebellion of the soldiers at Calais. Pope Eugenius IV deposed. Congress of Arras, A.D. 1435. French plot to seize Calais discovered. The Duke of Burgundy besieges Calais. Siege raised by the Duke of Gloster, A.D. 1436. Flemish towns ransacked. Roxburgh besieged by the Scots. Death of Queen Katherine, A.D. 1437. Treaty between the King and the Duke of Burgundy pp. 491-506

Chapters 251-255.

Death of Sigismund of Germany. Owen Tudor's imprisonment, A.D. 1438. Death of Warwick at Rouen. Great dearth. Frederick is chosen Emperor of Germany. Eleanor Cobham is accused of treason, A.D. 1441. Her accomplices. Disputes as to the Lord Mayor. St. Paul's steeple burnt, A.D. 1445. Henry VI's marriage with Margaret. Duel at Smithfield stopt by the King. Henry's marriage dearly bought. Losses by it. Suspicious death of Duke Humphrey of Gloster, A.D. 1447. The papal Schism. Felix resigns. Rouen and Normandy lost. Constantinople taken by the Turks. Dutch ships captured. Rouen taken by the French, A.D. 1448. Captain Bluebeard executed, A.D. 1450. The Duke of Suffolk's end, A.D. 1450. Jack Cade's rebellion. His entrance into London. Lord Say beheaded. Jack Cade killed by Alexander Iden, A.D. 1450. pp. 506-520

Chapters 256-263.

Rebellion of the Duke of York. Prince Edward born, A.D. 1453. Lord Mayor's show on the Thames. Rebellion of the Lords. First Battle of St. Albans, A.D. 1455. The Duke of York made Protector. Lombard Riot in London. Great Fish caught. Prisoners of Newgate break out. The French pillage Sandwich. Bishop Peacock's abjuration. Concord among the Lords, A.D. 1458. Battle of Bloreheath, A.D.

¹ Compare under C. The reckoning differs by one chapter.

1459. Trollop deserts the Yorkists. Failure of the Yorkist revolt, A.D.
 1459. The Yorkists keep Calais, and increase in number. Sandwich
 taken, A.D. 1460. Lord Warwick goes to Ireland, to speak with the
 Duke of York. Yorkist Lords come to London. Battle of Northampton,
 A.D. 1460. Henry VI to be King for his life; and York acknowledged
 as his successor. Battle of Wakefield, A.D. 1460. The Duke of York
 slain. Second Battle of St. Albans, A.D. 1461. Henry VI captured.
 Londoners negotiate with the Queen. Flight of the rich merchants.
 Henry VI deposed. Edward IV made King. Battle of Towton, A.D.
 1461. Coronation of Edward IV pp. 520-533

H.

Various Pieces from MS. Harley 53, from A.D. 1066 to 1436.

I. Coronation of William I's Queen. Battle Abbey escutcheons.
 Battle Abbey Roll of the names of the Norman knights ... pp. 534-537

II. Edward III resolved to chastise the French, A.D. 1346. Roll
 of the English for Crecy and Calais. Battles before and at Crecy.
 Siege of Calais. Scotch invaders are beaten at Nevil's Cross, A.D. 1346.
 The King of France avoids a proposed combat near Calais pp. 537-544

III. Bolingbroke's return to England, A.D. 1399. Richard II is
 deserted, and taken prisoner. Bolingbroke's son Henry talks friendly
 with Richard II. Richard II starved. His corpse exhibited. A
 Conspiracy disclosed to Henry IV by the Duke of Aumerle, A.D. 1400.
 Conspirators beheaded. Revolt of Owen Glendower, A.D. 1400. The
 King's expedition to Wales. Scotch beaten at Homildon Hill, A.D. 1402.
 The King buffets Sir Henry Percy. Battle of Shrewsbury, A.D. 1403.
 The Emperor of Constantinople in London. Ships captured at sea.
 Battle of Marck, A.D. 1405 pp. 544-551

IV. The Lollards' conspiracy against Henry V discovered, A.D. 1414.
 Sir John Oldcastle arrested. Henry V's claim to France. His prepara-
 tions for an invasion, A.D. 1415. Traitors beheaded. Siege of Harfleur.
 The great gun Goodgrace. Names of Harfleur Hostages. Surrender
 of Harfleur. Battle of Agincourt, Oct. 25, 1415. The English King's
 words to his men. His personal bravery. Names of the French Lords
 killed at Agincourt. The English dead. French prisoners killed.
 Henry V's reception in London, A.D. 1466. Visit of the German
 Emperor. Council at Calais pp. 551-559

V. Capture of Rouen, A.D. 1419. Attempt at peace between England
 and France. The Duke of Burgundy slain. The Treaty of Troyes,
 A.D. 1420. Henry V betrothed to Katherine of France. Their return to
 England, A.D. 1421. Death of the Duke of Clarence. Henry V's second
 expedition to France. Birth of Henry VI, A.D. 1421. The Earl of
 Warwick made keeper of Henry VI, A.D. 1422. Sir Roger Mortymer
 executed. Verneuil surrendered to the French. Battle of Verneuil,
 A.D. 1424. Names of the Scotch and French slain in the battle.
 The Prince of Portugal in England. Quarrel in London, A.D. 1425.

Henry VI knighted. William Wawe hanged. The Bishop of Winchester goes to Normandy against the Pope's order, A.D. 1427. Henry VI's coronation at Westminster. Henry VI in Paris, A.D. 1431. Rebellion of the soldiers at Calais about their wages. Congress of Arras, A.D. 1435. The men of Popering's bad behaviour. The Duke of Burgundy besieges Calais, A.D. 1436. The Flemings scorn the English by pictures and interludes. The French, disguised as fishermen, try to surprise Calais. Death of the Duke of Bedford. Calais well fortified. Calais men sworn to Henry VI. English force gathered to rescue Calais. Successful English raids from Calais. The English surprised while hunting hares. The Picards beaten in the Golden Dale. The Flemings capture the Castle of Oye. William Bullion treated as a traitor. Marck surrenders to the Flemings. The Flemings besiege Calais, A.D. 1436. The Picards ruin Guisnes Castle. Sandgate's shameful surrender. The Flemings try to block the harbour of Calais. The men of Bruges and their "Bad Thursday" at Calais. The bulwark of the men of Ghent taken

pp. 559-580

I.

End of the Siege of Calais, A.D. 1436, from MS. Lambeth 6.

The besieged English receive reinforcements. The Duke of Burgundy and the Flemings abandon the siege. The Siege of Guisnes given up by the Picards. The Englishmen's mocking song against the Flemings

pp. 581-584

K.

Various Pieces from MS. Lambeth 84, from Havelok's time to A.D. 1475.

- | | | |
|--|--------|-------------|
| I. Story of Havelok's son Curan and Argentil | ... | pp. 585-588 |
| II. Richard II's quarrel with his uncle, the Duke of Gloster, about the soldiers from Brest, A.D. 1397 | | pp. 588-589 |
| III. Deposition of Richard II, and Election of Henry IV, A.D. 1399. Prophecy that Richard II should be destroyed by a toad | ... | pp. 589-590 |
| IV. Richard II murdered by Piers of Exton, A.D. 1400. His corpse brought to London and to Langley. Reported starvation of Richard II. His treasure | | pp. 590-592 |
| V. The causes of the Battle of Shrewsbury, A.D. 1403 | ... | p. 593 |
| VI. Accession and character of Henry V, A.D. 1413. Dismissal of his old companions. With the help of Katherine Swynford, he sets his court in order. He stops a duel | | pp. 593-596 |
| VII. Battle of Agincourt, A.D. 1415. The English King's crown captured and sent to Paris. The people from Paris hasten to Agincourt. French prisoners killed. The list of dead | | pp. 596-598 |
| VIII. The Siege of Rouen, A.D. 1418. Prophecies of Surrender. Every eldest son in Rouen made a King on St. Dennis' Eve | ... | p. 598 |

IX. Prophecy at Henry VI's birth, A.D. 1421. His coronation. The Popering men's bad behaviour. The Duke of Exeter's revenge. English Ballad against the Flemings pp. 598-601

X. The first battle of St. Albans, A.D. 1455. The Battles of Blore heath and Ludlow, A.D. 1459. The Battles of Northampton and Wakefield, A.D. 1460: of St. Albans and Wigmore, A.D. 1461
pp. 601-602

XI. Battle of Towton, A.D. 1461. Henry VI taken prisoner. Battle of Barnet, A.D. 1471. Death of Henry VI. King Edward IV goes to France, A.D. 1475. The French pox, the stitch and the flix
pp. 602-604

Appendix to H. (Compare p. 535-537.)

Alphabetical List of the Battle Abbey Roll in MS. Harley 53
pp. 605-607



[B]

[FROM THE BATTLE OF HALIDON HILL (A.D. 1333) TO THE
DEATH OF EDWARD III (A.D. 1377).][MS. *Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, No. 174, leaf 172, back.*]

¶ Ande so, after þis gracious victorie, þe King turnyd him
aȝen vnto þe same seege of Berwyk. & whan þey of þe sege,¹ sawen
& herd hov þat þe² King Edward had sped, þey zolden to him þe
4 toun, with þe castell, on þe morwe after þat þe bataile was, þat ys
forto seyn, on Seint Margaretes day. And þan þe King ordeyned
Sere Edward Bayllol, with opere noble & worpy men, to be³ keepers
and gouernours of Scotlonde in his absence; & hym self turned
8 aȝen, and come into Englonde after þis victory, with myche ioie &
worship.

¶ And in þe next ȝere sewyng,⁴ þat ys forto⁵ seyn, þe ȝere of our
Lord Mⁱ. CCC. & xxxij,⁶ & of King Edward, þe vj.,⁷ he wente aȝen
12 into Scotland in þe wynter tyme; at whiche viage þe castell of
Kylbrigge in Scotland, for hym & his men þat with hym comen,
he recouered, & had⁸ aȝens the Scottis, al þat⁹ his owne luste.¹⁰
¶ And in þat same ȝere, Sere Edward Baillol, king of Scotlande,
16 held his parlement in Scotland, with meny noble lordes of Eng-
lond, þat were at þat same parlement, for enchesoun of hire landes
and lordshipes þat þey had in þe reume of Scotland, and helden of
þe same Baillol. & in þe vij. ȝere of his regne, aboute þe feste of
20 sent Iohn¹¹ Baptiste, Sire Edward Baillol, þe verry and trewe King
of Scotland, as by heritage & riȝte lyne, made his homage and
feaute vnto King Edward of Englonde for þe reaume of Scotland,
at þe Nev Castell vp Tynt, in precense of meny worpi lordez, and
24 also of communes of boþe reaumes, & anon after in þe same ȝere of¹²
King Edward of Englonde resceyued of þe duke of Britaigne his
homage for þe erldome & lordship of Richemound.¹³ ¶ And so
folwyng in þe neyne ȝere of his regne, after Micelmasse, King
28 Edward rode into Scotlonde, and þer was faste by sent Iohnnes
toun almoste al þe wynter tyme; & he helde his cristiscemasse at

¹ towne T. toun R. ² þe om. R. ³ leaf 173. ⁴ folwyng R.⁵ to T. ⁶ MCCC xxxiii T. MCCC xxxiiij R. ⁷ vj ȝeer R.⁸ had it T. ⁹ at T. at R. ¹⁰ wille. ¹¹ Iohn þe TR.¹² of om. R. ¹³ erldom of Richemonde & lordship R.

þe Castel of Rokysburgh. & in þe same ȝere þoruȝt-out al Engelond, aboute sent Clemey's tyde, in wynter þere arose a¹ suche a sprynggyng and wellinge op of wateres² and floodes, bothe of þe see and also of fresshe ryvers & sprynges, þat þe see brynke wallaes⁴ & coostes broken vp.³ Men,⁴ bestes, and houses in meny places, & namely in lowe cuntres, violently and sodenly⁵ were dreynt and dryven away; and þe fruyte of þe erþe, þoruȝ continuance and abundaunce of þe see watres, euermore after⁶ were turned into more saltnes & sournes of sauour.

¶ The x. ȝere of King Edward, he entred þe Scottysse see after Missomere; & to meny of þe Scottes he ȝaf batayll, and ouercome him,⁷ and meny he treted & bowede vnto his pees, þoruȝ his¹² doughtynes. & after Michelmasse þan next folwyng, was þe Erl of Moryf ytake att Epyburgh, & brouȝt into Engeland, & put into prisoun. ¶ And in þe monethes of Iuyn and Iuull⁸ þan next folwyng, in the xj. ȝere of his regne, was seyn and aperede in þe¹⁶ firmament, a benyd⁹ sterre, þe whiche clerics calleþ 'stella comata'; and þat sterre was seyn in diuerce parteis of the firmament; wherafter anon þer folwyd in Engeland good chepe, and wonder grete plente of¹⁰ chaffaree, vitaille and marchaundise, and 20 þere aȝens, hunger, scrafte, mischif,¹¹ and nede of money, in-somuche þat a quarter of whete att London was suolde for .i.j.s., and a good fatte oxe at a noble, and v. good dowe briddes for a j.d. In whiche ȝere, on Holy Roed ȝeue, deide Sere Iohn of Elham, Erl of Cornewaile, King Edwardus broþer, and lithe at Westmynstre.

Hov King Edward made a Duchye of þe Erldom of Cor[n]waile; & also of vj. opere erles þat were newe made; & of þe ferste Chalangyng of þe reaume of Fraunce. Cap^o CC^{mo}. 28 xxv^{to}.¹²

¹³In þe ȝere of our Lord a¹⁴ Mt. CCC. xxxvii., and of King Edward xij.,¹⁵ in¹⁰ þe moneth of March, duryng þe parlement at Westmynstre in lente tyme, King Edward made of the erldome of 32 Cornevayle a duchye, þe whiche duche he ȝaf to Edward his ferste sone wiþ¹⁷ þe erldome of Chestre. also King Edward made at þat tyme vj. opere erles, þat ys forto sey, Sere Henry, þe Erl of

¹ a om. TR. ² leaf 173, back. ³ vp om. T. vp so þat R.

⁴ and boþe men T. ⁵ Cuntrees sodenli and violenti R. ⁶ after om. TR.

⁷ hem T. ⁸ of Iuy^{tt} and Iuyn R. ⁹ lemed R. ¹⁰ of alle R.

¹¹ mischif om. T. ¹² CCxxvj R. ¹³ leaf 174. ¹⁴ a om. T.

¹⁵ xij^e yeer T. ¹⁶ Edward þe xij ȝeer in R. ¹⁷ þe R. om. C.

Lancastres sone, Erl of Leycestre; William of Bowham, Erl of Northampton; William of Mountgen, Erl of Salesbery; Hughe of Awdelee, Erl of Gloucestre; Robert of Vfforde, Erl of Suthfolk; 4 and William of Clynton, Erl of Huntynghdone. In that same zere, hit¹ was ordeynede in þat same parlement, þat noman shulde were no clope þat was woruȝt oute of Engeland, as clope of gold, of silk, damaske, vellewet, saton, haudekyn, ne non suche opere; ne non² 8 wyldware in Furrenre of bezonde³ see, but suche as myȝte Spende an C. li. of rente erliche⁴: but þis ordeynaunce and⁵ statute was of⁶ litel effecte, for hit was noping holde.

¶ In þe xiiij. zere of hys regne, King Edward wente ouere see 12 into Braban, wiþ Quene Phelip his wif⁷ pere beryng⁸ childe,⁹ and¹⁰ att Andwerp, pere¹¹ he duellid more þen a zere, to trete wiþ þe Duke of Braban and opere allyed vnto him of þe calynggyn of þe reame of Fraunce to King Edward, be riȝte and by herytage, after 16 þe deþ of Carol þe grete, King of Fraunce, broþer Germaine of¹² quene Isabelle,¹³ King Edwardus Moder, þe whiche¹⁴ was holden and ocupied vnrightfully by Philip of Valeys, þe Emessone of King Carol: ¶ þe whiche duke, and al his, in þe forseyd þinges¹⁵ and in 20 al opere þerto longyng, wiþ al his men and goodes, King Edward founde redy vnto him, and maden and behyȝten¹⁶ suerte, by good fayghte and truste; and after þat, þe king hasted him into Engeland aȝen, and left pere þe quene stille behynde hym in Braban.

¶ þan in þe xiiij. zere of his regne, whenne al þe lordez of his¹⁷ reame, and oper þat ownen to be at his parlement, weren clepte and assembled togedre in þe same parlement, holden at London after þe feste of sent Hillary, þe Kinges nedes were putt forþe and 28 promoted as toching þe kingdome of Fraunce; for whiche nedez to be spede, þe King askeþ þe vii¹⁸ part of alle þe meble goodeȝ of Engeland, and þe wolles, and þe ix. þe¹⁹ schef of euery²⁰ corn; and þe lordez of eny²¹ toun wher suche þinges schulde be taxid and gaderd, 32 shulde ansuere to þe King perof; and al he had and helde at his owene liste²² and wil. wherfor, yf y shal knowliche þe verrey treupe,²³ þe ynnere loue of þe peple was turned into hate, & þe

¹ hit om T. ² noon oper R. ³ beyonde þe T. biyonde þe R.

⁴ yeerli rente T [cp. Newers day, 302/12]. ⁵ and þis T. & þis R.

⁶ off fast R. ⁷ wif and T. ⁸ sche bere T.

⁹ pere beryng childe om. R. ¹⁰ and om. T. ¹¹ and pere T.

¹² to T. ¹³ Isabelle that was T. ¹⁴ that T. ¹⁵ leaf 174, back.

¹⁶ behighte him R. ¹⁷ þe T. ¹⁸ xv^e T. xv. R.

¹⁹ þe om. TR. ²⁰ alle maner T. ²¹ eueri T. euerie R.

²² luste T. lust R. ²³ þe treuthe verray R.

commune prayrs into cursinge, for cause þat the commune peple were strongliche ygreued. ¶ also þe forsaide Philip of Valeys of Fraunce, had gadered to him a grete oste, and destroyede pere in his parteyes and kingdome, meny of þe Kingez frende3 of Engelonde, 4 with tounes & castellis, and meny opere of hire lordshippez; and meny harmes, schames, and despitez, dede vnto þe Quene. wherefore þe King, whan he ha[r]d¹ of þis² tydinge, he was stron[g]lyche meued, and þerwip an-anger[d], and sente diuerse letters ouere see 8 to þe Quene, and to opere þat were his frende3, gladyng him, and certyfienge þat he wolde be þer³ him-self in al þe haste þat he myzt. ¶ And anon, after Ester, when he had sped of al þing þat hym neded, & come fore,⁴ he wente ouere see azen; of whos comyng, þe 12 quene & al his frendis were wonder glad, & maden myche ioye; and al þat were his enemys, and azens hym helden,⁵ madyn as⁶ muchel sorwe. ¶ In þe same tyme þe King, þoru3 counsel of his treue leiges, & counsell⁷ of his lordes þat pere weren present wip 16 him, toke þe King of Fraunces name,⁸ and toke & melled þe Kingez armes of Fraunce qwarterly with þe armes of Engeland, & commaunded forþwip his coigne of gold, vnder descripcioun of the name of Engeland and of Fraunce, to be made, þe⁹ beste þat myzte be, 20 þat ys for to seyn, þe floreyne þat was clept þe 'noble,' of¹⁰ value of vj.s. & viij.d., and þe 'half-noble' of¹¹ iij.s. iij.d., & þe 'ferping' of value of xx.d.

Hov King Edward come to þe Schus, and descomfited alle þe 24 poer¹² of Fraunce in þe same havene. Capitulo¹³ CC^{mo} xxvj^{to},¹⁴

And in þe next 3ere after, þat ys forto seyn, þe xv. 3ere of his regne, he comaunded, & lete¹⁵ write in his charters, writtes, & opere 28 letters, þe date of his regne of Fraunce ferst,¹⁶ & while þat he was þus doying & trauallyng in Fraunce, þoru3 his counsel he wrote to al prelatys, dukes, Erles, barouns, &¹⁷ noble lordez of his cuntre, and also to diuers of þe commune peple, diuers lettres and maunde- 32 mentis, beryng date at Gandanum þe .viij. day¹⁸ Feuerer. ¶ And anon aftir, wip-yn¹⁹ litel tyme, he come azen into Engeland, wip þe

¹ herde TR. ² these T. ³ leaf 175. ⁴ & come fore om. T.

⁵ helden om. T. ⁶ as om. T. ⁷ counsell om. R.

⁸ kingis name of fraunce T. ⁹ þe om. T. ¹⁰ of þe R.

¹¹ of value of T. off value of R. ¹² power R. ¹³ Capitulo om. T.

¹⁴ xxvj^{to} om. T. CC xxvij R. ¹⁵ dide T. ¹⁶ ferst om. R.

¹⁷ and þe TR. ¹⁸ day of TR. ¹⁹ yn a T.

quene and hire childrin. And in þe same 3ere, on Missomer even, he bigan to sayle towarde Fraunce a3en, & manly & stilly ful vpon Philip of Valeys, the whiche long tyme lay, and had¹ gaderid to
 4 him a ful² huge and boystous navee of diuers nacions, in þe hauene of Selus. And þere þey fou3ten togedir þe Kinge of Fraunce, and he wiþ her osten from midday vnto þe morwe. ¶ In wiche batail were slayn xxx m^t men of þe kinge3 cumpanye of Fraunce, and
 8 meny shippes & Cogge3 were take; and so, þoru3 Gode3 helpe, he had þere þe victorye, and bere pens a glorious chiuache. And in þe same 3ere, aboute sent Iames tyde, wiþout þe 3ates of sent Omers, Robert of Artoys, wiþ men of Engelond and of Flaundres, bitterly
 12 fau3t a3ens þe duke of Burgoyne & þe Frensshe men; at wiche bataile þer were slayn & take³ of þe Frensshe men, xv. barouns, .iiij. kny3tis; & shippe3 & barges were take,³ vnto þe noumbre of .CC. &⁴ xxx. ¶ The same 3ere, þe King makyng &⁵ abydyng
 16 oppon þe see⁶ of Tourney, þe Erl of Henaude, wiþ englissh archers, made asawte to þe toun of Seyntanmund, wher þat he slow L. kni3tis & meny opere, and destroyed also þe toun.

And in þe .xvj. 3ere of his regne folwyng, in þe wynter tyme,
 20 þe king, duelling still oppon þe forsaid sege, sent oft into Engelond to his tresorer & opere purveyours for gold⁷ & meny, þat shulde be sent to hym þer in his nede; but his procuratours & messagers cursidly & ful slowly serued him at his nede, & him deceyved.
 24 ¶ On wos faute & laches þe King toke trews bytwene hym & þe King of Fraunce. & þe King, ful of sorow woo & shame in his hert, wiþdrowe him from þe see,⁸ and come into Brytaigne; & þer was so grete strif⁹ for vitailles, þat¹⁰ he lost meny of his peple. &
 28 whan he had do þere¹¹ þat he come for, he dressid hym ouer see¹² into Engelond warde. ¶ And as he sayled toward Engelond, in þe hye see, þe moste mishappes, stormes & tempeste, thundres & lightnynges, fil to hym in þe see, þe whiche was seyde þat it was
 32 done & areysed þoru3 evel spirites made by sorcery and Nigromancye of hem of Fraunce. Wherefore þe Kinge3 hert was ful of sorwe & angwysshe, weyling & sighyng, & said vnto oure lady on þis wyse. ¶ "O blessid lady, sent Marye! what is þe cause þat

¹ had om. T. ² leaf 175, back. ^{xx}

³⁻³ of þe firensse men xv barons iiij kny3tis & shippe3 & barges were take om. T. ⁴ and om. T. ⁵ makyng and om. T.

⁶ sege T. king abydyng vp on þe sege R.

⁷ for gold and R. for gold om. C. purveyours for gold T. ⁸ sege R.

⁹ leaf 176. ¹⁰ so þat T. ¹¹ þere om. R. ¹² the see T.

euermore, goyng into Fraunce, al pingez & wederes fallyn to me ioyful & likyng & gladsome, & as y wolde haue hym¹; but alwey turnyng into Engelond ward, al pinges fallen vnprofitable & harmful?" ¶ Neuer þe latter, he, scapyng alle þe perilles of þe see, as 4 God wolde, come² by nyght to þe tour of London. & þe same 3ere þe King held him³ Cristemas att⁴ Menres, and sent word to þe Scottes by his messagers, þat he was redy, and wolde fizte wip him; but þe Scottis wolde not abyde þat, bot fled ouere þe Scottish see, 8 & hid hem as wel as þey myzte.

¶ And in⁵ þe xvij. 3ere of his regne, aboute þe feste of Conuersion of seint Paule, King Edward, wan he had be in Scotland, & þe Scottis were fledde, he come azen into Engelond, & a litel afore 12 Lente was þe turnement at Dunstable, to þe wiche turnement comen al þe 3ong bachelrye & chyualrye of Engelond, with meny erles & oþer lordes; at þe wiche turnement þe King himself was þere⁶ present. ¶ And þe nexte 3ere folwyng, ⁷in þe xvij. 3ere of his 16 regne, at his parlement holden at Westminster in þe xv.⁸ of Pasche, Kyng Edward þe þrid made Edward, his first bygeten sone, Prince of Walys.⁹ ¶ And in þe xix 3ere of his regne, anon after in Janyuer, before¹⁰ Lente, þe same King Edward lete make ful¹¹ noble Iustice3, 20 and grete festis, in þe place of his berþe, at¹² Wyndessore, þat þere weren neuere non suche seyn þere¹³ afore.¹⁴ at whiche festis and rialte were ij. Kingez, .ij. quene3, þe Prince of Walys, þe Duk of Cornewaile, x erlis; .ix. Cuntesse, barouns,¹⁵ & many burgeys, þe 24 wiche myzt nouzt liztly be noubred; & of diuers landez be-3onde¹⁶ þe see, were many strangers. and at þe¹⁷ same tyme when þe¹⁸ Iustes were don, King Edward made a grete soper, in þe wiche he¹⁹ ordeyned feest, and bygan þe²⁰ Rounde Table, & ordeyned & 28 stefastyd þe day of þe forsaide Rounde Table to be holde þer at Wyndissore in²¹ Whitesen-wike euermore after erly.

¶ In²² þis tyme, Englysshe men so muche haunted and cleuyd to þe wodnes and²³ foley of þe strangers, þat fro þe tyme of þe 32 comyng of þe Henauderns, xvij. 3ere passid, þey ordeyned and chaungyd ham euery 3ere diuers schappis of²⁴ disgynggez of cloping, of long large and wyde clopis, destitu and desert fram al old honeste

¹ hem T. ² and come TR. ³ his R. ⁴ at þe T. ⁵ in om. T.
⁶ þere om. R. ⁷ leaf 176, back. ⁸ xv^e day T. xv day R. ⁹ Wawys C.
¹⁰ in R. ¹¹ ful om. TR. ¹² at TR. and C. ¹³ þere om. T.
¹⁴ seen/afor þat R. ¹⁵ barouns om. T. ¹⁶ be3onde þe see T. þe see om. C.
¹⁷ þat T. ¹⁸ þe R. ¹⁹ whiche he R. he om. C. ²⁰ his TR.
²¹ in þe R. ²² And in TR. ²³ of T. ²⁴ and R.

and good vsage; & anoþer tyme schorte clopis & stret-wasted, dagged & ket, & on euery side¹ desslateralē & boned, wip sleues & tapets of sircotys, & hodez ouere longe & large, & ouermuche hang-
 4 ynde, þat if y soþ schal say, þey were more liche to turmentours & deuels in hire cloping & schewyng & oþer arraye þen comen.²

¶ And þe wemmen more myseli zet pasted³ þe men⁴ in array, and cureslicher; for þey were so strete cloped þat þey lete hange fox
 8 tailles sawyd beneþe *with*-inforþ hire clopis, forto hele and heyde hire ars; þe whiche disgysengez & pride perauenture afterward brouȝte forþe & encausid many mys-happis & mischeuys⁵ in þe reame of Engeland.

12 ¶ The xx ȝere of King Edward he wente ouere⁶ into Brytaigne & Gascoigne: in wos companye wente þe Erl of Warwyk, þe Erl of Suthfok, þe Erl of Honntyngdone & þe Erl of Arundel, and meny oþer lordes, & commune peple in a gret multitude,⁷ *with* a
 16 grete navey of ij. C.⁸ & xl. shippis, anon after mydsomer, forto avenge him of meny wrongez & harmes⁹ to hym done be Philip of Valeys, King of Fraunce, azens þe treues byfore-hand¹⁰ grauntyd, þe whiche trewes he fasly & ownetreuly, by cawelaciones, loste and
 20 disqwatt.

Hov King Edward sayled into Normandye, & arryued at Hogges wip a gret oste; & of þe batayle of Schlus, and of¹¹ þe bygynnyng of þe seege of Calys, & also of þe
 24 batayll of Duresme. Cap^o. CC^{mo} xxvij^{mo}.¹²

IN þe xxj. ȝere of his regne, King Edward, þoruȝ counsel of al þe grete lordez of þis¹³ reame, clepid & gadered togedre in his parlement at Westminster before Estern, ordeyned him
 28 forto¹⁴ passe ouer þe se aȝen, for to discesce and destrouble þe rebellis of Fraunce. and when his navey was come togedre & made redy, he went *with* an huge oste, þe xij. day of Juyll, & sayled into Normandye, & arryued at Hoggez.¹⁵ & whan he had
 32 restid him þere vj. daies, for bycause of trauelyng of the see, & forto haue out al his men wip al hire nessessaryes, out of hire shippes, he wente toward Cadomon,¹⁶ brengyng, wastyng, & destroyenge al þe tounes¹⁷ as he went by þe way. ¶ And þe xxvj day

¹ side TR. ² þen comen om. T. ³ leaf 177.

⁴ þe men om. T. ⁵ meny mischiefs and myshappez R. ⁶ ouere om. R.

⁷ multitudo C. ⁸ om. R. ⁹ meny harmez & wronges R.

¹⁰ biforhand R. byfore had C. ¹¹ of om. T.

¹² ccxxvij R. xxvij om. T. ¹³ his R. ¹⁴ to T.

¹⁵ and arryued at hoggez om. TR. ¹⁶ Rone T. Paris R. ¹⁷ leaf 177, back.

of Juyll, at þe brigge of Cadomy, manly & orpudly ystrengþed and defended wiþ Normannes, he had þere a stronge batayll, & a¹ longe-duryng, þoruþ which² grete³ multitud of people was slayn. ¶ And þere were take prisoners, þe Erl of Ewe, þe Lord 4 of Tankerwyle, & an C. oþer kingez⁴ and men of armes, & vj C. foote men ynombred; and þe toun & þe subbarbus vnto þe bare wallys of al þing þat myzte be bore & caryed out, was robbid and despoyled. ¶ aftirward þe King, passing forþe by þe cuntre 8 aboute þe brede of xx. mile, he⁵ wastyd alle manere þing þat he founde. Whan Philip of Valeys perseuyd⁶ al þis, al-pouþ he were faste by with a stronge oste, he wolde nouzt come no ner, but brek al þe briggys bezonde þe water of Seyn, fro Roon vnto Paris, 12 & him self fledde vnto⁷ þe same Citee of Paris⁸ wiþ al þe haste þat he myzte. ¶ fforsothe, þe noble King Edward, when he come to Paris brigge, and founde hit broken, wiþinne ij. dayes he lete make hit agen; & in þe morwe after þe assumpcioun of oure 16 Lady, King Edward passed ouere þe water of Seyen, goyng toward Cryesce, & distroyed by þe way tounes wiþ þe⁹ peple duelling þerinne.¹⁰ & in þe feste of sent Bartolomev, he passid ouere þe water of Comme owne hurte¹¹ wiþ al his oste þer as neuer afore 20 honde was eny manere wey in¹² passage werto a M¹³ men were slayn of hem þat letted hire passage ouer.

[*The Battle of Crecy.*]

¶ þerfore, þe xxvj. day of auguste, King Edward in a felde faste by Creysey, hauyng iij.¹⁴ bataillis of englisshe men, counttryd 24 and mette wiþ Philip of Valeys, hauyng¹⁵ wiþ him iiij. batailles, of þe wiche þe leste passid gretely þe nombre of þe Englisshe peple. & whan þes ij. ostes metten togedir, þer fil oppon him¹⁶ þe King of Beme, þe Duke of Loroyne and erles also of Flaundres, Dalasoun, 28 Bloys, Harecourt, Aumerle, and Nyvers, & meny oþer erlis, barouns,¹⁷ lordes, Kingez,¹⁸ & men of armes, þe noumbre of a M¹ V. C. xlij.,¹⁹ wipout foet men & oþer men in²⁰ armevre, þat were noþing rekened. ¶ And for al þis, þe same vnglorious Philip wiþdrowe him, wiþ þe 32 residue of al his peple; wherfore it was seyð in commune among

¹ a om. T. ² whiche a T. with C. ³ þoruþ whiche a greet R.

⁴ knyghtis T. knztis R. ⁵ and R. ⁶ herde R.

⁷ to R. ⁸ & him self fledde vnto þe same Cite of Paris om. T.

⁹ þe om. R. ¹⁰ þerine om. T. ¹¹ owne hurte om. T. ¹² ne TR.

¹³ Where ij M¹ R. ¹⁴ þe iij^o T. ¹⁵ leaf 178. ¹⁶ hem TR.

¹⁷ barons and T. ¹⁸ knyghtis T. oþer lordis erlis Barons knyztis R.

¹⁹ M¹VC xij T. M¹ vij^o xlij R. ²⁰ y TR.

his owne peple 'Nostre beall Retret,' that is for to sey, 'Our faire wipdraweþ hym.' þan Kyng Edward & our Englyssh men, þank-
 yng God for suche a victorie, after hire grete labour, takyng to
 4 hem al þyng nedeful for her sustenaunce & sauynge of hire lyf
 ferdred of hire enemys, rested hem þere. ¶ And ful erly in¹ þe
 morwe, after þe Frensshe men wip an houe passyng oste come
 aȝen for to ȝeue batayll & fȝte wip þe Englysshe men, wip whom
 8 metten & countreden þe Erles of Warwyk, Norhampton & Norfolk,
 wip hire companye & slown ij. M¹,² & token meny prisoners of
 þe gentils of ham; and þe remenaunt of þe same oste fled iij.
 mile þens.

[*The Siege of Calais, and the Invasion of England by the Scots.*]

12 ¶ And þe third day after the bataill, þe kyng wente to Caleys
 warde, destroyng al þe cuntre as he rode; whider,³ whan þat⁴ he
 was comen,⁵ þat is forto seyn, þe .iiij. day of Septembre, he bygan
 to besege þe toun wip þe castell, and continued his sege fro þe
 16 forseyd iij. day of Septembre vnto þe iij. day of Auguste þe next
 ȝere after. & in⁶ þe same ȝere, duryng þe sege of Caleys, þe King
 of Scotlond,⁷ with a ful grete multitude of Scottis, come into
 Engelond, to Nevyles crosse, about seint Lukes day þe euangelist,
 20 hoppyng & trustyng to haue found al the land destitut & voyde
 of peple, forasmuche as þe Kyng of Engelond was beȝend þe see,
 saue only prestes & men of holy chirche, & women & childrin, &
 ploghmen, & such oper laborers. ¶ And þer þey robbeden, &
 24 deden mych prīve⁸ sorow; but ȝet fond þey ynowe þat ham
 wipstode, by þe grace of God. And so a day of batayll was
 assigned bytwene hem; & certeyne lordes & men of holy cherche
 þat were in þat cuntre, wip opere comune peple, fast by þe Citee
 28 of Duresme; at whiche day, þoruȝ þe grace and þe helpe of God⁹
 þe Scottis¹⁰ were ouercomen, & ȝet were þey threfold so meny of
 hem¹¹ as of¹² Englysshe men¹³; and þere was slayn al þe chiualrye
 and knyȝthood of þe reaume of Scotland. ¶ And þer were take,
 32 as þey wolden haue flead, Dauid, King of Scotlond, þe Erl of
 Mentyf, sere William Douglas, & many oper grete men. & after
 þat, oure Englysshe men, when þey had restyd ham a fewe dayes,
 & had ordeyned kepers of þe¹⁴ Northcuntre, þey comen to London,

¹ on T. ² ij M¹ men T. ³ whider om. TR. ⁴ þat om. R.

⁵ was come þider R. ⁶ leaf 178, back. ⁷ Scotlond C. ⁸ oper T.

⁹ help & grace of God R. ¹⁰ Cottis C. ¹¹ of hem om. R. ¹² þe R.

¹³ peple TR. ¹⁴ þe land of the T.

and brouȝt with ham þe King of Scotlond, & þes opere lordeȝ þat were taken prisoners, vnto¹ þe tour² of London, wiþ al þe haste þat þey myȝte; & þer þey lefte ham in saue kepyng, vnto þe Kinges comynge,³ and went⁴ home aȝen into hire owne cuntre. & after-ward was þe Kinges raunsome of Scotlond taxid vnto an C. M^t mark⁵ of seluere, to be payed in x ȝer, þat ys forto sayne, euery ȝere x þousand mark.

Of the conqueste and ⁶wynnge of Caleys, and of⁷ grete pestelence & raynes þat fillen sone aftir; and of þe tresoun ordeyned aȝens Caleys. Capitulo⁸ CC^{mo}. xxvij^o.⁹

IN þe xxij ȝere of King Edwardys regne, he wente ouere in þe wynter time, & lay al þe wynter in¹⁰ þe seege of Caleys. ¹¹þe ¹²whiche year, while þe sege lasted, Philip of Valeys,¹¹ Kyng of Fraunce, cast & purposed, trecherously & wiþ fraude, to put away þe sege,¹² & come þe xxvij day of Iuyll in þe same ȝere wiþ a grete oste & a strong poer, & neighred vnto þe sege of Caleys. ¶ þe ¹⁶wiche Philip, þe last day of Iuyll, sent to King Edward word þat¹³ he wold ȝeue him playn bataill þe .iij. day next after þat, about euesong tyme, if þat he durst come fro þe sege & abyde hit. And whan Kyng Edward herd þat, wiþout eny long taryng or grete ²⁰avisement, he accepted gladly þe day & hour of bataill þat Philip had assigned. And whan the Kyng of Fraunce herd þat, wiþout eny long taryng or grete auysement, þe next nyght after he set hys tentys afyre, and vanysshed & went away þens cowardly. ¶ Than ²⁴þey þat were in¹⁴ þe toun and in þe castell bysegged, seyng al þis, how þat þei hade non oper helpe ne socour of þe Kinge of Fraunce ne of his men, & also þat her vitailles wipin hym¹⁵ were spended and wasted, & for defaute of vitailles & of¹⁶ refresshyng þey eten ²⁸hors, houndes, cattes & mys, for to kepe her troupe as long as þey myȝte. ¶ And whan they sawe, & was found amongeȝ hem at þe last þat þey had no þing amonge hem¹⁷ forto ete ne lyve by, ne no socour ne rescuyng of þe Freusshemen; on þe toper¹⁸ syde ³²

¹ to T. ² tone C. towr TR. ³ comyng to London T.

⁴ wente TR. when C. ⁵ an C M^t e CR. ⁶ leaf 179. ⁷ of þis R.

⁸ Capitulo om. T. ⁹ xxvij^o om. T. cccxix R. ¹⁰ at T.

^{11–12} þe whiche yeer while þe sege lasted Philip of Valeys T. the whiche yeer while the Sege lasted Philip of Valeis R. om. C.

¹² þe sege TR. þe om. C. ¹³ sent word to King Edward þat R.

¹⁴ withine T. ¹⁵ hem T. ¹⁶ of om. T. ¹⁷ amonge hem om. R.

¹⁸ on þat oper TR.

þey weste wel þat ¹þey must deie² for defaute, eyþer³ zelde⁴ vp þe
 toun; and anon wenten & tokin⁵ done þe banerys &⁶ þe armes of
 Fraunce on euery side þat were hanged out, & wenten on þe walles
 4 of þe toun, and in oþer diuers placys, as naked as þey were bore,
 saf hire chirtys and⁷ brechys, & heldyn hire swerdus naked, & þe
 poynt downward, in hire handez, & puttyn ropys & halterys
 abowte hire⁸ neckys, and zolden vp þe keyes of þe toun and of þe
 8 Castell to Kyng Edward, wiþ grete fere and drede of hert. ¶ And
 when the King sav þis, as a mercyable king and lord, resceyued
 hym al to his grace; & a feue of þe grettste persones of stat and
 of gouernaunce of þe toun he sent into Engelond, þer for to abyde
 12 hire raunsome & þe kinges grace; & al þe communialte of þe toun
 þe king lete go wher þey wolde in pees, & wiþoute ony harme, &
 lete ham bere with ham al hire þingeþ þat þey myzte bere & cary
 away,⁹ keping þe toun and the Castell to hymself. ¶ þan, þoruþ
 16 mediacioun of cardenalles þat were sent fro þe pope, trewes was take
 þer bituene Fraunce & Engelond for ix moneþes þan next folwyng;
 & aboute mychelmasse King Edwarde come agen vnto Engelond
 wiþ a glorious victorye.

[*The Plague of 1348.*]

20 ¶ And in þe xxiiij. 3ere of his regne, in þe Este parteys of þe
 worlde þer aros & bygan a pestilence, & dep of Sarasinez and
 Payngneins, þat so grete a dep was neuer herde of afore,¹⁰ and þat
 wasted away so þe peple þat vnneþes þe x^{the} persone was left
 24 a¹¹-lyue. & in þe same 3ere, aboute þe Sowthcuntreys and also in¹²
 þe west cuntres, þere fell so much¹³ reyne and so grete waters þat,
 from Cristemasse vnto¹⁴ Midsomer, þer was vnneþes day ne nyght
 but þat it rayned sumwhat; þoruþ whiche watres, þe pestilence was
 28 sone fectid¹⁵ & so habundant in all cuntres, & namely aboute þe
 court of Rome & oþer places & sore¹⁶ costes,¹⁷ þat vnneþes þere were
 left alyve¹⁸ folk to bery ham þat were ded, honestly, but maden
 grete diches and puttes þat were wonder brood and depe, & þerin
 32 beried, & made a renge of þe¹⁹ dede bodyes, & an oþer renge of erþe
 aboue ham; & þus were þey buried, & non oþer wise, but yf it were
 þe fewer þat were grete men of state.

¹ leaf 179, back.² eythir die T.³ or ellis T.⁴ þey moste ouper die for defaute or ellis yelde R. ⁵ took a T.⁶ of TR. ⁷ and her TR. ⁸ þeir R.⁹ away om. T.¹⁰ before R.¹¹ on T.¹² in om. R.¹³ leaf 180.¹⁴ to T.¹⁵ was so effect T.¹⁶ was so effected R.¹⁷ sondry T.¹⁸ & sore costes om. R.¹⁹ on lyue T.²⁰ þe om. R.

¶ And after al þis, in þe xxiiij ȝere of his regne, hit was done King Edward to wite and vnderstonde of a tresoun þat was bygun at Caleys, and ordeyned for to selle þat¹ toun for a grete somme of Florens vnto King Philip of Fraunce, þoruȝ þe falsnes & þe² 4 ordinance of a knyȝt þat me called Sir Geffrey of Charney, þat was wonder priuey wiþ þe King of Fraunce. ¶ And whan þe King herd þis, he toke wiþ hym þe noblys & þe gentils, & opere worpy & orped men of armes, þat were þere present wiþ hym for þe 8, solempnite of þat¹ hey³ feest, & wel & wisely, in al þe haste þat he myȝt, & as priuely as he myȝt, he wente hym⁴ ouere see,⁵ and þat same tyme þe King held hys Cristemas at Haueryng. ¶ And in þe morwe after⁶ Newers day, þe King was in þe Castell of 12 Caleys wiþ his men of armes, þat none of⁷ þe aliens wist þerof. And thilk⁸ fals conspiratour & traytour, Geffrey of Charney, seth⁹ he myȝte not opynly haue his purpos of þe castell, pryuely & stelyngly he comen yn, & held þe toun wiþ a grete oste. ¹⁰ And 16 when he wiþ his men were comen yn, he payed þe forsaide somme of florens, as couenaunt was bituene him, to a Geneweys in þe toun þat was keper of þe castell, & consentyng to þe same Gefferey in al þis¹¹ falsnesse & trecherye, & bonde þe Engliſſhe mynesters and 20 seruauȝtȝ þat were in þe castel, þat þey myȝt nouȝt helpe hamself, ne lete ham of hire purpos. & þan, wenyng þat þey had be siker ynov, þey spaken hire wickednesse & falones oppynly & an hey, þat al men myȝt here. ¶ And nov shul ȝe here hov þey were 24 desceyued; for þey comen in by a preuy posterne ouer a litel brigge was drawyn opp¹² of tre; & when þey were come yn sotelly and preuely, þe brigge was dravyn op and kepte, þat non of ham þat were come yn myȝte go out, ne no moo come yn to hym. ¶ And 28 anon our Engliſſhe men wente oute at priuy holes and wendawes, & ouere þe wallys of þe toun & of þe castel, & wenten & fouȝten manly wiþ þe Frenche men þat were wiþoute, & had the better of ham, þe wiche when þey were occupied by ham self on¹³ hire side. þe King, 32 þat was wiþin þe toun, hauyng wiþ him¹⁴ scharstly but xxx. men of armes, dreve out his sward, & with a lowed voys cried on hey: "*A sent Edward! a sent Gorge!*" And when folk herde þat, þey come rennyng to him, and ȝeaunen þer¹⁵ to hire enemy's so stronge 36

¹ þe TR. ² þe om. R. ³ hey om. T. ⁴ hym om. R. ⁵ þe see R.

⁶ next T. ⁷ of alle T. ⁸ And whane þat R. ⁹ saw þat R.

¹⁰ leaf 180, back. ¹¹ þis om. T. his R. ¹² was drawyn opp om. TR.

¹³ on of C. on TR. ¹⁴ wiþ him om. R. ¹⁵ þer om. T.

assaute þat þer were mo þen ij. C. men of armes, and meny oper, slayn, & meny fledden; & so, by þe grace of God, þe victorie fel to þe Engliſſhe men. ¶ þan þe King toke with him þis Gefferey, þat⁴ was fynder of þis trecherye, and also many oper Frenshe prisoners, & withyn a while¹ after wente² aȝen into Engeland.

[*The Plague, or Black Death.*]

And in þis same ȝere, and in þe ȝere afore, & also in þe ȝere aftir, was so grete a pestilences of men fro þe Est into þe west, & namely⁸ þoruȝ bocches, þat he þat siked þis day, deid on þe iij. day after. ¶ To þe wiche men þat so deiden in þis pestilens, þat haddyn but litel respyte of lyggyng, þe pope Clement, of his goodnes & grace, ȝaf ham ful remissioun & foryeuynge of all hire synnes þat þey¹² were schryven of. & þis pestilence lasted in London fro Michelmasse into³ Auguste next folowyng almoste an hool ȝere. & in þes dayes was deþ wipoute sorwe, weddyng wipoute frendship, wilfull penaunce, and derþe wipout scarste, and fleying wipoute refute or⁴
¹⁶ socour; ¶ ffor meny fledden fro place to place by-cause of þe pestilens; but þey were⁵ enfecte, & myȝt not ascape þe deþe, after þe prophete Isaye⁶ seith: "ho⁷ þat fleep fro þe face of drede, he shal fall into þe diche; & he þat wyndeþ hymself out of þe diche,⁸
²⁰ he shal be holde and teyd wip a grenne," but whan þis pestilens was cesid & endid, as God wolde, vnneþes þe x. parte of þe peple was left alyve,⁹ and in þe same ȝere bygan a wonder þing þat al þat euere were born after þat pestilens hadden ij. chekteth in her heed lasse
²⁴ þan þey had afore.

How King Edward had a grete bataylle of þe Spaynardes in þe see faste by Wynchel-see, & of meny opere þingeȝ.
Capitulo CC.^{mo} xxix^o.¹⁰

²⁸ And in þe xxv. ȝere of his regne, about sent Johnnes tyde in heruest, in þe see faste by Wynchelse, King Edward had a grete batayll wip men of Spayne, wher þat¹¹ hire shippes & navee ley cheyned togider, þat eipere they muste fȝt or drenche. ¶ And so,
³² whan al our worpi men of armes on þe see coostes fast by Wynchel-see & Romeny were gadred,¹² & ouer navee & shippes al redy to þe werre, þe Engliſsh men metten manly & stifly with hire enemys,

¹ leaf 181. ² wente R. om. C. ³ vnto R. ⁴ of T.

⁵ were om. R. ⁶ Isaye þat T. ⁷ who R.

⁸ om. R. ⁹ on lyue T. ¹⁰ xxix om. T. cccxx R.

¹¹ leaf 181, back. ¹² gatherid togidere T. gadred to gedir R.

comyng fersly azens ham, & when þe Spaynesshe vessellis & nauey were closid yn al about, þer men myzte se a stronge bataile vn bope sides, and long duryng; in þe whiche Batayle þer ner¹ but fewe þat fauzten but þat² þey were sputesly herte, & fowle. and after 4 þe batayle þer were xxiiij shippes of hereȝ ytaken; & so þe³ Engligsshe men had þe better.

[*The new Coinage. The dear Summer. A Drought.*]

¶ And in þe next ȝere after⁴ folwyng, of his regne xxvj^{ti}, þe King, þoruȝ his councele, lete ordeyne & make his neve money, þat 8 ys forto sey, þe peny, þe grote of valew of iiij. pens, & þe half⁵ grote þe⁶ valew of ijd.; but hit was of lesse wyȝth þan þe old sterlyng was, by v. s. in þe pound. ¶ And in þe xxvij. ȝere of his regne was þe⁷ grete derpe of vitales, þe wiche was clepid þe dere 12 somer. ¶ And in þe xxvij. ȝere of his regne in þe parlement holdyn at Westminster after Ester, Sere Henry, Erl of Lancastre, was made Duk of Lancastre. and in þis⁸ same ȝere was so grete a drowthe þat, fro þe moneȝ of Marche unto þe moneȝ of Iuyll, þer 16 fel no rayne into⁹ þe erþe; wherfore al¹⁰ fruttys, sedis and erbis, for þe more¹¹ part was lost; in defaute wherof þer come so grete desise of men and bestes, & derpe of vetailes in Engelond, so þat þis lande, þat euer byfore was plentues, had nede þat tyme to seche 20 his vytylis and refreschyng of oþer out yles and cuntres.

[*Negotiations about Guienne dropt.*]

¶ And in þe xxix ȝere of King Edward, hit was acorded, graunted and swore, bytwene þe King of Fraunce & þe King of Engelond, þat he shulde haue aȝen al his landeȝ and lordshipps þat 24 longe to þe Duche of Guyne of old tyme, þe wiche had bene with-drawe & wrongfully occupied by diuers Kynges of Fraunce byforhand, to haue & to hold to Kyng Edward & to his eyrs & successours for euermore, frely, pesible, & in good quyete, vppon þis 28 covenaut, þat þe Kyng of England shold leue of,¹³ & relese all¹⁴ right & clayme þat he had & claymed of þe kingdome of Fraunce, & of þe title þat he toke þerof. Oppon wiche speche & couenauntes, it was sent to þe court of Rome on bope sydes of þe Kynges,¹⁵ þat 32 þe forsaid couenaut shold be enbulled. but God ordeyned betere for þe Knyges worship of Engelond; for, what þoruȝ fraude &

¹ ne were but T. ² þat om. T. ³ oure T.

⁴ after om. T. folowyng R. ⁵ and half a TR. ⁶ of TR.

⁷ þe om. R. ⁸ þe TR. ⁹ on TR. ¹⁰ alle þe R. ¹¹ moste R.

¹² leaf 182. ¹³ of om. R. ¹⁴ al þe R. ¹⁵ of þe kynges om. T.

deceyte of þe frensshmen, & what poruz lettyng of þe pope & of þe court of Rome, þe forsaide couenauntes were to-sqwat & left of.

[*Transfer of the Staple of Wool to England.*]

¶ And in þe same 3ere þe Kyng reuoked, by his wys & descrete
4 counceyll, þe staple of wolles out of Flaundres into Engeland, wip
al þe libertees, fraunchises & free customes þat longen þerto, &
ordeyned hit in Engeland in diuers places, þat ys forto¹ seyn, at
Westminster, Caunterbery, Chichestre, Bristowe, Lincoln, & Hull,
8 wip al þe forsaide þyngeþ þat longen þerto. and þat þis þing sholde
be þus done,² þe Kyng swore hym self þerto, & prins Edward his
sone, wip oþer meny grete witesse þat were pere than³ present.

[*The French attempt on Guienne frustrated.*]

And in þe .xxx. 3ere of his regne, anon after Wytsonday, in þe
12 parlement ordeyned at Westminster, hit was told and⁴ certyfyed
to⁵ þe King, þat Philip þat held þe kingdome of Fraunce was dede,
and þat John his sone was crowned King, & þat þis John had 3oue
Karoll his sone þe Duchie of Guyone. ¶ Of þe⁶ wiche þing, King
16 Edward, whan he herd þerof, he⁷ had grete indignacioun vnto hym,
& was wonder wroþ, & strongly meved: and þer, afor⁸ al þe worþy
lordes þat þere were assembled at þat parlement, he clept⁹ Edward
his son to hym, to wiche¹⁰ þe Duchye of Guyene by right heritage
20 shold longe to, and 3af hit hym þer, byddyng and strengþing him
þat he shulde ordeyne him to defende and avenge him oppon his
enemys, & saue & mayntene hys ryzt. ¶ And afterward, King
Edward him self, and his eldiste¹¹ sone Edward,¹² wenten to diuerce
24 placeþ and senten in Engeland a pilgrimage, forto haue þe more
grace and help of God and of his sentþ. and þe secunde kalend
of Iuyll, whan al þing was redy to þat viage and batayleþ, and al¹³
his retennev & power assembled, and hire navey also redy, he toke
28 wip him þe Erl of Warwyk, þe Erl of Suthfolk, þe¹⁴ Erl of Salys-
bery, & þe Erl of Oxenford, and a M^r of¹⁵ men of armes, and as
many archerys, in þe Natiuite of our Lady, and at Plymmough
token hire shippes, and bygan to sayle. ¶ And when¹⁶ he come
32 and was arryued in Guyene, he¹⁷ was þer worshipþly take¹⁸ and¹⁹

¹ to R. ² þo R. ³ were þanne þere R. ⁴ leaf 182, back.

⁵ to om. T. ⁶ þe om. R. ⁷ he om. R. ⁸ perfore R.

⁹ also and cleped R. ¹⁰ whom TR. ¹¹ eldiste om. R.

¹² Prince Edward T. ¹³ al om. T. ¹⁴ þe erle TR. þe om. C.

¹⁵ of om. TR. ¹⁶ when om. T. ¹⁷ and he T. ¹⁸ take om. R. ¹⁹ and om. C.

resceyued¹ of þe moste noble men and lordez of þat cuntre. And anon after, King Edward toke wip him his ij. sones, þat ys forto seye,² Sir Lyonell, Erl of Vltoun, and Sere Iohn his broþer, Erl of Rychemonde, and Sere Henry, Duke of Lancastre, wip meny Erles⁴ and lordes and men of armes, and too ³M^t archers, and sayled into⁴ Fraunce, and reste him awhile at Caley. ¶ And afterward, þe King went wip his folk aforsaide, and wip opere sowdiours of bezende þe see þat pere aboden þe Kinges comynge, þe secunde day 8 of Nouembre, & toke his iorneye toward King Iohn of Fraunce, pere as he trowed to⁵ haue y⁶found him faste by þe toun of Odomarum, as his letters and couenauntz made mencion pat he wolde abyde him pere wip his oste. ¶ And whan King Ion of 12 Fraunce herde of þe Kynge comeing of Engelond, he wente away wip his men & his cariage, cowardly & schamfully fleyng, wastyng al vitaillez ouer⁷ al, þat⁸ Englysshe men shold nauzt haue therof. ¶ And when King Edward herde þat he fled, he pursued him wip 16 al his mayne til⁹ Hedoun; and þen he, by-holdyng þe wantyng and þe scarsites of vitaille, and also the cowardice of the King of Fraunce, he turned azen, wastyng al þe cuntre.

[*The Scots attack Berwick.*]

¶ And while al þese þinge were a¹⁰doynge, þe scottes prevyly and 20 by nyzt token þe toun of Berwyk, sleynge ham þat wipstode ham, and no man ellis; but,—blessid by god!—þe castel neuer-þe-latter was sauyn and kepte be Englysshe men þat were þerin. þen þe Kinge perceuyng al þis, turned azen into Engelond as worþ as he 24 myzte.¹¹ ¶ Wherfore in a parlement at Westminster was graunted to þe King of euery sake of¹² wolle .l. s. duryng þe terme of vj. zere þat he myzt þe myztlyker fyght and deffende þe reaume azen þe Scottis and opere mys-doers: and so, when al þinges were redy, 28 þe King hastyd hym to þe seege warde.

Hov King Edward was crowned King of Scotland, and hov Prins Edward toke þe King of Fraunce,¹³ & of þe bataylle of Peyters.¹³ Capitulo CC^{mo} Tricesimo.¹⁴

¹ and resceyued T. ² þat ys forto seye om. TR. ³ leaf 183.
⁴ toward TR. ⁵ forto T. ⁶ y om. TR.
⁷ ouerall R. ⁸ oper al C. ⁹ þat þe T. ¹⁰ to T. ¹¹ in T.
¹² myghte be R. ¹³ of om. T. ¹³⁻¹⁵ om. T.
¹⁴ Tricesimo om. T. ccxxxi R.

¹ And in þe xxxj. ȝere of his regne, þe xiiij day of Ianuere, þe King beyng in þe castel of Beywyk wip a fewe men, but² havynge þer fastby a³ gret oost, þe toun was ȝold to him wipout⁴ eny⁴ manere fens or⁵ difficulte. þan þe King of Scotlond, þat ys forto sey, Sire Iohn Bayllol, considering how þat God dede meny merueylles þingeȝ & gracious⁶ for King Edward at his owene will fro day to day, he toke⁷ & ȝaf op⁸ þe reaume of Scotland, & þe 8 crowne of Scotland,⁹ att Rokesburgh,¹⁰ in-to þe Kingeȝ handes¹¹ of Engelond, vnder his patent lettres þer of y¹²made. ¶ And anon after King Edward, in presence of al þe prelates & oþer worþi men & lordez þat þere were, lete crowne hym King þer-of¹³ þe reaume 12 of¹⁴ Scotland. and whan al þingeȝ were done & ordeyned in thilk cuntres at his luste, he turned aȝen into Engelond wip a¹⁵ houghe worschip.

¶ And while þat¹⁶ þis viage was adoyng in Scotland, Sir 16 Edward, Prins of Walys, as a man enspired of God, was in Guyne, in þe Citee of Burdeux, trefyng & spekyng of þe chalangyng, &¹⁷ of the Kingeȝ right of Engelond, þat he had to þe reaume of Fraunce; and þat he wold avenged be¹⁸ wip stronge hond. & aȝ þe prelates, 20 peris, & myȝty men of þe cuntre, consentid wele to hym. ¶ þan Sere Edward, the Pryns, wip a grete oste y¹⁹gaderid to hym, þe vj. day of Iuyll went fro Burdeux, goyng & trauaylyng by meny diuers cuntres. And he toke meny²⁰ prisoners, mo þan vj^M men of 24 armes, by the²¹ cuntre as he iourneyed,²¹ & toke þe toun of Remorantyn in Saloigne, & beseged þe castell vj. dayes. and at þe vj. dayes ende þey ȝolden þe castell vnto hym; and²² þere were taken þe Lord of Crom, and Sere Bursigand, and meny oþere knyghtes, 28 and men of armes mo þan iiii^j.

[The Battle of Poitiers.]

And fro þens by Tureyne & Petey,²³ faste by Chaneney, his noble men þat were with him hadden a strong bataill wip Frenssh men, and a²⁴ C. of hire²⁵ men²⁶ of armes were slayn. and þe Erle

¹ leaf 183, back. ² but om. T. ³ bi a T. ⁴ any defence or any T.
⁵ fens or om. T. ⁶ & gracious om. R. ⁷ toke up T.
⁸ and ȝaf vp om. T. ⁹ of Scotland om. T.
¹⁰ Rokesburgh and bi Baillol þe kyng of Scotland y yonen frely T.
¹¹ þe hondis of the kyng T. ¹² y om. T. ¹³ him þere king off R.
¹⁴ þe reaume of om. R. ¹⁵ An TR. ¹⁶ þat om. T. ¹⁷ & om. TR.
¹⁸ wolde be avengid T. ¹⁹ y om. R. ²⁰ meny om.
²¹ cuntre and he ordeynyd T. ²² leaf 184. ²³ MS. indistinct.
²⁴ an R. ²⁵ of hire om. R. ²⁶ And an C men T.

of Damice & þe stiward of Fraunce weren take, wiþ a¹ C. men of armes. In þe wiche 3eer, þe xix day of Septembre, fast by Peyters, þe same prins, with a M^t and ix^c men of armes and archers, ordeyned a bataill to Kyng Iohn of Fraunce, comyng to þe prins-4 ward wiþ vij. M^t cosyn men of armes, and oper miche peple in a houe² passyng noumbre³; of⁴ þe whiche þer was yslayne⁵ þe Duke of Burboun and þe Duke of Athenez, & meny opere noble men, & of þe pris men of armes a M^t, & of opere (after þe trewe account & 8 rekenyng) viij. C.; and þe King of Fraunce was þer take, and Sere Philip his 3onger sone, and meny dukes & noble men & worpy knyztys, and men of armes aboute .ij. M^t; and so⁶ þe victorie fill þere to þe Prins & to þe peple of Engeland, by þe grace of God. 12 ¶ And meny þat were take prisoners were set at her raunsoun, & oppon her troupe & kny3thoode were charged, and had leue to go; but þe Prins toke wiþ hym þe King of Fraunce, and Philip his sone, wiþ al þe reuerence þat he myzte, & wente aȝen to Burdeux 16 with a glorious victorie. ¶ þe somme of þe⁷ men þat were take prisoners, & of þe man þat were slayn, þis day of⁸ bataill, was iiij. [M^t]CCCC. xl.⁹ And in þe xxxij. 3ere of Kyng Edward, þe .v. day of Maij, Prins Edward, wiþ King Iohn of Fraunce¹⁰ and Philip his 20 sone, and meny worpy¹¹ prisoners, arryved graciously in þe hauene of Plymmouth; & þe xxiiij. day of þe same moneþ, about iiij. after none, þey comen to London by London brigge, & so wente forþe to þe Kynges paleys of¹² Westmynstre. ¶ and þere fill so grete pres & 24 multitude of peple abute ham, to byholde and se þat¹³ wonder and þat¹⁴ real¹⁵ sizth, that¹⁶ vnnepes fro Midday þey myzte come to Westmynster. And þe Kinges raunsoun of Fraunce was taxied & set to iiij. Milions of Scutes,¹⁷ of whom¹⁸ ij. shuld¹⁹ be paid a 28 noble²⁰; & 3e shul vnderstonde þat a Milioun is a M^t. M^t. And after somme men, his raunsoun was set at iiij. M^t²¹ floreyms; & al is on in effecte.

And in²² þis same 3ere was made solempne iustes in Smeþefeld, 32 beyng þer present, þe King of Engelande, þe King of Fraunce & þe King of Scotlond, & ²³meny worpi noble²³ lordes. ¶ The xxxiiij.

¹ an TR. ² in a houe *om.* T. ³ the nombre T.

⁴ aforesaid of T. oft passage þe noumbre R. ⁵ slayne TR. ⁶ so *om.* T.

⁷ þe *om.* TR. ⁸ in T. to R. ⁹ iiij. M^t iiij. C. and xlth T.

¹⁰ leaf 184, back. ¹¹ oper TR. ¹² at T. ¹³ þat hit was T.

¹⁴ þat *om.* R. ¹⁵ for hit was a roiat^t T. ¹⁶ and þat T.

¹⁷ floreyms R. ¹⁸ wher of R. ¹⁹ ij mylions schulde T.

²⁰ anon T. a noble *om.* R. ²¹ iiij mylions of T. ²² in *om.* T.

²³⁻²³ noble and worthi T. meny oper noble and worthi R.

þere of his regne þe same King Edward at Wyndesore, as wel for¹ loue of kny3thood as for his owne worship, & at þe reuerence of þe King of Fraunce &² oþer lordez þat were þere at þat tyme, he held³ 4 a wonder rial⁴ and⁵ costlow feest⁶ of sent Gorge, passyng eny þat was hold euere afore.⁷ wherfor þe King of Fraunce, in scornynge, sayd þat he saw neuere ne herd such solempne festes ne ryalties holden ne done with taylles, wipoute⁸ paying⁹ of gold or siluer.

[*The Marriage of Duchess Blanche.*]

8 ¶ And in þe xxxiiij. 3ere of his regne, þe xiiij. kalend of Iuyll, Sere Iohn, Erle of Richemund, Kyng Edwardes sone of Engeland, weddid dame Blaunche, duk Herryes douzter of Lancaster, cosyn to þe same Iohn, by dispensacioun of þe Pope. and in þe mene 12 tyme were¹⁰ ordeyned iustes at London iij. dayes of¹¹ þe rogacions,¹² þat is forto sey, þe Maiere of London, wip his xxiiij^{ti} aldermen, azens al þat wold come. In whos name and stede þe King priuely wip his iiij. sones, Edward, Leonell, Iohn & Edmund, & oþere xix. 16 grete lordes, helden þe feld wip¹³ worshopp.

¶ And þis same 3ere (as it was tolde & seyde of ham þat sawe hit) þere come out blood of þe tounge of Thomas, sumtyme Erl of Lancaster, as ffresshe as þat day þat he was done to þe¹⁴ deþe. And 20 in þat same 3ere King Edward chose his sepulture & his liggynge at Westminster, faste by þe shryne of Sent Edward.

[*Edward III goes again to France.*]

And anon after, þe xxvij. day of Octobre, he wente ouere see to¹⁵ Caley, makyng protestacioun þat he wold neuere come agen 24 into Engeland til¹⁶ he had fully endid þe werre bytuene Fraunce and him. ¶ And so, in þe xxxv. yere¹⁷ of his regne, in þe wynter tyme, King Edward was and¹⁸ trauayled in þe Ryne costes; and aboute Seynt Hillere tyde he departed his oste, and went to Burgoyne- 28 warde; wip whom þan mette pesibely þe Duk of Burgoyne, byhot- yng to hym lxx. M^t Floreyns þat he shold spare his men¹⁹ & his peple. And þe King²⁰ graunted at his request, & dwelled þere vnto þe xvij. day of March, þe wiche day it come to King Edwardes ere 32 þat straunge þennes on²¹ þe see vnder þe Erle of Sent Paule, þe xv

¹ for the T. ² and of T. ³ beheld C. he helde TR. ⁴ roiait feste T
⁵ and a T. ⁶ feest om. T. ⁷ bifore T. ⁸ oute eny R.
⁹ any paying T. ¹⁰ leaf 185. ¹¹ aftir R. ¹² rogacion) Daie3 R.
¹³ with om. T. ¹⁴ þe om. TR. ¹⁵ vnto T. ¹⁶ til that T.
¹⁷ yere of T. yere of R. yere om. C. ¹⁸ was and om. T.
¹⁹ lond T. ²⁰ king it R. ²¹ were on TR.

day of Marche, liggyng awayte oppon þe tounes of Hastyngge, Rye, and oþer places & villages on þe see coostes, hadden¹ entred as enemyes into þe toun of Wynchelsee, & slown al þat euere withstode ham and wipseyd her comyng; wherfore þe King was² gretly meved and wraithed. ¶ And he turned aȝen to Parys-ward,³ commaunded his ost to destroye & slee wip deynt & strengthe of swerd hem þat he had byfore hand y⁴sparid. and þe xij day of Aprill þe King come to Parys; & þere he departed his oost in ix diuerse 8 bataylles, with iiij^c of knyȝtes newe dubbed, on þe to⁵ syde of hem.⁶ And Sere Herry, Duk of Lancastre, vnder pees & trewes wente to þe ȝates of þe Citee,⁷ profyryng to hem þat⁸ wold abyde a batayl in þe feld, vnder suche a condicioun, þat yf þe King of 12 Englonde were ouercome (þere as God forbede hit!), þat þen he shold neuere chalange þe kingdome of Fraunce. ¶ and whan he had of hem but a short & au⁹ scornfull answeere, he told þe King & his lordes what he had herd, & wat þey saide. and þan fortwip 16 þe newe knyghtes, with meny oþere, makyng assaute to þe Citee,¹⁰ destroyeden houȝily þe subarbes of þe Citee. And while al þese thinges were adoyng, þe Englissh men made hem aredy to be avengid vpon þe shame &¹¹ despit þat was done þat ȝeer at 20 Wynchelse, and ordeyneden a nave of iij^{xx} shippes of mennes of London & of¹² oþer marchauntes, & xiiij M^t of men of armes & archers, & wenten & destroyeden hem, & seymed þe see,¹³ & manly token, & helde þe Ile of Caux; wherfore þe Frenssh men, þat is for 24 to sey, þe abbot of Cluyne, þe Erle of Tankerville & Sere Bursigand, þat than was stiward of Fraunce, wip meny of¹² oþer men of þe same cuntre, by commune assent of þe Lord Karoll, þat þo was regent of Fraunce, þey hasted hem, & wenten to¹⁴ þe King of Englonde, 28 askyng & bysekyng hym¹⁵ stedfast pees, & euerelastyng, vpon¹⁶ certeyne condicions þat þer were wreten schewed.¹⁷ ¶ The whiche, whan þe King and his counsell had seen, it plesed ham neuere a dele. ¹⁸But seþ it wolde be non oþere, in¹⁹ tyme of betere acorde & 32 deliberacioun, þe Frenssh men bysily & wip grete instaunce askede trewes for her see coostes; & þe King²⁰ graunted hem. and in þe

¹ and hadde TR.² leaf 185, back.³ Parice warde and TR.⁴ y om. R. ⁵ that oon T. on þat o R. ⁶ him T. ⁷ of Paris R.⁸ that he T. þat he R. ⁹ a TR. ¹⁰ Citee and thei T. ¹¹ & om. TR.¹² of om. TR. ¹³ and skemed þe See and destroyed ham R.¹⁴ vnto T. to to C. ¹⁵ hym of T. them of R. ¹⁶ vpon a TR.¹⁷ were schewid wreten T. wreten R. ¹⁸ leaf 186. ¹⁹ til. R.²⁰ and he T.

morwe after þe ocpas of Pasche, þe King turned hym with his ooste towardes Orlyaunce, destroyng & wastyng al þe cuntre by þe wey. And as þey wenten piderward, þere fil oppon hym suche a storme & tempest þat non of our nacioun herd ne sawe neuere non such; thurght þe whiche, þousandez of our men & of hers (*sic*) horses in here¹ (*sic*) iourneying (as it were þorough vangeaunce), sodenly were slayn & perissched, þe which tempestes ful mich zet² ferid not þe Kyng, ne myche of his peple, þat þey ne wenden forth in her (*sic*) viage þat þey had begunne.

[*Peace made between England and France.*]

¶ Wherefore, abute þe feest of Holy-Rode Day in Maii, fast by Carnocum, þe forseid lordes of Fraunce, metyng þer with þe King of En[g]londe, a pesible acorde & a fynal, oppon certeing condiciouns & grauntez articulerlich³ gaderid & wryten togeder, euermore to laste, ful discretly made, & to boþe kyngges profitable, & to her reumes, boþ wip on assent of Karoll þe Regent and Gouvernour of Fraunce, 16 and of⁴ Parys of the same reaume, ywretyn & made vnder þe date, at⁵ Carnacum, þe xv day of May, þey offred & profred to þe King of Engelond, requireng his grace in alle thynges ywriten,⁶ þat he wold benyngly admitte hem, and hold⁷ hem ferme & stable to hem, 20 & to her eires for euermore. þe wiche þingez and articles, whan Kyng Edward had seyn, he⁸ graunted hem, so þat boþe parties sholde be yswore⁹ on Goddis body and on þe holy euaunglies, þat þe forsaide couenauntz shold be stablysshed. & so þey acordeden 24 graciously; þerfore þere were ordeyned & dressid on euery syde too barons,¹⁰ ij. baronettes, ij. knyghtes, to admitte & receyve þe othes of þe Lord Karoll, regent of Fraunce, & of Sir Edward, ¹¹the first sone and Eyr of King Edward of Engelond; and þe x. day of Maii ther 28 was songen a solempne masse at Parys, and aftir þe iij 'agnus dei' yseid,¹² wip 'dona nobis pacem,' in presence of the forseid men, that there yordeynid¹³ to admitte and resceyve the opes, and of all oper þat þer myght be, the same Karoll leyde his right honde on the 32 patene wip Goddis body, & his left hand on þe missale, and sayd: ¶ "We, N and N, sweryn on Goddis body and on þe¹⁴ holy gospellez, þat we schulle trewliche and stedfastly holden toward vs

¹ his R. ² zet *om.* T. ³ articulerli was R. ⁴ of þe T. ⁵ of T.
⁶ writen R. ⁷ hold *om.* T. ⁸ hem he R. ⁹ swore TR.
¹⁰ too barons *om.* TR. ¹¹ leaf 186, back. ¹² was seide T. was seide R.
¹³ ordeynynd T. þat were þere ordeyned R. ¹⁴ this T.

þe pees and¹ þe acorde made bytuene þe² ij kingez, and in no manere to do the contrarie." & þer, amonge al ij his³ lordes, for more loue & streng[t]he of wytneþ, he⁴ deled & departed þe reliques of þe croun of Crist to þe knightes of Engeland: and þey⁵ curteysly token her 4 leve. And in þe Fryday next, þe⁶ same manere othe in presences of þe⁷ knightes, & of⁸ al⁹ oþer worthy men, Prins Edward made at Loners. Afterward, boþe Kyngeþ, and her sones, and þe moste noble men of boþe reaumes, wiþin þe same 3er maden þe same oþe. 8 & forto strengthe al þes forsaid þingeþ þe King of Engeland axed þe grettest men of Fraunce; and he had his axyng; þat is forto seye, .vj. dukes, viij. Erleþ, xij. lordeþ, that is to seyn, baronys and worthy knightes. And whan þe place and þe tyme was assigned 12 in þe whiche bothe Kynges with her counceyll shold come togedir, al þe forsaid thynges bytwene hem yspoke, for to¹⁰ ratifie and make ferme & stable.

þe King of Engeland anone wente toward þe see, & at Houn- 16 flete he bygan to sayle, levying to his ostes that were yleft¹¹ behind him (bycause of his absence) mych hevynes; & after þe xix day of Maii he come into Engeland, & went to his paleys at Westminster on Seynt Dunstons day. & þe iij. day after, he visited John, þe 20 King of Fraunce, þat was in þe Tour of London, & deliuered him frely from¹² al manere prisoun, saue ferst they were acorded of iijj.¹³ Milions of fforeyns for his raunsom, and þe King comforted hym & chered him in alle places, wiþ all solaces & merþes that longen to 24 a king, in his goyng homward.

¶ And þe ix day of Iuyll in þe same 3er, þe same Iohn, King of Fraunce, that aforhand¹⁴ lay here in ostage, wente home aȝen into his owne lande, to trete of þo þingeþ, & of opere that longeden & 28 fillen to þe gouernance of his reaume. And afterward metten and comen togedir at Caleys bothe ij Kinges, wiþ boþe hire counceyll, about Alhalwen tyde, and þer were shewed the condiciouns and þe poyntes¹⁵ of þe pees, & of þe acorde of boþe sydes ywriten; & 32 ther,¹⁵ withoute eny wipseyng, of boþe sides graciously þey¹⁶ þere acorded. and þer¹⁷ was done and sung¹⁷ a solempne masse, and after þe iij. Agnus Dei, vppon Goddes body & also on þe Masse-book, boþe Kyngeþ, & her sones, & þe grettest lordeþ of boþe 36

¹ as C. and R. ² þo R. ³ his om. R. ⁴ se he R. ⁵ þey om. T.

⁶ aftir þe T.

⁷ þe forseide T. þe forsaid R. ⁸ of om.

⁹ alle om. T.

¹⁰ to for to C. ¹¹ left TR. ¹² leaf 187.

¹³ iij TR.

¹⁴ afor said þat R. ¹⁵⁻¹⁶ of þe pees . . . ther om. TR.

¹⁶ þey om. TR.

¹⁷⁻¹⁷ was songen and done T.

reaume, and of hir counceill that þere were¹ þan present, & not had yswore byfor, þe forsaide ope that they² had made, & was titled bytwene hem, þey behighten þere to kepe, & all oþer coue-
 4 nauntes þat were bytuene ham yordeyned.³ ¶ And in þe⁴ same 3er men, bestes, trees, & housyng, wiþ sodeyn tempest & strong light-nyng were yperisshed⁵; & the deucl appered bodyly in mannis liknes to myche peple as they went in diuerses places in⁶ the
 8 cuntre & spake to hem.⁷

[A Parliament at Westminster. Eclipse of the Sun; Marvels, etc.]

Kyng Edward in þe xxxvj 3ere of his regne anon after Criste-
 masse in þe feest of⁸ Conuercion of seint Poul, held his par-
 lement at Westminster, in the which was put forþ and showed þe
 12 acorde and the tretys þat was stablysshed and ymade⁹ betwene þo ij. kynges; the which ac¹⁰orde plesid to¹¹ myche peple; and þerfore, by þe Kynges commaundement, þere were gadryd and comyn togider in Westminster cherche, the first Soneday of¹² Lente, that
 16 is to sey, the ij. Kalend of Feuerell, the forsaide English men and Frensshe men; wher was song a solempne masse of þe Trynyte, of¹³ þe Erchbisshop of Caunterbury, Mayster Symond Islepe. And whan Agnus Dei was do, þo¹⁴ King, beyng þere with his sones, and
 20 also wiþ þe kynges sones of Fraunce, and oþer noble and grete lordes, with candels ylight,¹⁵ and crosse ybrought¹⁶ forth al þat were called þerto that were not yswore¹⁷ afor sworn¹⁸ þat same othe that was writen oppon goddis body & oppon þe masse boke in þis wyse,
 24 "We, N. and N., sweren oppon holy Goddes body, and on¹⁹ þe gospels, stedfastly to hold and kepe toward vs þe pees and þe acorde made betwene the too kynges, and neuere forto do þe contrarie."
 And whan they had þus swore,²⁰ þey token her scrowes that þe
 28 othes were comprehendid in, to the²¹ Notaries.

¶ And this same 3er, in þe Ascencioun, even about Midday, was seyn the Eclipse of þe sunne; and þer folowed suche a newe²² droght that, for default of rayn, þer was grete bareynes of corn, froyt,²³ and
 32 hey, and in þe same 3ere, the vj. kalend of Iuyn, þere fill a sangweyn rayne, almoost like blood, at²⁴ Burgoyne; and a sangweyn

¹ were þere R. ² that thei T. þat þey R. they om. C.
³ ordeyned T. ⁴ þis TR. ⁵ perisshed R. ⁶ of T.
⁷ ham. Capitulum cccxxij R. ⁸ feest of om. TR. ⁹ maad TR.
¹⁰ leaf 187, back. ¹¹ to om. R. ¹² in T. ¹³ bi T. ¹⁴ the TR.
¹⁵ light TR. ¹⁶ brought R. ¹⁷ Swore R. ¹⁸ sworn om. T.
¹⁹ vpon T. ²⁰ I-swore T. ²¹ the om. R. ²² newe om. R.
²³ of fruyt T. ²⁴ in R.

crosse, fro morwe vnto pryme, was seyn and apperid at Boloigne in þe eyr, þe whiche meny a man sawe; & after, it mevid & fill in¹ þe myd see.

¶ and in þe same tyme in Fraunce & in Engeland, & in opere 4 meny² landes as þey had³ duelled in⁴ playn cuntres & desert bare wytnes, sodenly þer apperid ij castels, of þe whiche wenten out ij. ostes of armed men; and þe to⁵ oste was helid and clothed in white, and þe to⁶ere in blak; and whan⁷ ⁸batayl bytuene hem was 8 bygunne, the white ouercome þe blake, and anone⁹ after, þe blak token hert to hem & ouercome þe white; and⁹ after þat, þey went aȝen into her castellis, and þat¹⁰ þe castels & al þe oostes vanissched away. and in þis same ȝere was a grete & a¹¹ houghe pestilence of 12 peple, and namely of men, whos wyues, as wymmen out of gouernaunce, token husbondes, as wel straungers as opere lewed and symple peple, þe whiche, forȝetyng her owne wurschip & berthe, coupled & maried hem with hem¹² þat were of lowe degre & litel 16 reputacion.

¶ In this same ȝere deide Herry, þe¹³ Duke of Lancastre; & also in this ȝere, Edward, Prins of Walys, weddid þe Cuntesse of Kent, þat was Sere Thomas wyf¹⁴ Holande, þe whiche was departed & 20 deuorsid sumtyme fro þe Erl of Salysbury, for cause of þe same knyght. And about þis same tyme pere bygan & aros a grete companye of diuers nacions gaderid togeder, of wom her leders & gouernours were Englissh peple; & þey were clept 'a peple without 24 an heed,' þe whiche deden mych harme in þe partye of Fraunce; & not long after pere aros anoþer companye of diuers nacions þat was called 'þe white companye,' þe whiche, in þe parties & cuntre of Lumbardye, dede myche sorwe. þis same ȝere Sere Iohn Gaunt, 28 þe sone of King Edward þe third, was made Duk¹⁵ of Lancastre, by resoun & cause of his wyf, þat was þe douȝter &¹⁶ eyre of Herry, sumtyme Duk of Lancastre.

Of the grete wynde, & howe Prins Edward, þe¹⁷ lordship of 32 Guyene, of King Edward his fader toke of him,¹⁸ & went thider.

Capitulo cc. xxxij.¹⁹

¹ into T. ² meny oper R. ³ þat R. ⁴ in the TR.

⁵ þat oon T. and þat on R. ⁶ þat opir T. ⁷ whenne the T.

⁸ leaf 188. ⁹⁻⁹ after þe blak . . white and om. T. ¹⁰ þanne TR.

¹¹ An T. ¹² with hem om. T. ¹³ þe om. R. ¹⁴ wyf of T.

¹⁵ þe Duke T. ¹⁶ and the T. ¹⁷ had þe T.

¹⁸ toke of him om. TR. ¹⁹ cc. cxxxij R.

And in þe xxxvij 3er of King Edward, the xv day of January, that is to sey, on Seynt Mauris day, about evesong tyme, þer aroos & come such a wynd out of þe suoth, wip such a fersnes, that he
 4 brast & ¹blewe ²doun ³to ground hye houses, & strong byldynges, toures, cherches, & ⁴steeples, & oper strong⁵ pynges; and al oper strong⁶ werkes þat stoden still, were so yshake þerewith, þat þey ben zett, and shol be euermore, the febelere & weyker while þey
 8 stonde; & þis wynd lasted withoute eny cesyng vij. dayes continuels.

¶ And anon after, þer folowed such watres, in hey tyme & in hervest tyme, þat all feld-werkes were strongly let & left vndone, and in þe same 3ere Prins Edward toke þe Lordship of Guyene, &
 12 dede to Kyng Edward his fader feaute & homage þerfore, & went ouer see into Gascoigne, wip his wyf & his childryn; & anone after, King Edward made Sere Leonel, his sone, Duke of Clarence, &
 16 Edmund, his oper sone, Erl of Caumbrig. ¶ And in þe xxxviii 3ere of his regne, hit was ordeyned in þe parlement, þat men of lawe, bothe of þe temporall & of⁸ holy chirche lawe, fro þat tyme forth shold plede in her moder tunge. And in þe same 3ere comen into
 20 Engeland thre kinges, that is to sey, þe King of Fraunce, the King of Cypres, & þe King of Scotlande, by cause to visite & to speke wip þe King of Engeland, of whiche⁹ þey were wonder welcomen¹⁰ & myche yworshiped.¹¹ & after þat þey had ben her longe tyme, ij of hem wenten a3en home into¹² her owne kingdoms; but þe
 24 King of Fraunce, thurgh grete sikenes & malady þat he had, left still in Engelande.

¶ And in þe xxxix 3er of his regne, was a strong and an houghe frost, & that lasted long, that is forto sey, fro Sent Andrewes tyde
 28 vnto þe xiiij kalend of Aprill, that þe tilthe & ¹³sowyng of þe erthe, & opere suche feld werkes and hand werkes, were myche yyet¹⁴ & lefte¹⁵ vndo, for colde & hardnesse of¹⁶ erthe.

¶ And at Orrey in Brytayne þat tyme was ordeyned a grete
 32 dedly batayll bytwene Sere Iohn of Mounfort, Duk of Bry¹⁷tayne, & Sere Charles of Bloys, but þe victorie fill to þe forseyd Sir John, thurgh help and socour of þe Englissh men; & þere were take meny knyghtes & sqwyers and oper men þat weren ynoumbred.¹⁸ In the

¹ touris chirchis and T.² leaf 188, back.³ down om. T.⁴ toures cherches and om. T.⁵ strong om. T.⁶ strong om. R.⁷ and sir R.⁸ of the T.⁹ whom T.

of whom R.

¹⁰ home ayen to T. to R.¹¹ worshiped R.¹² to R.¹³ and þe R.¹⁴ let R.¹⁵ moche I left T.¹⁶ of the T.¹⁷ leaf 189.¹⁸ men of name R.

whiche bataill was slayn Charlis hymself, with al þat stood about hym; & of þe¹ Englissh men þer were slayn but vij. And in this 3ere deid at Savey, Iohn, the King of Fraunce, whose seruise & exequyes King Edwarde lete² ordeyne, & dede in diuerses places 4 worschipfully to be done, and to douorre of worschipfull men ordeyned hym worthily to be ledde, wiþ his owne costes & expenses; from³ þens he was fet into Fraunce, & beried at Seynt Denys. 8

[*Peter's Pence stopt. Rain, Sparrow-fights, Plagues.*]

¶ In the xl 3eer of King Edward the vij, kalend of Feuerer, was born Edward, Prins Edwardes sone, þe whiche, whan he was vij 3ere olde, he deide. And in þe same 3er hit was ordeyned that seynt Petris pens, fro þat tyme forþ shold not be payd, þe whiche 12 Kyng Iva, sumtyme King of Englund, of þe cuntre of West-Saxons, that bygan to regne in þe 3er of our Lord DClxxix, ferst graunted to Rome, for þe scole of Englund ther to be continued. And in this same 3er þere fill so mich rayne in hey-tyme, that it wasted⁴ & 16 distroyed boþe corn & hey; and þer was suche a debate & fightyng of sparows, by diuers places in thes⁵ dayes, that men founden vnnumerable multitudes of hem dede in feldes as þey wenten. And ther fill also such a pestilens, that neuere non such was sene in no⁶ 20 mannes tyme alyve⁷; for meny men, anone⁸ as þey were go to bed hool⁹ & in good poynt,¹⁰ sodeinly þey deiden. also þat tyme a sikenes þat men callen 'þe pokkes,' slow boþe men and whymmen, þourþ hire enfectyng. ¶ and in þe xli. 3er of his regne¹¹ King 24 Edwarde, was bore at Burdeux Richard the seconde, ¹²sone of Prins Edward of Englund, þe whiche Richard¹³ King Richard of Amoricane heved at þe funtston, after whom he was cleped Richard. & þis same Richard, whan his fader was dede, & Kyng Edward 28 also, was crowned Kyng of Englund þe xj 3ere of his age, thurgh ryght lyne & heritage, & also by commune assent & desir of þe comnalte of þe reaume.

[*With Du Guesclin's help King Pedro of Spain is deposed, and King Henry elected, A.D. 1366.*]

¶ About þis tyme, at King Edwardes commandement of 32 Englund, whan al þe castelles & tounes were 3olde to him, that

¹ þe om. TR. ² lete om. R. ³ And from T. And fro R.

⁴ lasted T. ⁵ Tho T. ⁶ no om. R. ⁷ on lyue T.

⁸ anone om. R. ⁹ hool T. ¹⁰ point anon E. ¹¹ his regne om. TR.

¹² leaf 189, back. ¹³ Richard was C. Richard TR.

long¹ weren hold in Fraunce by a grete cumppany assembled togider, Sere Bertram Cleykyn, knyzt, and² a³ orpid man & a good werreour, went & purposid hym to put out Piers, Kyng of Spayne, out of his kingdome wip help of þe most partye of þe forsaide grete⁴ cumpanye; trustyng also oppon help & fauour of þe Pope, for as myche as hit come to his eres that þe same Piers shold lede & vse the most⁵ worst & synfullest lyf out.⁶ ¶ The wiche Peris, King of Spayne, ysmytyn⁷ with drede of this tydyng, fled into Gascoigne to Prins Edward, forto haue help & socour⁸ of hym. and whan⁹ he was fled out of Spayne, Herry his broþer, þat was a bastarde, by assent of þe moste partie of Spayne, & þorughe help of þat ferfull cumppany þat y spak of arst, was made & crowned Kyng of Spayne: and þe noubre of þat same cumppany was rekened &¹⁰ set at þe noubre of lx. M[†] fighting men.

[*A Danish Expedition against England.*]

¶ This same ȝere, in þe monþe of Iuyn, þere come a gret¹⁶ companye & navee of þe Danes, & gaderyd hem togedir in þe Norþ See, purposyng hem to come into Engeland, to reue & to¹¹ robbe, and also to¹¹ slee; with¹² whom, cuntreden & metten in þe see, Maryners and oþer orpyd fightyng men of the same cuntre, &¹³ disparpeld hem¹⁴; & þey,¹⁵ ashamed, went home aȝen into her owne cuntre. But amonge al oþere was¹⁶ a boystous and a strong vessell of her nauie that was ouere-sayled of the¹⁷ Englissh men, & was perisshid & dreynt; in þe whiche, þe stiward & oþer worthy &²⁴ grete men of Denmark, were take prisoners, &, by the Kyng of Engeland & his counsell, yprisoned.¹⁸ ¶ The whiche lordes, þe Danes afterward comen & soghten¹⁹ al about for to haue had²⁰ her goodes þat þei had lost; and þei, not wel apayed ne plesid of²⁸ þe answeere þat þei had here,²¹ turned homwardes²² aȝen levyng behind hem in her ynnys, pryvyly ywriten,²³ in scrowes and on walles, “Ȝet²⁴ shull Danos þes Wanes.” Than happed þere an Englissh writer &²⁵ wrote aȝens þe Danes in þis manere wyse: *Her*³² shull Danes fett²⁶ banes.

¹ long om. TR. ² and om. TR. ³ an TR. ⁴ grete om. R.

⁵ most om. R. ⁶ out om. R. ⁷ ysmytyn om. T.

⁸ socoure and help T. socour and help R. ⁹ whan om. T.

¹⁰ rekened & om. T. ¹¹ to om. R. ¹² leaf 190. ¹³ and thei T.

¹⁴ hem om. T. ¹⁵ þey om. T. ¹⁶ þer was R. ¹⁷ the om. T.

¹⁸ prisoned T. ¹⁹ sente R. ²⁰ had with C. had TR.

²¹ þei T. here om. R. ²² hoom R. ²³ writen R. ²⁴ þe T.

²⁵ & om. R. ²⁶ sette her TR.

[*The deposed King Pedro of Spain appeals to the Black Prince for help.*]

And in þis tyme, Peirs, Kyng¹ of Spayne, with oþer Kynges, þat is forto sey, þe King of Nauerne, &² þe King of Malogre, beyng menes, wenten bitwene, & prayed counceyl³ & help of Sere Edward, þe Prins þonez, whose counceil, whan he had vnderstond 4 her articles & desire þat he was requyred of ij.⁴ kynges, lothe he was, and ashamed, to sey 'nay,' & contrarie hem; but noþeles he was agast lest it sholde be eny preiudice azens þe Pope.⁵ Long he taried hem or he wolde graunte & consente þerto, til he had better 8 counceyl & avyement with good deliberacioun of King Edward, his geter and⁶ his fader. ¶ But whan þat⁷ he was with euery dayes & continuele bysechynges of so meny noble men yrequired⁸ & spoken to, & wiþ meny prayers ysent⁹ and made bituene þam, 12 Prins Edward sent to his fader—boþe by pleynyng lettres, and also by comfortable, conteynyng al her suggestions and causes, wiþ al þe toþer¹⁰ Kynges epistles & lettres forto haue¹¹ comfort and helpe of þe wronges, not only to þe Kyng of Spayne ydo, but also for 16 such þinges þat might fal to oþere kynges also, if it ner not þe sonner holpen & amendid, þurgh þe dome & help of knyghthood to hem that it asked & desired. ¶ The which lettres, whan þe kyng and his wys counceyll had seyn & vndirstonden, he had grete 20 compassioun & heuynesse of such a kynges spoylyng and robbyng, wiþ myche vermaille¹²; and sent azen comfortable letteres to Prins Edward, his sone, and to þe oþere forsaide kynges, & warned hym forto arme hym & ordeigne hym azens þat mysdoer, & to wipstond 24 hem, by þe help of God, that weren such enemyes to kynges.

[*The Black Prince undertakes to help the King of Spain.*]

¶ Whan this¹³ noble Prynz had reseceyued þes letteres, hym-self, wiþ þe oþere kynges byfor all her counceyll clept togeder or þat he wold vndirtake þe querell be¹⁴ bonde, & knet sore þe King þat was 28 deposid wiþ a grete othe, þat is forto sey, þat he shold euere after maynteigne the ryzt byleue and faith of holi chirche, & holy chirche¹⁵ also wiþ al her mynistres, rightes & libertees, to defende from all her enemyes; and all eueles¹⁶ & al þat were þere azens, 32

¹ kyng *om.* T.

² & *om.* R.

³ of counseyl T.

⁴ þo TR.

⁵ pope and T.

⁶ his geter & *om.* TR.

⁷ þat *om.* TR.

⁸ required T.

⁹ sent T.

¹⁰ oþer R.

¹¹ leaf 190, back.

¹² mervail R.

¹³ þe R.

¹⁴ he R.

¹⁵ & holy chirche *om.* R.

¹⁶ & all eueles *om.* TR.

bytterly to ponysshe & destourble, & al þe rightes libertees &
 pryvileges of holy cherche encrece, mayntaigne & amende, & al
 þinges þat were wrongfully benome, wipdrawe & bore away, by hym
 4 or by eny opere by cause of hym, hastily to restore aȝen, and to
 dryve & put out Sarazins & al opere mysbyleued peple out of his
 kyngdom, wip al his strenghe & power, & suffre ne admitte none
 such for no manere þing, ne cause to duell theryn; and þat whan he
 8 had take a cristen womman to wyf, he shold neuere come in to¹ non
 oper wommans bedde, ne non opere mannes wyf to² defoule: al þes
³forsaide þinges, trewlych forto kepe,⁴ continue & fulfill al his lyf
 tyme, he was bound by othe afor notaries, in presence and witnes
 12 of tho kynges wip opere prins, & þan thilk⁵ gracious Prins Edward
 vndertoke þe cause & þe querele of þe King þat was deposed, &
 behight hym, with⁶ þe⁷ grace of God, to restore hym aȝen to his
 kyngdome, and lete ordeigne & gadre to-gedir forthwip in all haste,
 16 his nave, wip men of armes, to werre & fight in this forseid cause.

*[Fight of Eagles; Fall of Fiery Stars; Storms and
 Destruction.]*

¶ And in this same tyme, oppon þe sonde of the Scottyssh see,
 þat meny a man⁸ hit sye ther⁹ iij. dayes togedir þere were sene ij.
 Eglez, of þe which the tone¹⁰ come out of þe southe, & þe toþer¹¹
 20 out of¹² þe North, & cruelly & strongly þey foughten togider &
 warstled togider; & þe south Egle ferst ouercome the Northe egle,
 & al¹³ to-rent and tare hym wip his bille & his clowes, þat he shold
 not reste ne take no breþe; and aftir, the south egle flye home to
 24 his owne coostes. and anone after, þere folowed & was seyn
 in þe¹⁴ morne afore þe¹⁵ sunne rysing; and after, in¹⁶ þe last day of
 Octobre saf on, þat¹⁷ meny sterres gaderid togedir on an hepe fel
 down into þe erþe, levyng behind hem fery¹⁸ bemes in manere of
 28 lightnyng, whos flaumes & hete brent & consumed mennys clopes
 & mennys here, walkyng on þe erþe, as hit was seen & knowen of
 meny a man. ¶ and ȝet thilk Northren wynd, that is euere redy &
 destinat to all evell fro Seynt Katerins even til iij. dayes aftir, lost
 32 good wipoute nombre vnreouerable. and in þese same dayes þer
 fill & comen also such lightnynges, pundres, snowe & hayl, þat hit
 wastede and destroyed men, bestes, houses and trees.

¹ in TR. ² to om. R. ³ leaf 191. ⁴ be kept R. ⁵ þat R.
⁶ hym with om. T. ⁷ bi the T. ⁸ a man om. T. ⁹ it saw R.
¹⁰ that oon T. ¹¹ þat on R. ¹² þat oper T. ¹³ þat oper com off R.
¹⁴ al om. T. ¹⁵ in the T. ¹⁶ in þe R. om. C. ¹⁷ þe om. R.
¹⁸ in om. R. ¹⁹ þat om. R. ²⁰ very R.

Of þe bataill of Spayne bitwene Prins Edward & Herry þe
Bastard of Spayne. Capitulo CC^{mo} xxxiiij^o.¹

[I]n þe 3er of our Lord a M^tCCC. lxvij, & of Kyng Edward xliij., þe thrid day of ²Aprill, þer was a strong bataill & a 4 grete, in a large felde yclept³ Pryazers, fast by þe water of Nazers in Spayne, bitwene Sir⁴ Edward Pryns,⁵ & Harry, þe Bastarde of Spayne; but þe victorie fill to Pryns Edward, by þe grace of God. & þis same Prins Edward had with hym Sere John, þe Duke of 8 Lancastre, his broþer, and worpi oþer⁶ men of armes, aboute þe noubre of xxx. M^t. And þe King of Spayne had on⁷ his side, men of diuerce nacions, to þe noubre of a⁸ C. M^t. & passyng. ¶ Wherfore þe sharpnes & þe fersnes of his aduersarye, wip his 12 ful boystus & ful⁹ grete strengthe, made &¹⁰ strevyn¹¹ þe ryztfull partye abak a gret wey; but purgh þe grace of Almyzty God, passyng eny mannys strengthe, thilk hougest ooste was desparbled myghtfully by þe noble Duk of Lancastre and his oste, or þat Pryns 16 Edward come nye hym. ¶ And whan Harry þe Bastard sey þat, he turned wip his men,¹² wip so grete haste and strengthe, to fle, þat an houe cumpanye of him in þe forseyd flood, & of þe brigge þer-of,¹³ fillen¹⁴ doun¹⁵ & perissched. and þere were take, þe Erl of 20 Dene and Sere Bertram Cleykyn, þat was chefe¹⁶ maker and cause of the werre, and also chyueteyn of þe vauntward of þe bataill, wip meny oþer lordes and knightes, to þe noubre of ij. M^t; of whom ij^c weren of Fraunce, & meny of Scotlond; & þere were feld in þe 24 felde on our enemys side, of lordes and knyghtes, with opere mene peple, to þe noubre of vj M^t & mo; and of Englissh men but a fewe. ¶ And after þis, þat noble Prins Edward restored þe same Piers into his kingdom azen. þe whiche Piers afterward, pourȝ 28 trecherye & falsnes of þe forsaid Bastarde of Spayne as he sate atte þe table, he was strangled and deyde. but after þis victorye, meny noble and hardy men of Engelond, in Spayne, pourȝ the slix & odir diuers siknesses, toke her dethe.

32

& in þis same ¹⁷3er in Marche,¹⁸ was seyn 'Stella Comata' bitwene þe North costes & þe west, whos bemes strecched toward Fraunce. and in þe 3er next sewyng of King Edwardes regne

¹ Capitulo CC^o T. CCxxxiiij R. ² leaf 191, back. ³ clept TR.

⁴ sir om. R. ⁵ bitwene Prince Edward T. þe Prins R.

⁶ and oþer worthi R. ⁷ in R. ⁸ an T. ⁹ ful om. R.

¹⁰ made & om. R. ¹¹ droof T. dryuen R. ¹² wip his men om. TR.

¹³ þer of om. R. ¹⁴ fil a T. ¹⁵ A downe T. ¹⁶ chefe om. T.

¹⁷ leaf 192. ¹⁸ in Marche om. T.

xliij., in Aprill, Sere Leonell, Kyng Edwardes sone, pat was duk of Clarence, went towarde Myleyn, with a chose meyne of þe gentils of Englonð, forto wedde Galoys douȝter,¹ and haue her to wyf, by
 4 whom he shold haue half² þe Lordship of Mileyn. But after pat þey were solempnly wedded, the³ same Duke, about þe Natiuite of our Lady deid.⁴ & in þe same ȝere þe Frensshe men breken þe pees & the trewes, ryding on þe Kinges ground and lordship of
 8 Englonð, in þe shire & cuntre of Pountyf, & taken & helden castls & tounes, & bere þe Englysshe men on hond falsly⁵ & sotilly,⁶ pat þey were cause of breking of þe⁷ truws. And in þis same ȝere deyð þe Duchesse⁸ of Lancastre, & is beryed worschipfully in⁹ Seynt
 12 Poules Cherche.¹⁰

[*A Great Pestilence, A.D. 1369.*]

¶ The xliij ȝere of King Edward regne, was þe grete pestilens of men and of grete beestes; and by grete fallyng of wateres pat fill pat tyme, þer fill grete hyndryng & destroyeng of corn, in so
 16 mych pat þe next ȝere after, a bussell whete¹¹ was solde for xl d. and about þe laste ende of May, Kyng Edward held his parlement at Westminster; in þe whiche parlement was treted & spoken of þe ope & þe¹² trewes pat was broke bituene hem and þe King of
 20 Fraunce, & how he myȝte best oppon his wrong be avenged. ¶ In þis same ȝer, in þe Assumpsion of our Lady, deid¹³ Qwene Philippe of Englonð, a ful noble and good woman; & at Westminster ful worschipfully is buried & entered.
 24 And about Missomere, þe Duke of Lancastre & þe Erle of Hereford, wip a grete companye of knyȝtes, wenten into Fraunce, wher þey gete hem but a litell worship and name¹⁴; for þer was an houghe oste of Frenssh men oppon¹⁵ Chalkhul brigge, ¹⁶& anoper oste¹⁷
 28 of Englysshe men faist by þe same brigge,¹⁶ pat longe tyme had leyn þere; and meny worȝy men & grete of þe¹⁸ Englysshe men ordeyned & ȝaf counceyll forto fight & ȝeue bataill to þe Frensh men; but þe forsaide lordes wolde noȝing¹⁹ consente þerto, ne assent,²⁰ for no
 32 manere þing. ¶ Ther anon after, hit happid pat þe Erl of Warwyke come pedirward forto werre; & whan þe Frenshmen herde

¹ Galeys þe Dukis sister of Mileyne R. ² þe half R. ³ pat T.⁴ he died T. ⁵ men falsly on honde T. pat falsli R.⁶ sotilly om. T. ⁷ þe om. R. ⁸ Duke T. ⁹ at T.¹⁰ chirche at London R. ¹¹ of whete T. ¹² and of the T.¹³ died the T. ¹⁴ and name om. R. ¹⁵ leaf 192, back.¹⁶⁻¹⁶ & anoper oste . . . brigge om. R. ¹⁷ oste om. T. ¹⁸ þe om. T.¹⁹ not R. ²⁰ ne assent om. R.

of his comynge, or þat pey¹ come fully to londe, pey left her tentis and pavilons, wip al hir vetayles, & fledden² and wenten away preveyly. And whan þe Erl was come to londe wip his men, he wente in al has[t]³ into⁴ Normandy, and distroyede þe Ile of Cavs, pour⁵ 4 dent of suerde & pour³ fire; but alas, in his returnyng into⁵ Englund-warde home azen, at Caleys he was take with siknes of pestilence, & deide, nowt lewyng behynde him, after his dayes, non⁶ so noble a kniȝt, ne so⁷ orpid of armes. ¶ In whiche tyme rayned 8 and werred thilk orpid kniȝt, Sere Iohn Hawkwode, þat was an Engliſshman born, hauyng with hym at⁸ his gouernance pilk white cumpanye þat ys abore⁹ ynemned, þe whiche were¹⁰ o tyme azens holy chirche, and anoper tyme azens lordes werryng, & ordeynede 12 gret batailes; & per in þat cuntre he dede many mervayles pingeȝ.

And aboute þe Conuersion of Seynt Poule, King Edward, whan he had ȝended and done þe entering and þe¹¹ exequites, wip grete costes and rialtees, aboute þe tombe¹² & buryng of Quene 16 Phillip his¹³ wif, he held his parlement at Westminster. In þe whiche parlement was axed of þe clergie a iij. ȝers disme, þat is forto sey, a gret dime to be paid .iij. ȝer duryng; and the clergie put hit of, and wolde not graunte hit vnto Ester next comyng; 20 & þan pey graunted wele þat in iij ȝere, by certeyne termes, þat disme¹⁴ shold be payed; & also of þe lay fee, was a iij. ȝers xv. ygraunted to þe King.

Hov sir Robert Knollis, wip oper certeyne¹⁵ lordes of þe 24
reaume,¹⁶ wente ouere þe see into Fraunce; & of here
gouernaunce. *Capitulo CC^{mo}. xxxiiij^o.*¹⁷

And in þe xlv ȝere of King Edward, in þe bygenyng, King Edward, wip owne-wise¹⁸ counceyll and vndescret, borwed a 28 grete summe of gold of þe prelatis and lordes, Marchauntes and oper riche men of þe¹⁹ reaume, saynge þat hit sholde be spende in deffendyng of holy cherche & of his reaume; but neuer þe latter hit profited hit²⁰ not. Wherefore about Midsomer after, þe king 32 made a grete oste of þe worthiest men of his reaume, amonges whom were somme lordes, þat is forto seyn, þe Lord Fitzwater,

¹ he TR. ² fledde penneȝ R. ³ haste T. ⁴ haste toward R.

⁵ to TR. ⁶ non om. R. ⁷ knyght and TR.

⁸ and at TR. ⁹ afore R. ¹⁰ were om. TR. ¹¹ þe om. R.

¹² sepulchre TR. ¹³ his wif T. his wiff R. wif om. C.

¹⁴ leaf 193. ¹⁵ certeyne om. R. ¹⁶ of þe reaume om. TR.

¹⁷ CC^o T. CC xxxv R. ¹⁸ with vnwis R. ¹⁹ his TR.

²⁰ hit om. TR.

þe Lord Gromson, and oper worþi kniȝtes, of whiche kniȝtes þe King¹ ordeyned Sere Robert Knollis, a proved kniȝt and wel assayed in dede of armes, forto be gouernour; and þat, þourȝ his
4 gouernnance and counceyll, al þing sholde be gouerned & dressid. and whan þey come into Fraunce, as long as þey duelled and helde him hole togider, þe Frensshmen þorust² nout falle oppon hym. & at þe³ laste, aboute þe bigynnyng of wenter, for enuye and covetyse⁴
8 þat was aminges ham, and also discorded, þey sunddered & partyd him into diuers companyes, vnwysely & follely. But Sere Robert Knollis & his men wenten and kepten ham saf⁵ wiþinne a Castel in Britaigne. & whan þe frenshe men saw þat our men were
12 deuyded into diuers cumpanyes & places, nouȝt holdyng ne strengyng ham togeders, as þey awȝte forto done, þey fel fersly on our men, & for þe moste partey⁶ token ham & slowen⁶; and þo þat þey toke, ledde wiþ him presoners. ¶ And in þe same ȝere
16 Pope Vrban come fro Rome to Auyoun, for enchesoun & cause þat he shold acorde and make pees bytwene þe King of Fraunce and þe King of Engelande for euermore; but allas, ⁷or he bygan þis tretis, he deide wiþ sikenes, þe xxj day of Decembre, & was
20 yburied⁸ as for þe tyme in þe cathedral cherk of Auyon, fast by þe hye⁹ auter. & þe next ȝere after, whan he had leyn so, his bones were taken out of þe erpe, and beryed new in þe abbey of Seynt Victour, fast by Marcyle, of þe whiche abbey he was sumtyme
24 abbot hymself.¹⁰ & in boþe places þat he was buried yn, ther¹¹ bene meny grete miracles done and wroght, thurgh þe grace of God, to meny a mannes help, and to þe worship of God. After whom folowed next, & was made Pope Gregore Cardynall, dekene,
28 þat bifore was clept Piers Rogier.

[*The Black Prince takes Limoges, and comes back to England.*]

¶ In this same ȝere þe Citee of Lymage rebelled and faght aȝens þe Pryns, as opere Citees in Guyene dede, for grete taxes, costages & raunsoms, þat þey wer put-yn and ysette¹² to¹³ by Prins Edward,
32 þe whiche charges were unportable, & to chargeable; wherfor þey turned fro him, & fill to þe King of Fraunce, & whan Pryns Edward sawe þis, he was sore ychaufed¹⁴ & ygreuid; and in turnyng

¹ the kyng TR. the om. C. ² durest R. ³ þe om. TR.

⁴ and covetyse om. TR. ⁵ self R.

⁶⁻⁸ token hem or slowen hem T. or slowen ham R. ⁷ leaf 193, back.

⁸ buried TR. ⁹ hye om. R. ¹⁰ hymself om. R. ¹¹ ther om. T.

¹² sette T. ¹³ to om. T. ¹⁴ chaufed R.

homward azen to Engeland, with sore skyrmisshes & fightyng and grete¹ assautes, fought² with hem, & toke þe forsaide Citee, & destroyed hit almost to þe³ grounde, and slow al þat were⁴ founde in þe Citee.⁴ And þan, forto sey þe sothe, for diuers siknesses and 4 maladies þat he had, and also for defaute of money þat he myght not wipstande ne tarie on his enemys, he hyed hym azen into Engeland. And about þe bygynnyng of Januarij he come into Engeland with his wyf and his meyne, levyng behind him in Gas- 8 coigne þe Duk of Lancastre & Sere Edmund,⁵ Erl of Caumbrigge, with opere worþy and orpid men of armes.

¶ In þe xlvj zere of King Edward, at þe ordinaunce & sendyng of King Edward, þe King of Nauern come to hym to Claryngdoun, 12 to trete wip ham of certeyn þinges touching his werre⁶ in Normandy, wher King Edward had left⁷ certen seges in his stede til he come azen; but King Edward myghten not spede of þat þat he asked of hym; and so þe King of Nauerne, with grete worshup & grete 16 zeftes, toke his leue, & wente home azen. And about þe begynnyng of Marche, whan þe parlement at Westminster was bygune; þe King axed of þe clergie a subsidie of L. M^t ti,⁸ þe whiche, by a⁹ good avisement & by a general conuocacioun of þe clergie, hit was 20 ygraunted¹⁰ & yordeyned¹¹ þat hit shold be payede & reised of þe lay fee. And in þis parlement, at þe requeste & axyng of þe lordes, in hatered of men of holy chirche, þe Chaunceler & tho þat were Bisshopes, þe Tresorer & þe Clerk of þe Pryue Sele, were remeued 24 & put out of hire office, & in hire stedes were seculer men put yn. And while þis parlement laste, þer comen solempne ambassiatours, ysent¹² fro þe Pope to trete wip þe King, of pees, & saiden þat þe Pope desired to fullfille his predecessours will; but for al hir 28 comyng þey spedden not of hir purpos.

Of þe sege of Rochell, & hov þe Erl of Penbroke was taken of þe Spaynardeȝ. Capitulo CC^{mo} xxxv^o.¹³

The ix day of Juyn, King Edward, in þe xlvij zere of his regne, 32 helde his parlement at Wynchestre; & hit lasted but viij. dayes; to þe¹⁴ parlement was sompned by wryt, of men of holy chirche, iiij. bisshopes &¹⁵ iiij. abbotes, wipoute eny mo. This parlement

¹ and grete om. R. ² fightyng sautis foughten T. ³ þe om. T.
⁴⁻⁴ founde þerynne R. ⁵ Iohn TR. ⁶ leaf 194. ⁷ lost R.
⁸ 1 Ml pound T. ⁹ a om. R. ¹⁰ graunted R. ¹¹ ordeyned R.
¹² sent R. ¹³ CC^o T. CC xxxvj R. ¹⁴ þis R. ¹⁵ & om. T.

was¹ holden for Marchauntis of London, of Norwych, & of oþer diuers places, in diuers þinges and poyntes of tresoun þat þey were diffamed of, þat is forto sey, þat þey were rebelle, & wolde² rise
4 azens þe King.

¶ This same ȝere þe Duk of Lancastre and þe Erl of Caumbrigge, his broþer, comen out of Gascoigne into Englonð, & token & weddid to hir wyues Petres doghters, sumtyme King of Spayne; of
8 which ³ij douȝters þe Duke had þe elder,⁴ and þe Erl þe ȝonger. And þe⁵ same tyme þer were sent ij Cardinals fro þe Pope, þat is to sey, an Engliſsh Cardinal, & a Cardinal of Parius, to trete of pees bytwene tho ij. reaumes, þe which, whan þey had ben hoþe longe
12 eche in his province, & in places & cuntres fast by, tretying of þe forſaid pees, at þe laſt þey toke wiþ hem her lettres of procuracye, & went aȝen to þe court of Romeward,⁶ wiþoute eny effecte of hir purpos. ¶ In þis ȝere also þere was a ſtronge bataill on þe ſee
16 bytwene Engliſsh men & Flemmynges; & þe Engliſsh men had þe victorye, & toke xxv. ſhippes ycharged⁷ wiþ ſalt, ſleyng & drenchyng al þe men þat were þerin, vnwytyng hem þat þey weren of þat cuntre. and redily mych harme had fall by cauſe⁸ þerof,
20 ne had pees þe⁹ ſonner be made bitwene hem. and in þis ſame ȝer þe Frenſſh men byſeged þe toun of þe¹⁰ Rochell, wherfor þe Erle of Penbrok was ſent into Gascoigne with a grete cumpanye of men of armes, forto deſtroye þe ſege; þe which paſſeden þe¹¹ ſee,
24 & comen ſafe to¹² þe haven of Rochell. and whan þey were þere at þe haven mouþe, or þat¹³ þey myght entre, ſodenly comen oppon hem a ſtrong naue of Spayne, þe whiche ouercomen þo¹⁴ þe Engliſsh men, in mych blemyſhyng, hurtyng & ſleyng of many
28 perſones, for as miche as þe Englyſſe men were not þan redy forto fight, ne ware of hem. & in þis comyng oppon¹⁵ of þe Spaynardes, all þe Engliſsh men, eyþer þey were take or ſlayn; & x. of hem were wonded to þe dethe; & all her ſhippes ybrent.¹⁶ ¶ And þere¹⁷
32 þey token þe Erle, with an houe treſour of þe reaume¹⁸ of Engelonð, & many oþer noble men alſo, on Miſſomer eve, þe whiche is ſeynt Mildredes day, &¹⁹ ledden hem wiþ²⁰ him into Spayne. And of þis myſſhif was no grete wonder, for þis Erle was a ful euel lyuer, as

¹ was maad and T.² wolde om. T.³ leaf 194, back.⁴ elder TR. Erle C.⁵ þat TR.⁶ ward om. R.⁷ charged TR.⁸ bycause om. R.⁹ þe pece T.¹⁰ þe om. T.¹¹ in þe T.¹² vnto T. into R.¹³ þat om. T.¹⁴ þo om. T.¹⁵ on T.¹⁶ brent R.¹⁷ þere om. T.¹⁸ of þe reaume om. T.¹⁹ þei T.²⁰ hem wiþ om. R.

an opyn lechour; & also in a ¹certeyne parlement he stood and was azens þe ²riztes & þe fraunche of holy chirche ²; and also he counceyled þe King and his counceyle, ³þat he shold axe more of men of holy chirch þan of *oper* persones of þe lay fee. ¶ And for ⁴þe King & *opere* of his counceyl axcepted & token raper evell opynions & causis azens men of holy chirch, þan he dede forto fende & maynteyne þe rizt of holy chirch, hit was sen in ⁴many tymes after, þourgh lakkyng of fortune and ⁵grace, þey had not ne ⁸bere away so ⁵grete victorye ne power azens hir enemyns as þey dede byfore.

þis same 3ere, þe King, wip a grete osee, entred þe see to remeve þe sege of ⁶Rochell; but þe wynd was euen contrarye to ¹²hem, and suffred hem ⁷not longe tyme to ⁸goo fer fro þe londe. Wherefore he abode a certeyne time oppon þe see costes, abyding after a good wynde for him; and zet come hit not. So at þe ⁹laste he come þens wip his men to londeward azen; and anon as he was ¹⁶a ¹⁰londe, þe wynde bygan turne, ¹¹and was in ano*per* coste þen he was byfore.

Hov þe Duk of ¹²Lancastre, with a grete oste, went into Flaundres, ¹²& passed by Parys, þoru; Burgoyne. *Capitulo* 20 CC^{mo} xxxvj^o. ¹³

Sone ¹⁴after, in þe xlvij 3ere of King Edward, þe Duk of Lancastere, wip a grete oste, wente into Floundres, and passid by Parys, þoru; Burgoyne, & þoru; alle Fraunce; til he come to ²⁴Burdeux, wipoute eny manere wipstonddyng of þe Frenshe men. & he dede him but litel harme, saf he toke and raunseued many places & touznes, & meny ¹⁵¹⁶men lette hem goon after ¹⁶frely.

¶ The same 3er þe King sent certeyne embassetours to þe Pope, ²⁸praynge hem þat he sholde ¹⁷leue of and melle-not ¹⁸in his court of þe kepynge; & reseruaciouns of benefeces in Engeland; & þat þo þat were chose to bisshopes sees ¹⁹& dingnites, frely & wip ful right myzte ²⁰Ioye haue, ²¹& be confermed. ²²Of her Metropolanes and ³²

¹ leaf 195. ²⁻² rightis of holi chirche and þe ffraunchises T.

³ and his connceyle *om.* TR. ⁴ in *om.* R.

⁵⁻⁵ grace for þey hadde neuer so R. ⁶ at T.

⁷ and suffred hem *om.* T. to him þat he myzte not R.

⁸ to *om.* R. ⁹ þe *om.* T. ¹⁰ at T. at þe R. ¹¹ to turne T.

¹²⁻¹² lancastre wente into flaundris with a greet hoost T.

¹³ CC^o T. CCxxxvij R. ¹⁴ Ancon T. Anon R. ¹⁵ meny *om.* T.

¹⁶⁻¹⁶ men and after lete hem gone T. men and let ham attir go R.

¹⁷ wolde T. ¹⁸ and not medle TR. ¹⁹ sees *om.* R.

²⁰ ful moche T. right myzte R. ²¹ haue TR. and haue C.

²² leaf 195, back.

Erchebisshops, as þey were went to be of old tyme of þes poyntes, & of oþer toching þe Kinge and his reaueme. When þey hadden her answeere of þe Pope, þe Pope enioyned hem þat þey sholde
4 certyfie hem aȝen by her letteres of þe Kinges wyll, and of his reaueme, or þat þey determened out¹ of þe forsaide articles.

¶ In this same ȝer, deid John, þe Erchebisshop of ȝork, Iohn, bosship of Ely; William, bisship of Worschestre, in whos stedes
8 folweding, and were made bisship by þe² auctorite of þe Pope, Mayster Alexander Nevyle to þe Erchebysshoprich of ȝork, Thomas of Arundell to þe Bisshop³ of Ely, & sere Herry Wakefeld to þe bysshoprich of Worcestre. In whiche tyme it was ordeyned in þe
12 parlement þat all Cathedrall cherches shold ioy and haue her eleccions hool; & þat þe King, fro þat tyme afterward, sholde not write aȝens hem þat were ychosen,⁴ but rather help ham by his lettres to her confirmacioun. & this statut was kept, and dede
16 myche profet & good; & in þis parlement was graunte to þe King a dysme of þe clergie, & a xv of þe lay fee.

¶ The ȝere next⁵ after, of King Edward xlix, þe v. day of Iuyn, deid Mayster William Wytlesey, Erchebisshope of Caunter-
20 bery. Wherfor þe monkes of þe same chirche asked & desired a Cardinall of Engeland to be Erchebisshop; and perfore þe King was agreued, & had ment and purposed to have exiled þe monkes of þe same hous⁶; & so þey⁷ spended mich good or þey myghte haue þe
24 Kinges grace aȝen, & his loue; but ȝet wold not þe King consente ne graunte to her eleccioun of þe Cardinall, ne þe Pope also, ne his Cardinals.

& about þe bygynnyng of August, it was tretid & spoken at
28 Brugges of certeyn poyntes & articles hauyng bytwene þe Pope and þe King of Engelande; & þis tretis lasted almoste ij. ȝere. At þe⁸ laste it was acorded bytwene ham, þat þe Pope, fro þat ty⁹me forþe, shold nout vse ne dele wiþ þe reseruacions of¹⁰ benefices in Engeland;
32 and þat þe King shold not graunte ne lete no benefices by his wryt þat ys yclept¹¹ 'Quare impedit'; but as touchyng þe eleccions aboue seyð, þere was noþing touchid ne do; & þat was ywyted¹² & put oppon certeyn clerkes, the¹³ whiche rap^{er} supposed & hoped¹⁴
36 to be auauuced & promoted to bysshopriches which¹⁵ þey desired & coueyted, by þe court of Rome þan by eny eleccions.¹⁶

¹ ought T. ² þe om. TR. ³ archebisshopriche R. ⁴ chosen TR.

⁵ nexte yeer R. ⁶ chirche R. ⁷ þey om. T. ⁸ þe om. T.

⁹ leaf 196. ¹⁰ of þe R. ¹¹ clept TR. ¹² wyted R. ¹³ the om. T.

¹⁴ hoped & supposed R. ¹⁵ with that T. ¹⁶ þanne oþer wise R.

This same 3er about Candelmasse, þere comen & metten togider at Brugges, meny noble and worþy men of boþe reaumes, to treten of pees bituene þo ij. kingdomes. And this tretys lasted twey 3er, wiþ grete costes & hounge spences of¹ boþe 4 parties; & at þe laste þey went & departed þens wiþout eny accorde or effecte.

¶ The next 3er after, þe xlix² 3er of Kyng Edward, þe iiij. None of Maii, beyng zet void & vacaunt³ þe Erchebisshop of 8 Caunterbury, Maister Symound Sudbury, Bysshop of London, was⁴ made Erchebisshop of Caunterbury; & Maister Will. Courteneye, þat was Bisshop of Herford, was þan made Bysshop of London; & þe Bisshop of Bangor was made Bosship of Herford. 12

And in þis same tyme, in a certeyn tretys, & speking of pees, trews was take bytwene Fraunce & Engeland, fro⁵ Missomere vnto Missomere come aȝen, al on hool 3er. ¶ And about the bygynnyng of Aprill, þe Duke of Brytayne, wiþ meny Erles,⁶ barons, and 16 noble and⁷ worþy men of Engeland, went ouere see⁸ into Brytaigne, wher he had al his lust, desire & purpos,⁹ ne had þe forsaide trws be so sone ybrake,¹⁰ þe whiche letted hem myche. This same tyme, þe Ile of Constantyn, wher þat the castell of Sent Sauour is yn, þat 20 longe tyme was fought at & byseged of þe Frenshe men,¹¹ was þan ȝolden to þe Frenshemen,¹¹ wiþ al þe appurtenaunces, into grete harme & hyndryng of þe reame of Engeland.

And þe¹² same 3er þere were so¹³ grete & so passyng hetes, & 24 þerewiþal a grete pestilens in Engeland, & in oþer diuers parties of þe world, þat it destroyed & slow, violently & strongly, both men & wymmen without noubre.

¶ This same 3er deid Sir Edward, þe lord Spencer, a worthy 28 knyȝt and a bolod; & in þe Mynstre of Teukesbury worschipfully is buried.

& lastyng this pestilens, þe Pope, at þe instaunce & prayer of a¹⁴ Englissh Cardinall, graunted to al þe peple þat deid in Engeland 32 þat weren sory and repentaunt for her synnes, & also shryven, ful remysioun, by ij. bulles vnder lede, vj. monthes þan next to last.

In þis same 3er þe Erl of Penbrook was take & raunsened by¹⁵ Bertram Cleykyn, bytwne Parys & Caley, as he come towarde 36

¹ on T. ² TR. ³ vacaunt & void R.

⁴ london was T. london þey R. ⁵ fro R. for C. ⁶ erlis & R.

⁷ noble and om. R. ⁸ þe see T. ⁹ purpos and desire R.

¹⁰ ybrake T. take RC. ¹¹⁻¹¹ was þan ȝolden . . . men om. T.

¹² this TR. ¹³ leaf 196, back. ¹⁴ an T. ¹⁵ bi for R.

Engelonde oppon Seint Etheldredis day ; þe whiche Seynt, as hit was said, þe same Erl oft tymes had offended ; & wiþin a while after, he deide. & in Noumbre¹ next after, þere metten at Brugges 4 þe Duke of Lancastre & þe Duke of Angeoy, wiþ meny oþer lordes & prelates of boþe reaumes, forto trete of pees.

Of þe deþe of prins Edward, & of dame² Alys Perers, & Piers de la Mare. *Capitulo CC xxxviiij*^{o.3}

[*A Parliament held at Westminster, A.D. 1376. Alice Ferrers and Lord Latimer.*]

8 Not⁴ longe after þe lj. 3ere of þe regnyng of King Edward, he lete ordeyned & holde his parlement at Westminster, þe grettest þat was sen meny 3ere afore. In þe whiche parlement, he axed of⁵ Communaltee of þe reaume as he had done byfore, a grete subsede 12 to be graunted to hem, for defendyng of hem and of his reame ; but þe communes answered þat 'þey were so oft, day be day, ygreued & charged wiþ so meny talyage3 & subsidies, þat þey my3te no longer suffre non such berþes ne charges ; ¶ and þat þey knewyn 16 & wisten wel þat þe King had ynov for sauyn of hem & of his⁶ reaume, yf þe reaume wher wel and trewly gouerned, but þat⁷ ⁸it had be so long euel ygouerned⁹ by euel officers, þat the reaume my3t neither¹⁰ be plenteuous of Chaffare and merchaundise, ne 20 also wiþ¹¹ richesse : & þese þinge3 þey profered hem self, if þe King wold, certey[n]ly to preue & stonde by. and if it were found & proued after, þat þe King þan had nede, þey wold þen gladly, euery man, after his power and state, hem wold¹² helpe & 24 lene.'

¶ And after þis, þere were published & shewed in þe parlement meny playntes & defautes of officers of¹³ þe reaume, & namely of þe Lorde Latymer, þe Kinges Chaumberlayn, of his euel gouer- 28 nauce, boþe¹⁴ to þe King & eke to þe reame ; & at þe laste also þer¹⁵ was tretid & spoken of Dame Alys Percis, for þe grete¹⁶ wronges & euel¹⁷ gouernaunce þat was done by her & by her counceyl in þe reame ; þe whiche Dame Alys Perers, þe King had holde long 32 tyme to his lemman. Wherfor hit was þe lesse wonder thogh,

¹ MS. Noubre. ² dame om. T. ³ CC^o T. ⁴ Not TR. Bot C.
⁵ of þe R. ⁶ þe R. ⁷ þat om. R. ⁸ leaf 197. ⁹ gouerned TR.
¹⁰ neuer T. ¹¹ of R. ¹² wold om. R. ¹³ diuers of R.
¹⁴ boþe om. R. ¹⁵ þere it R. ¹⁶ grete om. T.
¹⁷ yuyl T. euel R. wel C.

burgh þe freelte of þe wommannys exciting & her streyng, consentid to her lewednes & evell counceyll. ¶ The which Dame Alys, & also þe Lord Latymer, & also oper¹ such þat sterid þe King to evel gouernaunce, azens his profite & þe reaumes. also al þe communalte⁴ of þe reame desired & asked þat þei shold be meved & done² away, & in her stedes, wyse men & worpy þat were trewe, & welle assayed & proued, and of good gouernaunce, shold be put in her stedes. ¶ So amonge all opere, þer was on among þe communes þat was a 8 wys knyzt, & a trewe, & an eloquent man, whos name was Piers de la Mare; & þis same Piers was chosen to be speker for the communes in þe parlement.³ & for þis same⁴ Piers told & publissed þe trewþe, & rehersed meny wronges azens þe forsaid Dame Alys, & 12 oper certeyne persones of þe Kingeꝝ counceyl, as he was bode by þe communes, & also trustyng mych forto be supported & maynteyned in þis mater by help & fauour of þe Pryns, anon as þe Pryns was dede, at þe instaunce and⁵ request of þe forsaid Dame 16 Alys, þis Piers de La Mare was iugged to perpetuel prisoun in þe Castell of Notynggham, in þe whiche he was ij. zere. & þe vj. kalend of Iuyl, lastyng þat same parlement, deid Prens Edwardes first sone, þat is forto sey, in⁶ Trynite Sounday; in þe worship of⁷ 20 whiche feest he was wont euery zere, wher þat euere he were in þe worlde, to make & hold þe moost solempnyte þat he myght. ¶ Whos name & fortune of knizthood, but yf it had bene of anoper⁸ Ectour, al men, both Christen & heþen, while he leuyd & 24 was in good poynt, wondred mych, & dred him wonder sore; whos body is worshipfully beryed at Crycherche of⁹ Caunterbury.

And in þis same zere þe man & þe Erles tenautes of Warwyk arisen maliciously azens þe Abbot & þe Covent of Euesham & her 28 tenautes, & destroyeden fersly þe Abbot & þe toun, & wounded & bete her men, & slown of hem meny one, & wenten to her maners & places, & dede myche harme, & brekyn doun her parkes & her closes, & brenten & slown her wild bestes, and chaced hem, 32 brekyng her fissanepond hedis, & lete þe water of her pondes, stewes & ryuers, renne out; & token þe fissh, & bere it with hem, & deden hem al þe harme þat þey myzte. ¶ In so ferforth, þat forsope þey had be destroyed perpetuely, þat abbay,¹⁰ wip all her 36 membres &¹¹ apparテナunces, but yf þe King þe sonner had

¹ oper om. R. ² put R. ³ in þe parlement om. T. ⁴ same om. R.⁵ leaf 197, back.⁶ on R.⁷ of þe R.⁸ of anoper om. T.⁹ in T.¹⁰ þat abbay om. R.¹¹ & om. T.

holpen hit & taken heed *perto*. and *perfore* þe King sent his
lettres to þe Erle of Warwyk, chargyng hym, & comaundyng, þat
 he shulde stynt, redresse & amende the evel doers & brekers of his
 4 pees. and so, by menys of lordes & opere frendes of boþe sides
 pece¹ & good acorde & loue was made bytwene hem. ¶ And for
 þis hurlyng, as hit was seyde, þe King wold not be gouerned at þat
 tyme by his lordes þat *pere* were in þe parlement; ²but he toke and
 8 made his sone, þe Duk of Lancastre, his *gouernour* of þe reaume;
 the which stood so still *gouernour* til tyme þat he deide.

The same ȝere, anon after Candelmasse, or the parlement was
 done, the King axede a subsidie of the clergie and of þe lay fee,
 12 and hit was graunted him, þat is forto seye, that he sholde haue of
 euery persone of the lay fee, bothe of men and womman þat passed
 xiiij. ȝer age, iiij d.—outake pore beggers that were knowen opynly
 for³ nede, beggers,⁴—and þat he shulde haue of euery man of
 16 holy chirche þat was beneficed or promoted, xij d., and of al opere
 þat were nout promoted iiij d., outake þe iiij. orders of the Frers
 beggers.

¶ This same ȝer, after Myghelmase, Richard, Prinȝ Edwardes
 20 sone, was made Prinȝ of Walys; to whon þe King also ȝaf⁵ þe
 Duche of Cornewayl, wyth þe Erldom of Chestre. and aboute þis
 tyme, þe Cardinallis of Engeland, þe forþe day bifore Mary
 Maugdalyne day, after mete, sodeynly was smete & take⁶ wip a
 24 palsie, & loste his speche; and on Marye Mawgdalyne day
 he died.

Of the deth of Kinge Edward; and how Sere John Mounster-
 worþ, knight, was drawe and honged for his fals tresoun.

28 *Capitulo CC^{mo}. xxxix^o.⁷*

Ryght anon after, in þe lij ȝere of his⁸ regne, of King Edward,
 in þe begynnyng of October, Pope Gregory þe xj. brouȝt
 and remeved wip hem his court from Aveyon to Rome.

32 And þe xij. day of Aprill, John Munsterworþe, knight, at
 London was drawen, hanged, and þen byheded; and after, his
 body quartered, and sent to þe .iiij.⁹ cheif tounes of Engeland, and
 his heed sette oppon¹⁰ London Brigge. ¶ For þis same Iohn was

¹ pece and T. and C. ² leaf 198. ³ for TR. fro C.

⁴ nedi pouere beggers T. nedy poer beggars R. ⁵ ȝaf also TR.

⁶ was take and suiȝte T. & take om. R. ⁷ CC^o T. ⁸ þe TR.

⁹ to foure the T. iiij þe R. ¹⁰ on T.

ful vntrewe to þe ¹King and to the reaume, and ful coveytous and vnstable; for he toke ofte tymes grete summes of money of þe King and his counceyll for men of armes wages, that he sholde haue payed ham; and take hit into his owne vse. and he, dreding ⁴at ²the laste he shold he shent and acused, for þe same cause fled pryuiy to the King of Fraunce, and was swore to hem, and bicomie his man, and behight hym to bringe a ³grete nave of Spayne in confusion, and distroyende of ⁴Engelonde. but rightful ⁸God, to whom no pryvite is vnknowe, suffrede hym ferst to be shent and spilt, or that he sholde so trecherously & falsly, his leige lord, the King of Engelonde, and his peple and his reaume—in the whiche ground the same Iohn was bore wickedly, thourgh ¹²bataill, destroye, or bryng his cursed purpose aboute.

In the feste of Seynt Gregore þo ⁵next sewynge, King Edward 3af to Richard of Burdeux, his eyr, that was Pryns Edwardes sone, att Wyndesore, the ordre of knyghthood, and made hym knyght. ¹⁶the which Kyng Edward, whan he had regned lj. ⁶3ere and more, the xj kalend of Iuyn, he deide at Shene, and is beried worshipfully at Westmynster; on whos soule God haue mercy! Amen!

¹ leaf 198, back.² þat at TR.³ him a T.⁴ of TR. al C.⁵ þe T.⁶ lij R.

APPENDIX B.

[THE CHARACTER OF EDWARD III.]

[MS. Harley 753, fol. 146 ff. (collated with MS. Harley 331 = X, Lambeth 491 = Y, and Lambeth 738 = Z).]

Of þe description¹ of Kyng Edward. Cap^o. CC. xxix^o.²

THis³ Kyng Edward was forsoþe of a passyng goodnesse, and ful gracious amonge aȝ þe worthymen of þe world; for he passyd
 4 and shone by vertue & grace⁴ yeven to hym fro God, above aȝ his predecessours þat were noble men & worthy. And he was a wele hard-herted⁵ man, for he dred neuer of none myshappes, ne harmes ne evyȝ fortune, þat myȝt falle a noble warryour, and a fortunate,⁶
 8 bothe⁷ on lond⁸ and on þe see.⁹ And in aȝ batayle & assembles, with a passyng glory and worshyp¹⁰ he haȝ euere þe victory.

And¹¹ he was meke and benygne, homely, sobre, & softe to aȝ maner men,¹² as wele to straungres as to his owne subiectes, And to
 12 oþer þat were vnder his gouernaunce.¹³ He was devoute & holy, bope to God & holy¹⁴ chirch; ffor he was worshipped &¹⁵ mayntened holy chirch and her mynystres with aȝ maner reuerences.¹⁶ He was treteable & wele avysed in temperaȝ & worldly nedes, wyse
 16 in counseȝ, and discrete, soft, meke,¹⁷ & good to speke with. In hys dedes & manere, fuȝ gentiȝ & wele ytaught, havyng pite on hem¹⁸ þat were in dissese; plentevous in yevyng almesse,¹⁹ Besy²⁰ & corious in bildyng; And fuȝ lyghtly he bare & suffred
 20 wronges and harmes. And whan he was yeve to any occupacion, he left aȝ oþer þynges in²¹ þe mene tyme, and tent²² perto; semly of body, & of mene stature; havyng alwey, to high & lowe, a good chere. And þer sprang & shone so moȝ grace of hym²³ þat, what

¹ distruction MS and Z. ² heading om. Z. ³ The Z.

⁴ vertue of grace YZ.

⁵ a wel and a hardy hertid Y. a well and an harty hartid Z.

⁶ and so fortunate X. a fortunate Y. a ffortynant Z.

⁷ for bothe Y. ⁸ on þe lond X. ⁹ on se Z. ¹⁰ glory and Joy Z.

¹¹ And om. Y. ¹² maner off men Z. ¹³ his owne Gouvernaunce Z.

¹⁴ to holy Z. ¹⁵ worshepid halpe and Z. ¹⁶ of reuerence Z.

¹⁷ and meke Z. ¹⁸ to hem XY. ¹⁹ benefytes Z. ²⁰ and Besy Z.

²¹ for Z. ²² tent om. Z. ²³ leaf 146, back.

maner man had byhold^t his face, or had dremed of hym, he hoped þat day þat aH þyng shold^t hap¹ to hym loyfuH and lykyng. And he gouerned gloriously hys kyngdom into his age. And² he was large in yevyng, and wyse in spences. He was fulfilled with³ aH 4 honeste of good maners, & vertuous; vnder whom to lyve,⁴ hit was as for to regne; wherfor his name⁵ & his loos sprang so fere þat it came into hethenesse and Barbarye, shewyng and tellyng his worthynesse & manhode in aH lond^s; And þat in⁶ no lond vnder 8 heven had be⁷ brought forth so noble a kyng,⁸ so gentiH & so blessyd, or myzt reyse such anoper whan he were dede.

Neuerþelesse,⁹ lecchery & mevyng of hys flessH haunted hym in his age; wherfor þe rather, as it was to suppose,¹⁰ for vnmesur- 12 able fulfillyng of hys lust, his lyff shorted þe sonner. And herof takeþ good hede, lyke as hys dedys byfore bereth wytnesse; for, as in hys bygynnyng aH pynges were loyfuH and lykyng to hym & to aH þe¹¹ peple, And in hys myd age he passed aH men¹² in high 16 loye and¹³ worshype and blessydnesse, Ryzt so, whan he drow in-to Age, drawyng downward purgh lecchorye and oper¹⁴ synnes, litiH & litiH aH þe loyfuH and blyssed¹⁵ pynges, good fortune & prosperite decreed and myshapped, And Infortunat pynges, & vnprofytable 20 harmes, with many evele, bygan for to sprynge, and, þe more harme is, conteyned longe tyme after.

¹ ffall Z. ² And om. Z. ³ of Z. ⁴ þe lyffe Z. ⁵ fame YZ.

⁶ in om. YZ. ⁷ be om. XYZ. ⁸ knyzt Z.

⁹ Neuere the latter Y. Neuyr þe latter Z.

¹⁰ suppose for XYZ. ¹¹ þe om. Z. ¹² pepill Z. ¹³ and om. YZ.

¹⁴ after Z. ¹⁵ blisfull X.

[C]

[FROM THE CORONATION OF RICHARD II (A.D. 1377)
TO THE CAPTURE OF ROUEN (A.D. 1419).]

[*Cambridge University Library MS. Kk. 1. 12.*]

- ¹And aftir King Edwarde the thrid, þat was bore at Wyndesore,
Regned Richard of Burdeux, that was Prynce Edward; ²
sone of Walis; which Prince Edward was þe sone of ²
4 King Edwarde þe iij^{de}.³ Capitulum ccxxxix.

And aftir the gode King, King Edwarde the iij^{de}, þat was born
at Wyndesore, Regned Richarde þe ij, þat was þe gode Prince
Edward; sone of ⁴Walis; which King Richard was born yn þe
8 cite of Burdeux yn Gasquoyne, and was crowned at Westminster yn
þe xj yere of his age. ¶ And yn ij⁵ yere of his regne fil þe ⁶
debate þat was betuene þe Lorde Latimer and Syr Raaff Ferers,
kniȝt,⁷ þat were ayens Hawle & Schakele, squiers, for the prysoner
12 þat was take yn the botayle of Spayngne ⁸by þese ij squyers, þe ⁹
which þe sayde¹⁰ Lorde Latimer and Ser Raaff Ferrers wolde haue
had; þe which prysoner was þe Erle of Deene, þat þay toke yn þe
batayle of Spayngne.⁸ ¶ Wherefore þese ij lordez comyn yn-to
16 Westminster church, ¹¹and founde þis on Squier heryng his ¹²messe
besyde Seint Edward; schryne; and there þei slow hym þat me
callyd Hawle; and Schackele was arestid and put yn-to þe Tour of
London; and þere he was long tyme, for ¹³he wolde not delyuer þe
20 Erle of Dene, his presoner, vnto þese ij lordez by Ser Aleyn Buxhill,
Constable of the tour, and be Ser Raaff Ferrers, one of his aduer-
saries, tyll þe tyme þat ¹⁴þe king grawnted hym grace.

¶ In the iij^{de} yere of King Richarde come þe ¹⁵galies of Fraunce ¹⁶
24 yn-to Engelonde, vnto dyuers portez, and brent, & Robbyd, and
slow moch pepyll of Engeland, þat is to sey,¹⁷ Wynchilse, Rie,
Hastyng, ¹⁸Portsmouth, Hampton, Stormore, & ¹⁹Grauysende,
and dede moche harm, and wente hom ayen.

¹ leaf 110, back. ² of þe T. ³ þe iij^{de} om. T. ⁴ Prynce of T.
⁵ þe seconde R. ⁶ regne for TR. ⁷ the knyght T.
⁸⁻⁹ om. T. ⁹ and þe R. ¹⁰ sayde om. R.
¹¹ into the Chirche of Westmynstre TR. ¹² his om. T. ¹³ and T
¹⁴ þe tyme þat om. TR. ¹⁵ þe om. T.
¹⁶ yer off his Regne þe galeys of fraunce come R. ¹⁷ seie at T.
¹⁸ hastyng and T. ¹⁹ and om. T.

[*The Commons' Revolt led by Jack Straw and Wat Tyler.*]

And yn þis same yere was a parlement holden at Westminster; and at þat parlement was ordeyned þat euery man, woman & childe, þat were¹ at þe age of xiiij yere & aboue, þorȝout all þe Reme, pore folke & Rich,² schulde pay to þe talage iiij d; wherfore come 4 aftirwarde grete myschiff & moche deseȝe to alle³ communialte of þe Reme. ¶ And yn þe iiij yere of þe regne of King Richarde þe comynes loked vp, &⁴ arsyn vp⁵ yn dyuers partez of þe Reme, and dede moche harm, þe which þei callid⁶ "hurling tyme." And 8 þei of Kent & of Essex madyn hem ij cheveteynez to rewle & gouerne þe compayne of Kent & of Essex: þat one⁷ me⁸ callid Jacke Strawe, and þat oper, Watte Tyler; and þai comen and assembled ham vpon þe Blake-Heth yn Kent. And apon the⁹ 12 Corpus Christi day and after, þei comen doune yn-to Southwerk, and brekyn vp þe prison hous, þat is to wite, þe Kingis Bench, and þe¹⁰ Marchalsy, & delyverde out alle þe prisoners. And so þe same day þei comen yn-to London; and þere thay robbyd þe peple, and 16 slowyn alle¹¹ alyens þat þay myȝt fynde yn þe cyte and aboute þe cite, and despoiled alle her godeȝ, and made havoke. ¶ And on the Fridai¹² next aftir, þat was on þe morowe, thei comyn vn¹³to þe Tour of London; and the king beyng þere-yn, þei sette out of þe 20 Tour þe Archebishop of Caunturbury, Maistir Symond¹⁴ Sudbery, and Ser Robert Haleȝ, Pryour¹⁵ of Saint Johnes,¹⁶ and a Whit Frere þat was confessour vn to King Richarde, and brouȝt ham vnto þe Tour Hill; and þere þay smytyn of her hedys, and comyn ayen to 24 London, & slowyn mo peple of men of lawe, and oper worthi men yn dyuers partez of þe cite. And þanne went þai¹⁷ to the Dukeȝ place of Lancastre, beyonde Saint Mary Stronde, þat was callyd Savoy.¹⁸ ¶ And þere þei deuoured & destroyed al þe godeȝ þat þay 28 myȝt fynde,¹⁹ and bare ham away, and brent vp þe place. And þanne aftir þey went to Seint Johnes without Smythffelde, and destroyed þe godes,²⁰ & brent vp þat hous, and went to Westminster, and so to Sent Martyneȝ þe Graunt, and made hem go²¹ out of 32

Nota
of Jacke Staw

¹ weren T. were R. om. Kk. ² and oper T.

³ aȝ þe T. al þe R. ⁴ loked vp & om. TR.

⁵ vp om. R. ⁶ callid þe TR. ⁷ one om. R. ⁸ þat men T.

⁹ Kent on TR. ¹⁰ þe om. T. ¹¹ alle þe TR.

¹² leaf 111. ¹³ vn om. T. ¹⁴ sir Edmunde TR.

¹⁵ hospitaler prioure and maistir T. ¹⁶ Iohnes house T.

¹⁷ þei wenten T. þey wente R. ¹⁸ þe Savay T. ¹⁹ fynde þere R.

²⁰ goodis there T. ²¹ to go TR.

þe sayntwarye, alle¹ þat were þere² ynne for eny maner of³ gryth.⁴

¶ And þanne come vnto þe Temple, and to alle oþer ynnez of men
4 of lawe, & dispoyled ham and rebbed ham of⁵ her godez, and also
taare hir bokis of law; and þai⁶ come to London, and brake vp the
pryson of Newgate, & droff out alle þe prisoners, felons, & opir of⁷
bothe countres, and alle þe peple þat was with-ynne ham, &
8 destroyed alle þe bokis of bothe countres; and þus þay contynued
forth, both Saturday and Sunday,⁸ vnto⁹ þe Monday next folowyng,
yn alle hir¹⁰ malice & wickyndnesse. And þanne,¹¹ on the Monday,
King Richard, with his lordez þat were with hym þat tyme, and¹²
12 with þe Meire of London, William Walworth, þe¹³ aldermen & þe
commynez of þe cite, come¹⁴ yn¹⁵ to Southwerk¹⁶ to here &¹⁷ know
þe entencion of þese rebellis and misgouerned pepil.¹⁸ ¶ And þis
Iak Straw þanne made an oyes in þe felde, þat alle þe pepyl of
16 accorde schulde come nere, & here his clamour and¹⁹ his crye and
his will, and þe lordez, and þe Mayre and þe aldermen, with þe
communielte, hauyng indignacion of his Covetise and Falsnesse,
and his foule presompeion; and anon William Walworth, þat tyme
20 beyng Mayre, drew out his knyff, and slow Iack Straw, and anon
ryzt þere dede smyzt of his hed, and sette it vp apon²⁰ a spere-
schafte; and so it was bore prouz London, & set on high vp on
London Brygge. ¶ And²¹ anon alle þe²² rysers and mys-gouernyd
24 men were voyded and²³ vanyshed, as hit hadde not byn þay.
¶ And²⁴ þe king, of his grete godenesse, and by prayer of his lordez,
made þere vj knyztis of gode & worthi men of þe cite of London,
þat is,²⁵ William Walworth—þat tyme was²⁶ Mayre and slow Iack
28 Straw,—& ij^{de}²⁷ was Nicholas Brembre, þe²⁸ iij was²⁹ John Phily-
pot, the²⁸ iiij was³⁰ Nicholas Twyfford, þe²⁸ fyffe was²⁹ Robert
Lawnde, þe²⁸ vj, Robert Gayton. ¶ And þanne þe king, with his
lordez and his³¹ knyktes, retourned ayen vnto the Tour of London;
32 and þere he restid hym tyll his³² peple were bettir cecyd, & seet yn

¹ alle om. R. ² with T. þere om. R. ³ of om. R. ⁴ gryth om. T.

⁵ of TR. or Kk. ⁶ þanne þai T. þanne þey R. ⁷ and of TR.

⁸ vnto þe Sunday T. ⁹ and vnto T. ¹⁰ her maner of T.

¹¹ þanne om. T. ¹² and om. T. ¹³ þat was þat tyme come with þe TR.

¹⁴ and come T. ¹⁵ yn om. T. ¹⁶ Smythfelde R. ¹⁷ and to T.

¹⁸ peple þat so reuyd and robbid T.

¹⁹ and here his clamouris and T. and here his clamour and R. om. Kk.

²⁰ vpon T. it vpon R. ²¹ And om. T. ²² þese T. þize R.

²³ and clene T. & clene R. ²⁴ And thanne T. and þanne R.

²⁵ is to saie T. is to say R. ²⁶ þat was þat tyme T. ²⁷ þe ije T.

²⁸ and þe T. ²⁹ was om. TR. ³⁰ was om. T. ³¹ his om. R. ³² this T.

rest and pee3. ¶ And þanne, by processe of tyme, as þay myȝt gete and take þe¹ Rebellis & rysers, they hanged ham vp on² the next galous yn euery lordesschippe throuȝ þe³ Reme of Engeland,⁴ be xl & be xxx, be⁵ x. & be xij., euer as þay myghte be goton & take⁶ 4 yn eny parteys.

¶ And yn þe v. yere of King Richardeȝ Regne was þe grete Erthe quake; and þat⁷ was do⁸ generally ovir⁹ alle þe worlde,—the Wedynesday aftir Whitsonday, yn the yere after¹⁰ incarnacion 8 of our Lorde Ihesu crist, m¹ ccc. iij. xj,¹¹ where-of alle þe peple were sore agast, and drad¹² long tyme aftir, for þe grete¹³ vengauce and grete drede þat our Lorde God schewed and dede.

¶ In¹⁴ þe vj zere of his regne,¹⁵ Ser Henri Spenser, Bischop of 12 Northwych, went with a croyseray ouer þe see yn-to þe contre of Flawndrez; & þere he¹⁶ gate þe towne of Grauenyng, &¹⁷ þe toun of Oldenburgh,¹⁸ Dunkirk, and Newport; and þere þai ladde & fryȝt .iij. schyppes with pelege¹⁹ for to haue come yn to Engelande 16 with alle þese schippes and goodis,²⁰ and þe Bischop of Northwich and his counsel lette brenne þese schippes, with al þe pelege, yn þe same havynne, all yn-to hard asches.

¶ And at Dunkirk was don a grete batayle betuene þe Flemyngeȝ 20 and þe Englisch men; and²¹ at þat batayle was slayn a gret multitude of þese Flemyngeȝ, and a passyng noumbre. ¶ And þanne went þe bischop with his retynu vn-to Ipreȝ, and besegid it a long tyme; but it myȝt not be gote, and so he lefte þat sege, and come 24 ayen yn-to Engeland, for our Englischmen were foule destroyed, and mony deied on þe Flyx.

[*Anne of Bohemia comes to wed Richard II.*]

¶ And yn þis same zere come Quene Anne yn-to Engeland, for to be spoused vnto King Richard; and hir fadir was Emperour 28 of Almayne, and King of Beeme. And with hir came þe Duk of Tassy and hir vncle, and mony oþer worthi lordez & kniȝtes²² of hir cuntre of Beeme, and of oþer Duch tungeȝ, to do hir reuerence

¹ leaf 111, back. ² vpon T. ³ out þe TR. ⁴ of Engeland om. T.

⁵ and bi T. ⁶ be take and gete T. ⁷ hit T. ⁸ do om. T.

⁹ ouer T. ¹⁰ after the T. after þe R. ¹¹ and xj T. ¹² a dred T.

¹³ girte om. TR. ¹⁴ And in TR.

¹⁵ of þe reigne of kyng Richard T. of þe regne of king Richarde R.

¹⁶ and þei T. þey R. ¹⁷ & om. ¹⁸ Broburgh T.

¹⁹ pilage T. peseage Kk.

²⁰ with these shippis and goodis T. with þese shippes & godis R. om. Kk.

²¹ and om. T. ²² knyghtis and lordis T.

and worschip. ¶ And Ser Symond Beuyrley, a worthi Knyzt of þe Gartyr,¹ & oþer knyztis and squyers þat were þe Kingis embassetoures, brouzt hir yn-to Engelond, and so ferthe to London.

⁴ ¶ And þe pe[p]le of þe cite, þat is to saye, þe Mayre & þe Aldermen and alle þe² comynez, rydyn ayens hir to welcome hir; and euery man yn gode aray, and euery craft with his Mynstralceye, yn þe best maner, mette with hir on þe Blak-Heth yn Kent, & so
⁸ brouzt hir to³ London þrouz þe cite, and so forth yn to⁴ Westmystre, vn-to þe kingez palice; and þere sche was spoused vnto King Richard, well and worthily, yn þe Abbey of Westmynstre; and þere sche was crowned Quene of Engelond; and alle hir frendis
¹² þat comyn with hir hadde gret yeftis, and hadde grete chere, and were wel refresched⁵ as long tyme as þai abyden here.

¶ And yn þis same yere was a batayle do with-ynne þe kingez Palys at Westmynstre, for certeyne poyntis of treson, betuene Ser
¹⁶ Iohn of Ansley, knyzt, defendaunt, and Karton, Squyere, þe appellaunt; but þis Ser Iohn of Ansley ouyr-come þis Carton, & made hym⁶ to yolde hym withynne þe listis, and anon þis Craton (*sic*) was⁷ dispoyled of his harnes and drawe out of þe lystis,
²⁰ and so forth to⁸ Tyborne; and þere he was hangyd for his falsnesse.

¶ And yn⁹ the viij yere of his Regne¹⁰ Ser Edmunde of Langele, Erle of Cawmebrygge, þe kingez vncle, wente vnto¹¹ Portingale with a Fayre manye of men of armes and archers, yn helpyng & streyng-
²⁴ thyng¹² of þe King of Portyngale ayens þe King of Spayngne and his power. and þere þe King of Portyngale hadde þe victory of his Enymyez, þrouz help and comfort of our Englysch men. And whanne þat iornay was y¹³do, The Erle of Cawmbrige com hom
²⁸ ayen with his peple yn-to Engelond yn haste; blessid be Gode and his gracious yeft! Amen!

¶ And þis same yere, Kinge Richarde hylde his Cristismesse yn þe Maner of Estham (*sic*). And þe same tyme, þe King of Ermonyne
³² fledde out of his owne londe, and come yn-to Engelond, for to haue socour and help of our King ayens his enymyez, þat hadde dreve hym of¹⁴ his Reme; and so he was brouzt vn-to¹⁵ þe King to Eltham, þere as þe King hylde his realle feest of Cristismasse; and

¹ MS. gartyd. ² þe *om.* T. ³ into T. ⁴ vnto T.

⁵ and weren wele cherid and refresshid T. & well were chered & refresshed R.

⁶ leaf 112. ⁷ was *om.* T. ⁸ to þe T. ⁹ yn *om.* T.

¹⁰ þe reigne of kyng Richard T. ¹¹ into T.

¹² in strengthyng and helpyng T. in strengthinge & helpinge R.

¹³ y *om.* TR. ¹⁴ out of T. ¹⁵ to R.

þere oure King welcomed hym, and dede hym reuerence & worschip, and commawnded alle his¹ lordez to make hym alle þe chere þat þay cowthe. and panne he besouzt the King² of grace and help, and of his comfort yn his nede, and þat he myzt be brozt⁴ ayen yn³ to his owne kingedom and londe, for þe Turkez hadde deuoured & destroyed moch parte of his londe; and for drede he fledde, & come hider for socoure and helpe. ¶ And than⁴ þe King, hauyng compassion of his gret myschiffe and greuous deseze,⁸ anon⁵ he toke his Counsel, and axed what was best to do. and þai answered and sayde, ‘yef it likyd hym to yeue hym eny gode, it were welle ydo: and as towelhyng his peple, to Trauayle so fer yn-to out-londez, it were a grete ieparde’; and so þe King yaf hym golde¹² and seluyr, and many richez⁶ and iewellis, and betauzt hym to God; and so he passed ayen out of Engeland.

¶ And yn þis same yere King Richarde, with a ryall power, went yn-to Scotland for to war ayen⁷ þe Scottis, for hir Falsnesse and¹⁶ destroccon þat þay⁸ hadde do ayens⁹ þe¹⁰ English men yn þe Marchis. And þe¹¹ Scottis come down¹² for to trete¹³ with hym¹⁴ & with his lordez for trewes, as for certeyn yeres; and so oure Kyng and his Counsel graunted hem trewes certyn yeres¹⁵ vnto²⁰ her axyng, and our King turned hym hom ayen yn-to Engelande. ¶ And whanne he was come vnto¹⁶ Yorke, þere he aboode and restyd hym. and¹⁷ þere Ser John Helond, þe Erle of Kentis broþer, slow þe Erlis sone of Staffarde and his heyre with a daggar²⁴ yn þe cite of Yorke, wherfor the King was sore amoued and grevid, & remeyvd fro þennez and come to London; and þe Meire and þe Aldermen and þe commyns, with alle þe solempnite þat þay¹⁸ myghte do,²⁰ rydyn ayens þe King, and brouzt hym ryally throuz²⁸ the cite, & so forth vnto Westmynstre vnto his owne Palis.

¶ And yn þe ix yere of his regne²¹ he hadde²² a parlement at Westminster, & þere he made ij dukes, and a Markques & v. erlez:

¹ þe T. ² the king om. T. ³ yn om. TR. ⁴ than om. T.
⁵ and om. TR. and anon Kk. ⁶ riche yiltis T. rich ziftis R.
⁷ vpon R. ⁸ þe Scottis T. ⁹ to T. ¹⁰ do vnto R.
¹¹ panne þe T. ¹² downe vnto þe kyng T.
¹³ entrete T. ¹⁴ with him TR. hym Kk.
¹⁵ yeeris, and so oure kyng and his counceile grauntid hem trewes certeyn
yeris T. yeris and so þe king & his counsel graunted ham trewis certayn
yeris R. om. Kk.
¹⁶ to T. ¹⁷ and om. TR. ¹⁸ þay om. ¹⁹ leaf 112, back.
²⁰ þat myghte be do R.
²¹ of kyng Richardis reigne T. yeer of king Richardis Regne he held R.
²² helde T.

- þe first þat was mad Duk, was þe Kingez vnclē, *Ser* Edmund¹ of Langeley and² Erle of Caumbrigge; and hym he³ made⁴ Duk of Yorke; and his oper.vnclē, *Ser* Thomas of Wodestoke, þat was Erle 4 of Bokingham, he made Duke of Gloucestre, and *Ser* Lover, þat was Erle of Oxynforde, he⁵ made Marques of Denelyn; and Henry of Bolyngbroke, þe Dukez son of Lancastre, he⁶ made Erle of Derby; and *Ser* Edwardē, þe Dukes sone of York, he⁶ made Erle of Ruth- 8 lond; *Ser* John Holande, þat was þe Erle of Kentis brother, he⁶ made Erle of Huntyngton; *Ser* Thomas Mombraye, Erle of Notyng- ham, & Erle Marchall of Engeland; and *Ser*⁷ Michell of Pole, knyzt, he⁶ made Erle of Suffolke and Chaunceler of Engeland.
- 12 ¶ And the Erle of the⁸ March, at þat same⁹ parlement holdon at Westemynstre, yn¹⁰ playne parlement among al þe Lordez and Comyns, was proclaymed Erle of the March, and heyre¹¹ parant vnto¹² þe crowne of Engelande aftir King Richarde. ¶ The which 16 Erle of the¹³ Marche went ouyr¹⁴ see yn-to Ireland vnto his lorde- schippe; and londez, for the Erle of¹⁵ Marche is Erle of Vlcestre yn Irelande, and¹⁶ by ryzt lyne and heritage. and at¹⁷ a¹⁸ Castill of his he lay þat tyme; and þere come apon¹⁹ hym a grete multitude yn 20 buschmentis of wilde Iryschmen, hym for to take and distroye, and he come out ffersly of his Castell with his peple, and manly ffauzt *with* ham; and þere he was take, and hew al to pecis, and þere he²⁰ deied; on whose soule God haue mercy! Amen!
- 24 ¶ And yn the .x. yere of King Richardez regne, þe Erle of Arundell went to²¹ þe see with a grete Naueye of schippe; enarmed with men of arme; and gode archers. And as²² þai come yn to þe brode see, þei mette with þe hole flytte þat come lade with wyne²³ 28 from Rochell; and²⁴ the wynez were Enymyez godes; and þeron oure²⁵ Naueye sette apoin²⁶ ham, and toke ham alle, and brouzt hym yn to²⁷ diuers portiz and hauons of²⁸ Engeland, & sum to London: and þere þe myzte haue hedde a ton of Rochel wyne of þe beste for 32 xx s. of sterlynges; and so we hadde gret chep of wyne þrouz-out þe Reme at þat tyme, þankyd be God Almyzty!

¹ Symonde T. ² and om. TR. ³ he om. R.
⁴ and he was made T. ⁵ him T. ⁶ him he T. ⁷ sir TR. for Kk.
⁸ the om. TR. ⁹ same tyme of þe T. ¹⁰ in þe T. ¹¹ heir of R.
¹² to TR. ¹³ the om. TR. ¹⁴ ouer þe TR. ¹⁵ of the T.
¹⁶ and om. R. ¹⁷ there at T. ¹⁸ þe R. ¹⁹ vpon TR.
²⁰ he om. T. ²¹ vnto TR. ²² And as T. and Kk.
²³ comen wyne lade T. with wyne om. R. ²⁴ and om. T.
²⁵ and þere oure T. ²⁶ þere our R. and þeron Kk. ²⁷ vpon TR.
²⁸ vnto R. ²⁹ into T.

How þe .v. lordez aysen at Ratcot brydge, ye schul here.¹

*Capitulum ccxl.*²

And yn þe a.xj yere of King Richarde³ regne, þe .v. lordez reson at Ratcote brygge, yn⁴ destroccyon of the⁵ Rebellis þat weryn 4 þat tyme yn alle this⁶ Reme. ¶ The first of the .v. lordez was Ser Thomas of Wodestoke, þe Kingis vncler, and Duk of Gloucestre; þe⁷ ij was Ser Richarde, Erle of Arundell; þe⁸ iij was Ser Richard, Erle of Warwic; þe iiij was Ser Harri⁹ Bolyngbroke, Erle of Derby, 8 and þe .v. was Ser Thomas Mouubray, Erle of Notygham. ¶ And þeze .v. lordez sawe þe myschif, and mysgouernaunce, and þe Falsnesse of the Kinges counsell; wherfor þai þat were of þe Kinges kounsel cheff,¹⁰ fleddyn out of þis londe ouer þe see, þat is to say, 12 Ser Alisaunder Neuyle, Archebisshop¹¹ of York, Ser Robert le Veere, ¹²Marquis of Develyn and Erle of Oxynforde; Ser¹³ Michel de la Pole, Erle of Suffolke and Chaunceler of Engeland. and þese iij. lordez went ouyr see,¹⁴ and cam nevir ayen, for there þay deied. 16 And þan¹⁵ þeze .v. lordez forsaide¹⁶ maden¹⁷ a parlement at Westmystre, and þere thay tokyn Ser Robert Tresilian, þe Iustize, and Ser Nicholl Brembre, knyzt an¹⁸ citezein of London, and Ser Iohn Salesbury, knyzt of the Kingis housholde, & Vske, sergeaunt of 20 armez; and mony moo of oþer peple were take and Iuged vnto¹⁹ deth by þe counsel of þese .v. lordez yn hir parlement at Westminster, for treson þat þai put apon ham, to be draw fro þe²⁰ Tour of London þrouz þe cite, and so forth to Tyburne; and þere to be 24 hangyd, and þere her þrotis to be kut; and þus þei were serued, and deiden.

And aftir þat, yn þis same parlement, was²¹ Ser Symond of²² Beverlay, þat was a Knyzt of þe Garter, and Ser John Beauchamp, 28 knyzt, þat was Steward of the Kingis housholde, and Ser Iamez Berners, were for-Iuged vn-to²³ deth; and²⁴ þay wer ladd on fote vn-to²⁵ þe Toure Hille; and þere were her hedis smytyn of, and mony other mo, be þeze .v. lordez.

32

¹ ye schul here *om.* TR. ² CC^o T. CCxlj R.

³ in the reigne of kyng Richard þe xj^e yeer T. þe Regne of king Richarde
þe xj yeer R. ⁴ in þe T. ⁵ the *om.* TR. ⁶ þe TR.

⁷ and þe T. ⁸ And þe T. ⁹ henri of R.

¹⁰ weren that tyme cheef of þe kyngis counceile T. were þat tyme chief of
þe kinges counsell R. ¹¹ the Erchebisshop T. ¹² leaf 113.

¹³ and sir T. ¹⁴ þe see TR. ¹⁵ þan *om.* T. ¹⁶ forsaide v. lordis T.

¹⁷ aboue seide maden T. ¹⁸ and T. & R. ¹⁹ vnto þe T.

²⁰ þe T. þo KK. ²¹ at Westmynstre was T. ²² of *om.* T.

²³ vnto the T. ²⁴ and þanne T. & þanne R. ²⁵ to TR.

[*Jousts in Smithfield, A.D. 1388.*]

¶ In þis¹ forsaide parlement, and in þe xij zere of King
 Richarde³ regne, he let crye and ordeyne² generale Iustize, þat is
 called a turnement, of lordez, knyztis and skquiers. ¶ And þese
 4 Iustes & turnement were holden at London in Smithfelde, for alle
 maner of strayngers, of what londe &³ cunetre þei⁴ were, and⁵
 þidir þei were riȝt welcome; and to hem and to alle oþer was
 holden opon housholde and grete ffestis; and also grete yftis were
 8 yeue to alle maner of straungers. And þay⁶ of the kinges syde
 were⁷ alle of on⁸ sute: her cotis, her armyour, schelde³, & her⁹
 hors &¹⁰ trapure, alle¹¹ was white hertis, with crowne³ about her
 nekkis, and cheynez of golde hangyng þere vp-on, and þe croune
 12 hangyng lowe before þe hertis body; þe which hert was þe kinge³
 lyveray þat he yaf to lordez & ladie³, knyztis and skquiers, for to
 know his housholde from oþer peple. ¶ And at þis first comyng to
 her Iustes, xxiiij ladie³ ladde þese xxiiij lordez of þe Garther with
 16 cheynys of goolde, and alle yn þe same sute of hertis as is afore
 sayde, from þe Tour on hors bak prou³ the cite of London yn-to
 Smythfelde, þere þe Iustes schulde be do.¹² And þis fest and Iustes
 was holde general, and¹³ to alle þo þat wolde come, of what land or
 20 nacion þat eyr he¹⁴ were; and þis¹⁵ was holde duryng xxiiij
 daye³, of þe kinge³ owne cost; and þese xxiiij lordez to answe³
 to¹⁶ alle maner of¹⁷ pepil þat wolde come þidir. And þedir come þe
 Erle of seint Poule of Fraunce, and mony oþer worthi knyȝtes with
 24 hym of diuers parteyes, fful welle arayed.¹⁸ And out of Holand &
 Henaude come þe Lorde Ostrenaunde, þat was þe Duke³ sone of
 Holande, & mony oþer worthi knyȝtes with hym, bothe¹⁹ of Holand
 & Henaude²⁰ fulle welle arayed. And whenne þese feste and
 28 Iustes was do and²¹ endid, þe King þanked þese st[r]ayngers and
 yaf ham mony grete yeftis; and þanne þei token hir leue of þe
 King & of oþer lordez and ladye³, and went hom ayen yn-to her
 owne cuntre, with grete loue & moche þanke.

32 ¶ And yn þe xiiij yere²² of King Richarde³ regne, þer was a

¹ this same T. þis same R. ² ordeyne a T. ³ or TR.

⁴ what so euer þei T. ⁵ of & T. off and R. ⁶ þay om. TR.

⁷ þey were R. ⁸ on om. T. o R. ⁹ & her om. TR. ¹⁰ & om. TR.

¹¹ and alle T. & aȝ R. ¹² holde T. ¹³ and om. T.

¹⁴ thei T. þei R. ¹⁵ þis om. T. ¹⁶ to om. TR. ¹⁷ of om. TR.

¹⁸ MS. Kk. wrongly inserts here ¶ And þeȝ Fest & Iustes was endid, þe
 king thankyd þese. And þes ffest & . . . þese om. TR.

¹⁹ bothe om. T. ²⁰ henaude om. T. ²¹ do and om. TR.

²² leaf 113, back.

batayle y¹do yn the Kingis palis at Westmynstre, betwene a skquyer of Nauerne þat was *with* þe king, and anoþer skquier þat me callid John Walsch, of² poyntis of treson þat þis Nauerner put vp-on þis Walsch; but þis Nauerner was ouercome, and yelde hym craunt to 4 his aduersarye, and anon he was dispoyled of his armyour, and draw out of þe palis vnto Tyburne, and þere he was hangyd for his ffalsnesse.

¶ And þe xiiij yere of þe regne of King Richard, Ser John of 8 Gaunt, Duk of Lancastre, went ouyr se³ yn-to Spayne,—for to chalenge his ryzt, þat he hadde be his wifeȝ tytill, vnto þe croune of Spayngne,—with a gret ost of pepil, of men of armeȝ and archers. And he⁴ had⁵ with hym þe Duchesse, his wyff, and his 12 iij douȝtreȝ, yn-to⁶ Sp[a]yne, and þere⁷ þay weryn a grete while. ¶ And at þe⁸ last, þe King of Spayne began to trete with þe Duke of Lancastre, and þay were accorded to-gadir þrouȝ hir boþe counsel, yn þis maner: þat þe King of Spayne schulde wedde þe Dukeȝ 16 douȝter of⁹ Lancastre, þat was þe¹⁰ ryzt heire to Spayne, and¹¹ schulde yeue to¹² þe Duk of Lancastre golde and seluyr, þat was cast yn-to grete weggeȝ, and mony oþir iewellis, as mony as viij Charietis myȝt carye. ¶ And euery yere aftir, duryng þe lyff of þe 20 Duke of Lancastre and of the¹³ Duchesse his wyff, .x. M^t Marke of golde, þe which golde auenture and¹⁴ chargeȝ, þay of Spayne schulde auenture and bryng yerley to¹⁵ Baione to þe Dukes assygneȝ, be surete made. ¶ Also þe Duk of Lancastre maried anoþer of his 24 douȝtres vnto þe King of Portingale þe same tyme. And whanne he hadde do þis,¹⁶ he come hom ayen yn-to Engeland, and þe gode lady his wyff also; but mony a worthi man yn þat viage deid vpon þe Flix.¹⁷

28

¶ And yn þe xv yere of King Richardeȝ regne, he hilde his Cristismasse yn þe Maner of Wodestoke; and there þe Erle of Penbroke, a yong lorde, &¹⁸ tendir of age, wolde lerne to Iuste with a kniȝt me¹⁹ callid Ser Iohn Saint-Iohn, & redyn to gadir yn 32 þe park of Wodestoke; and þere þis worthi Erle of Pembroke was slayn *with* þat oþer knightes spere, as he cast hit fro hym whanne

¹ y om. TR. ² for T. ³ þe see T. ⁴ he om. T. ⁵ ladde R.

⁶ ouer þe see with him into T.

⁷ and there T. and þere R. and Kk.

⁸ þe om. T.

⁹ of TR. om. Kk. ¹⁰ þe om. R. ¹¹ and þe kyng of Spayne T.

¹² vnto TR. ¹³ his T. ¹⁴ and om. T. ¹⁵ vnto R.

¹⁶ þus T. ¹⁷ viage vpon þe flixe died T. ¹⁸ and a T.

¹⁹ þat men T. þat me R.

he¹ had cowped; and þus þis gode Erle made þere his ende; for whose dethe² þe King and the Quene made moche sorow.³

¶ And yn þe xvj yere of Kyng Richard his regne,⁴ Iohn Hende
4 beyng þat tyme Maire of London, and Iohn Walworth & Henry
Vannere beyng scherreffes of London, þat⁵ tyme a bakers man bare
a basket of horsbred yn to Flet-strete, toward an ostrye hous; and
þere come a yemou of þe Bischoppis of Salysbury, þat was callyd
8 Romayn, and he tok an horsloff out of þe basket of þe baker⁶; and
he askyd hym 'whi he dede so.' And þis Romayn turned ayen, and
brak þe bakers hedde; and neybourez come out, and wolde haue
restid þis Romaine; and he brak from ham and fledde yn-to þe
12 lordez place. and þe counstabilis wolde haue hadde hym out; but þe
Bischoppez men schitte þe zatis fast,⁷ and kept þe place þat no man
myzte entre. And þanne moch more pepil gadryd þedir, & saide
þat 'þai wolde haue hym out, or⁸ ellis þei wolde brenne vp þe place,
16 and alle⁹ that were with-ynne.' ¶ And þanne come þe Maire and¹⁰
Schereffe3, with opir myche pepill, and cecid þe malice of þe
comyne3, and made euery man go¹¹ hom to his¹² hous, and kepe þe
pee3. ¶ Thanne¹³ þe3 Romaynes lorde, þe Bishop of Salusbery, Ser
20 Iohn Waltam (þat was þat tyme treserer of Engeland) went to Ser
Thomas Arundel,¹⁴ Archebischop of York, and also Chaun[ce]ller of
Engelonde, and to hym made his complaynt¹⁵ vpon þe peple of þe
cite of London. ¶ And þanne þe3e ij Bischope3, of grete malice
24 and vengeaunce, comyn vnto¹⁶ the King to Wyndesore, and made a
grete complaynte vpon the Maire and the Schereffes; and anon
aftirward alle þe cite¹⁷ was before þe King and his consel, and þai
cast vn-to¹⁸ ham a greuous herte, and wondir grete malice. ¶ And
28 anon sodenly þe King sent for þe Maire of London & for þe ij
scherreffes; and þai cam to¹⁹ hym to þe Castell of Wyndesore.
And þe King rebukyd þe Maire and þe scherreffes fulle foule, for þe
offens þat þai hadde do ayens hym & his officers, yn his chaumbir
32 of²⁰ London. ¶ Wherefore he deposid & put out the Mayre of

¹ þei TR. ² eende and perfore T. ³ sorow for his deeth T.

⁴ of kyng Richardis reigne T. yer of king Richardis regne R. his regne Kk.

⁵ þe same TR. ⁶ þe bakers basket T.

⁷ fast om. T. shette faste þe yatis R. ⁸ and R. ⁹ leaf 114.

¹⁰ and þe TR. ¹¹ to gone T. ¹² her T. ¹³ And thanne T.

¹⁴ of Arundell T.

¹⁵ and þere þe bisshop made his compleynt vnto þe chaunceler T. au þere made his complaynt to him R.

¹⁶ to T. ¹⁷ anon aft þe Citee aftirward T. ¹⁸ to T.

¹⁹ vnto T. ²⁰ at TR.

London¹ and þe ij² Scherrevez; and þis was don xiiij³ dayez afore þe Fest. of saint Iohn the Baptist. ¶ And þanne þe King callyd to hym a knyzt þat me called *Ser Edward Valyngrygge*,⁴ and made hym warden and gouernoure of þe cite, & Chaumbyr of 4 London, and ouyr alle his pepil þereynne; and so he kept þat office but iiij wokis, because he was so tendir and gentill vn-to þe cetezens of London; wherfore þe King deposyd hym, and made *Ser Bawdewyn Radyngton*, knyzt, þat was Countroller of þe Kingis Hous- 8 holde, wardeyne and gouernoure of his chaumbyr, and of his⁵ peple þerynne; and chese vnto hym to worthi men of þe cite to be Schereviz with hym, for to gouerne & kepe þe kingez lawez yn the cite; & on me called *Gylbert Maghfelde*, and þat oper, *Thomas* 12 *Newenton*, And þeze iij gode men hadde þe gouernaunce of þe cite vn-to þe tyme of þe Maires eleccion þanne next,⁶ þat was called *William Stawnden*⁷; And þis *Gilbert Maghfelde* & *Thomas Newneton*, schereff. ¶ And þanne þe Mayre & þe ij schirrevez,¹⁶ and alle þe aldermen, with alle þe worthi craftis of London, went on fote vn to þe Tour; and þere came out þe Counstable of þe Tour, and yaff þe Maire and þe Scherevez her othe, and charge,⁸ as þay scholde haue take yn the Chequer at⁹ Westmynstre yn 20 þe Kingez Court of his Iustizes & Barons of the sayde¹⁰ Cheker; and þanne went thay whom ayenne.

¶ And þanne þe King and his Counsel, for grete malice of þe Cite of London, and¹¹ despite, remeid alle his Courtez fro¹² West- 24 mynstre vn-to þe cete of Yorke, þat is to say, þe Chauncerie, þe Cheker, þe¹³ Kingez Bench, and also þe Comyn Place, and þere þay hilde alle her¹⁴ Courtis of Law fro mydsomer vn-to¹⁵ þe fest of Cristismesse next comyng. ¶ And þanne þe King & his counsel 28 sawe it not so profitable þere, as it was at London; þanne anon he removid hit ayen to¹⁷ London, and so to Westmynstre, for gret ese of his officers and avauntage of¹⁸ þe King and of¹⁹ alle þe comyns of þe Reme. 32

¶ And whenne þe²⁰ peple of London sawe & knew þat þese

¹ of London *om.* TR. ² and boþe TR. and for the ij Kk. ³ a xiiij T.

⁴ Walyngregge T. Walingrugge R. ⁵ þe TR. ⁶ next þanne T.

⁷ Wiliam Staundon) was chosen mayre T. nexte William Staundon) chosen meire R.

⁸ hir charge and oth R. ⁹ of T. ¹⁰ sayde *om.* TR. ¹¹ and for R.

¹² from T. fro R. for Kk. ¹³ and þe T. ¹⁴ þese T. his R.

¹⁵ midsomer that is to saie þe feste of seynt Iohn þe Baptist vnto T.

¹⁶ leaf 114, back. ¹⁷ vnto TR. ¹⁸ for R. ¹⁹ of *om.* TR.

²⁰ þe *om.* TR.

courtis were come ayen, and þe King and his peple also,¹ þanne þe Maire and þe Aldermen, with þe Cheff² comyns, let gadir a grete summe of goolde of alle þe comyns of the cite, & ordeyned & made grete rialte ayens his comyng to London, for³ to haue his grace and gode⁴ lordeschip, and also her liberteis and Fraunchezes graunted vnto ham ayen as þai afore tyme hadde. And þann, by grete instaunce and praier of Quene Anne, and of oþer⁵ lordez and ladez, þe King graunted hem grace: and þis was do at Schene yn Sothereye. ¶ And þan⁶ þe King with-ynne ij⁷ dayez aftir, com to London; and þe Maire of London,⁸ schereue, aldremen,⁹ and alle þe worthi cite aftirward, redyn ayens þe King yn gode araye vnto þe heth on þis syde þe maner of Schene, submyttyng humyly hem self,¹⁰ and mekely, with¹¹ almaner of¹² obeysaunce vn-to hym, as þay owed to¹³ do. And þus þai brouzt þe King and þe Quene to London. ¶ And whanne þe King come to þe gate of þe Brygge of London, þere þay presentid hym with a mylke-white stede, sadelled and brydilled, & trapped with white cloth of golde and red parted togadir, and þe Quene a palfraye alle white, trappid yn þe same aray¹⁴ with white and rede, and þe¹⁵ conditez of London Ronnen white¹⁶ wyne and rede, for al maner pepill to drynke of. ¶ And betuene Seint Poulez and the Cros yn Chepe, þere was made a stage, a ryalle, stondyng vpon hygh; a[n]d perynne were mony angelis, with dyuers melodiez and songe; and an¹⁷ aungell come doun¹⁸ fro þe stage on high, by a vice, and sette a croune of golde & precious stonez & perles apon þe Kingez hed, and anoþer on¹⁹ the Quenez hed; and so the citezenys brought þe King and þe Quene vnto Westmynstre, yn-to his palice at²⁰ Westmynstre, & presentyd hym with ij basyns of syluyr, & ovirgilte, fulle of coyned golde, the summa of xx m^t li,²¹ prayng hym, of his²² mercy and lordschip and specialle grace,²³ þat þay myzt haue his gode loue, and²⁴ liberteez & Fraunchezes like as þay hadde before tyme, and by his lettrez

¹ also om. T. ² cheff om. T. ³ and for T. ⁴ his good TR.

⁵ of her T. hir R. ⁶ þan om. T. ⁷ a ij T. ⁸ london with þe T.

⁹ aldremen om. T. ¹⁰ hem humbely T. submyttinge ham humbely R.

¹¹ with om. T. ¹² of om. TR. ¹³ for to T.

¹⁴ white and in þe same aray trappid T. and in the same aray trapped R.

¹⁵ also þe T. ¹⁶ with white T. alle þe R. ¹⁷ oon T.

¹⁸ a dowe T. ¹⁹ Crowne vpon T. croune vpon R.

²⁰ paleys And þanne on þe morne aftir þe mayre and þe sherefis and þe Aldermen of london come vnto þe kyng into his paleys at T. Palis. And þanne on þe morow aftir þe meir and þe sherevis and þe aldremen of london com vnto þe king in his Paleis at R.

²¹ xxM^l pound T.

²² his hie TR.

²³ of his grace T.

²⁴ and leue and R.

patentez confermed.¹ ¶ And þe Quene, and oþer worthi lordez & ladiez, fillyn on hir² kneys, and besouzt þe King of grace to conferme þis. Thanne þe King toke vp þe Quene, and grauntyd hir alle hir askyng, and þanne þei þanked þe King and þe Quene and 4 went home ayene.

¶ And yn þe xvij³ yere of his regne,⁴ certeyne lordez of Scotlande com yn-to Englonde to gete worschip, as by feet of armez: þese⁵ were þe persons: þe Erle of Marre, and⁶ chalanged the Erle 8 Marchall of Englonde to Iuste with hym certeyn poynte3 on horsbak with scharpe speris. And so þai redyn togadir, as ij worthi knyztis & lodes, certayne cours, but not þe fulle chalange þat þe Scottysche Erle made; for he was cast both hors and man, and ij 12 of his rybbis brokyn with þe⁷ ffalle; and so he was born out of Smythfelde, hom yn-to his Inne; and with-ynne a litil while aftirward⁸ he was caried homwarde yn a liter; & atte York he⁹ deied. ¶ And Ser William Darell, knyzt, and¹⁰ banerrer of Scotland, 16 made anoþer chalange with Sire¹¹ 12 Piers Courteneye, knyzt; and þe Kinges banerrer of Englonde, of¹³ certeyne course3 hit on horsbak yn þe same ffelde. ¶ And whanne he hed y¹⁴rede certeyne cours hit, and saw he myzt not haue¹⁵ þe bettyr, yaf¹⁶ it ouyr, and wolde 20 no more of his chalang, and¹⁷ turned his hors and rode hom vnto his owne in.¹⁸ And one Kocborne, squier, of Scotland, chalanged Sir¹⁹ Nicholl Hawberke, knyzt, of certeyne cours, hit with scharp speris on horsbak; and redyn .v. cours hit togadir; and att euery cours 24 þe Scotte was cast down,²⁰ both hors and man; and þus our Englisch lordez,²¹—þankyð be God!—had þe felde.

¶ And yn þe xvij²² yere of King Richarde3 regne, deied þe gode gracious Quene Anne, þat was wiff to King Richarde, yn þe 28 maner of Schene, yn þe schire of Surreie, vp-on Whitsonday. þanne²³ was sche brozt to London, and so to Westmynstre; and þere was sche y²⁴beried and worthily entered, besyde saint Edwardes schryne; on whose soule Almy3ti God haue mercy and pite! 32 amen!²⁵

¹ and patentis And her chartir confermyd T. ² hir om. TR.

³ xvj T.

⁴ of kyng Richardis reigne T. yeer of king Richardis Regne R.

⁵ And þese T. ⁶ and he T. & he R. ⁷ þat T.

⁸ litil tyme after T. alitil tyme aftir R. ⁹ þere he TR. ¹⁰ þe T.

¹¹ sir T. sir R. sixe Kk. ¹² leaf 115. ¹³ of TR. ¹⁴ y om. TR.

¹⁵ not haue TR. haue Kk. ¹⁶ he yaf TR. ¹⁷ but T. ¹⁸ his Inne T.

¹⁹ sir T. sir R. for Kk. ²⁰ adoun TR. ²¹ men R. ²² xvij T.

²³ And þanne TR. ²⁴ y om. TR. ²⁵ amen om. T.

How King Richarde spoused dame Isabell, þe Kingis douȝtir of Fraunce, yn the towne of Caleys, and brouȝt hir yn-to Engelond, and let croune hir Quene yn þe Abbey of Saint Petris of Westmynstre. *Capitulum ccxlj.*¹

In þe xx^{ti} yere of King Richardeȝ regne, he went ouyr se² to Caleys, with dukis, Erlis, lordis, and Barons, and mony oper worthi squyers, yn grete aray, and comyn pepil of þe Reme yn gode aray, 8 as longith to such a worpi king and prynce, of his nobley³ to do hym reverence and obseruaunce, as owed⁴ to be do to⁵ hir liege lorde, and so myȝty a King and Emperour yn his owne, to abyde and reseeyve there þat worthi & gracious lady þat schulde be his wif, a 12 yong creature of ix yere of age, Dame Isabell, þe Kingis douȝtir of Fraunce, and mony⁶ worthi lordiz of grete name, bothe Barons and knyȝtis, with moche oper pepil þat comen vn to þe toun of Grauenyng, and ij Dukis of Fraunce: þat on was þe Duk of Burgoyne, 16 and þat oper, Duk⁷ of Barre, þat wolde no firþer lasse þanne þey hadde pleggeȝ for⁸ ham. And þanne King Richarde delyuered ij pleggeȝ for ham to goo saaf and come saaf: his ij worthi vncler, þe Duk of Glowcestre and þe Duk of York. And þei ij went ouer þe 20 watir of Grauenyng, & abiden þere as for⁹ pleggeȝ, vnto þe tyme þat þe Maryage and þe fest were do.¹⁰ ¶ And þanne þeze ij worthi Dukis of Fraunce¹¹ come ovir þe water at Grauenyng, and so to Caleis, with þe¹² worschepful lady, Dame Isabell, þe¹³ Kingis 24 douȝtir of Fraunce. And with hir come mony a worthi lorde and lady,¹⁴ knyȝtis and squyers, yn þe best aray þat myȝt be; and þere þai mette with our meyne at Caleys, þe which welcomyd hir and hir meyne with þe grettest¹⁵ honour and reuerence þat myȝt be, and 28 so brouȝt hir to¹⁶ Caleys toun. And þere sche was reseeyvid with alle þe solempnite and worschip þat myȝt be do vnto¹⁷ such a lady. And þanne þei brouȝt hir vnto þe King; and þe King toke hir, and welcomed hir and alle hir fayr mayne,¹⁸ and made þere alle þe 32 solempnite¹⁹ þat myȝt be do. ¶ And þanne þe King and his counsel axed of the Frensche lordeȝ²⁰ whethir alle þe conauntes and

¹ cc^o T. ccxlj R. ² went him ouer þe see T. þe See R.

³ nobley and of his owen persone T. nobleie and of his owen persone R.

⁴ owith T. ⁵ vnto T. ⁶ many oper TR. ⁷ þe Duke R.

⁸ of R. ⁹ for þe Kk. þe om. TR. ¹⁰ was done T. was do R. were Kk.

¹¹ of Fraunce om. T. ¹² this T. þis R. ¹³ þat is þe T.

¹⁴ and eek lady and T. ¹⁵ beste TR.

¹⁶ brought into T. hir into R. ¹⁷ to R. ¹⁸ maynce T.

¹⁹ leaf 11b, back. ²⁰ men and lordis R.

forwardez, with þe composicion þat were ordeyned and made on bothe parteys, schulde be trewly kept and holde betwene hem; and þai sayde "ye"; & þere þay sworon and token¹ hir charge apou a boke, and toke² hir oth welle and trewli it³ to holde yn alle 4 maner poyntis and couenautes, without contradiccion or delay yn euery⁴ maner wyse. And þanne was sche brouzt to⁵ Seint Nicholas chirch yn Calis; and þere sche was worthili weddyd, with þe moste⁶ solempnite þat eny king or⁷ quene myzt haue, with arche 8 bishoppes and Bischopez, and alle⁸ mynystrez of holy church. ¶ And þanne were þai⁹ brouzt hom vnto¹⁰ þe Castell, and set¹¹ to mete, and þere¹² were serued with alle maner of delicacez of alle¹³ riall metis and drynkis plenteuously, to alle maner of strayngourez 12 and al oþer. And no creature¹⁴ warned þat Fest, but alle were welcome; for þere were grete halys & tentis sette vp on þe grene without þe castell, for¹⁵ to resceyue alle maner of peple, and euery office redy to serue ham alle; and þus þis worthi mariage was 16 solemli do and ended with alle ryalte.

¶ Thanne¹⁶ þese ij Dukys of Fraunce, with hir peple, tokon hir leue of þe King and¹⁷ Quene, and went ayen to Grauenyng watir; and þere þe Frensch lordez, þat is to say, þe ij Dukis &¹⁸ hir meyne, 20 were comen ovir þe watir of Grauenyng, & þere þay mette, & euerych toke leue of oþer; and so þai departed, and our lordez come ayen to Caleys, and þe Frensch lordez went hom ayen¹⁹ yn-to Fraunce. 24

And²⁰ anon aftir, þe King made hym redy²¹ with þe Quene and alle his lordez and²² oþer pepil with ham, & comyn ouyr þe see yn-to Engeland, and so to London, and þe Maire and þe Scherevez, with al þe aldermen and worthi comynez, ryden ayens ham vnto þe 28 Blacke-Heþ yn Kent; & þere þay mettyn with þe King and þe Quene, and welcomyd ham, and þat yn gode aray, and euery man in his cloping of his crafte, and her²³ mynstrelles to-fore ham; and so þay brouzt ham to Saint Georgez Barre yn Southwerke; and þere 32

¹ and token T. and took R. and Kk. ² made TR. ³ hir T.

⁴ any T. eny R. ⁵ vnto TR. ⁶ with moche T. ⁷ and T.

⁸ alle om. T. ⁹ þai om. TR. ¹⁰ to T.

¹¹ sett T. set R. for Kk. ¹² þere þei T. ¹³ alle om. R.

¹⁴ creature was T. ¹⁵ for om. TR. ¹⁶ and T. ¹⁷ and þe T.

¹⁸ and aft T. and alle R.

¹⁹ wenten ouyr þe watir and so home T. wenten ouer þe watir and so hom in to fraunce ayen. R.

²⁰ ayen And T. ²¹ him redy T. made him redy R. hym Kk.

²² and ladies and T. & ladiez & alle R. ²³ here T.

hy¹ tokyn hir leue, and þe King and þe Quene redyn to Kenyngton; and þanne þe peple of London turned hom ayen. And yn turnyng ayen to London brygge, þere was so moche prees both on
 4 fote & on hors,² þat þere were ded on þe brygge a³ xj personeȝ of men,⁴ wymmen & chyldryn: on whose soulez God haue mercy! amen! ¶ And þanne aftirward þe Quene was brouȝt to the Tour of London, and þere⁵ sche was al nyȝt. And on þe morowe⁶ sche
 8 was brouȝt prouȝ þe Cete of London, and⁷ so forth to⁸ Westminster, & þere sche was crouned Quene of Engelande. þan⁹ was sche brouȝt ayen yn-to the Kingis Palis, and þere was¹⁰ holde an opon & a ryall Fest after¹¹ hir coronacion, for al maner peple¹²
 12 þat þedir come: and þus¹³ was do þe Sonday aftir þe Fest of seint Clement, in þe xx yere of King Richardeȝ regne.

And þan, þe xxv day of august next folouyng, be euyl excita-
 cion & ffals counsel, & for grete wrathe¹⁴ and malice þat he had of
 16 olde tyme vnto his vncl, þe gode Duke of Gloucester, and to þe Erle of Arundel, & to þe Erle of Warwic, ¶ The King, by is¹⁵ euylle counsell, late yn the Euenyng on þe same day aboue saide, made hym redy with his streynthe, and rode yn-to Essex vnto þe
 20 toune of Chelmesforde, and so come to Plassche sodenly, þere Ser Thomas of Wodestoke, þe gode Duk of Gloucestre, lay. And þe gode Duk come anon to welcome þe King¹⁶; and þe King hym self¹⁷ arestid þe gode¹⁸ Duke¹⁹; and so he was ladde doun to þe water,
 24 and anon put yn to a schippe, and²⁰ had vnto Caleis, and brouȝt vnto²¹ capteynys warde, to be kept yn holde be þe Kinges commaundement of Engeland: ¶ And þat tyme þe Erle Marchal of Engeland was capten of Caleis. ¶ And anon aftir,²² be com-
 28 maundement of þe King and of²³ his fals Counsel, commaunded þe capten to put hym to²⁴ deth. ¶ And anon certeyn yemen²⁵ þat had þe gode Duk yn kepyng, tooke her counsel how þei²⁶ wolde put hym to²⁷ deth; and þis was her poyntinent: þat þai schulde come
 32 vpon hym whanne he were yn²⁸ bedde, and aslepe on a Fetherbed. And anon þei bonde hym honde and²⁹ foot,³⁰ & chargid hym to ly

¹ thei T. þey R.² on hors and on foote T. bope on hors and on fote R. ³ a om. TR.⁴ men and T. ⁵ and þere R. and Kk. ⁶ morne TR.⁷ aȝ ouer and T. ⁸ vnto T. ⁹ And þanne TR.¹⁰ was TR. was sche Kk. ¹¹ at TR. ¹² of peple T. ¹³ this T. þis R.¹⁴ leaf 116. ¹⁵ his T. ¹⁶ duke come to euȝt come þe kyng anoon T.¹⁷ hym self om. T. ¹⁸ goode om. R. ¹⁹ duke him silf his owen bodi T.²⁰ and anoon T. ²¹ into þe TR. ²² after sende a T. ²³ bi TR.²⁴ to þe T. ²⁵ anoon þo men T. ²⁶ þat þei TR.²⁷ to þe T. vnto R. ²⁸ a R. ²⁹ and om. R. ³⁰ foot and hond T.

style; and whanne þai hadde þis¹ do, þe² tokyn ij smale tewellys, and made on ham³ rydyng knottis, and caste þe tewellys aboute þe Dukis nek: and þanne þei token þe fetherbed þat lay vnder hym, and cast hit aboue hym; and þan þei drowen her towellis eche 4 wayez; and sum lay vpon þe fethir bed apon hym, vnto þe tyme þat he were ded, because þat he schulde make non noyse. And þus þei strangled þis worthi Duk vn[to] the deth, on whose soule God, for⁴ his pite, haue merci! Amen! ¶ And whenne þe King 8 hadde arestid þis worthi Duke, and his owne vncle, and sent hym to Caleis, he come ayen to London yn alle hast, with a wondir grete peple. And as⁵ he was come, he sent for the Erle of Arundel and for the gode Erle of Warwic; and anon as þay cam,⁶ he arestid 12 ham⁷ his owne self. Sir Iohn Cobham⁸ & Ser Iohn Cheyny, knyztis, he arestid also yn þe same wyse,⁸ til he made his parlement; & anon þei were put ynto holde. But þe Erle of Arundel went at large vnto þe parlement tyme, for he founde sufficient 16 surete to abyde þe lawe, & al maner of answeare at þe⁹ poynteþ þat þe King & his Counsel wolde put vp on hym.

¹⁰ Off þe grete parlement, and of þe deth of þe Erle of Arundell; and how þe Erle of Derby and oþer were exiled, and þe 20 sayde Erle come ayen ynto þis londe; and how King Richarde went ynto Ireland, and how he deide.¹⁰ *Capitulum cexlij.*¹¹

And yn the xxj yere of King Richardeþ regne, he ordend a¹² par- 24 lement at Westmynstre, þe which was clepid 'þe Grete Parlement'; and this parlement was made for to iugge þese ij worthi lordez and oþer moo, as ham lust¹³ at þat¹⁴ tyme. ¶ And for þat iugement þe king let make in alle hast a long and a large hous of tymbir, 28 The which was called an hale, and couered with tyleþ ouyr; and it was opun al aboute on bothe sydez, and at þe endis, þat al maner of men myzt se þrouzout; and þere þe dome was holden 15 vpon þese forsaiide lordez, and Iugement yeue at this forsaiide parlement. 32 ¶ And for to come to¹⁶ þis parlement þe King sent his writtis vnto

¹ þus R. ² do thus thei T. þey R. ³ hem ij T. ham ij R.

⁴ of T. ⁵ as sone as T. ⁶ þei were come T.

⁷ hem boþe T. ham boþe R.

⁸⁻⁸ and he arestid also sir Iohn Cobham and sir Iohn Cheyne knyghtis T. manere R.

⁹ to alle T. ¹⁰⁻¹⁰ Off þe grete parlement . . . deide om. TR.

¹¹ cexlijij R. ¹² him a T. ¹³ list TR. ¹⁴ this T.

¹⁵ leaf 116, back. ¹⁶ vnto TR.

euery lorde, Baron, kniȝt and squier, in euery schire þrouȝout
Engelond; and þat euery lorde schulde grade and bryng his retynu
of peple with hym,¹ yn as schort tyme and the² best aray þat þay
4 myȝt gete, in maynteynyng and streyngthyng of þe King ayens
ham þat were his enymys, and þat þis were do yn alle haste, and
þei³ to come to hym yn peyne of deth. ¶ And þe kyng hym self
sent ynto⁴ Chestirschire, vnto þe Chefteynes of þat cuntre, and þay
8 gaged and brouȝt a grete and an huge multitude of peple, bothe of
knyȝtis & of⁵ Squyers, & prynspally of yemen of Chestreschire, þe
which yemen and archers þe Kyng toke yn-to⁶ his owne court, &
yaf ham bothe⁷ boge⁸ of court and gode wageȝ, to be kepers of his
12 owne body, both be nyȝt and be day, above alle oþer persons, and
most ham⁹ loued & best trust. ¶ The which sone aftirwarde
turned þe King to gret losse, schame, hyndryng, and his vtirly
vndoing and destroccion, as ye schalle here sone aftirward.

16 ¶ And þat tyme come Ser Henry, Erle of Derby, with a grete
meyne of men of armeȝ and archers; and þe Erle of Ruthlande
come with a strong pouer of peple, bothe of men of armeȝ and
archers; and the Erle of Kent brouȝt with hym¹⁰ a grete power of
20 men of armeȝ and archers; The Erle Marchalle come yn þe same
wyse;¹¹ The Lord Spenser yn the same maner; The Erle of North-
ombirland and Ser Harry Peerey his sone, & Ser Thomas Perci, þe
Erleȝ broþer; & alle¹² þeȝe worthi lordiȝ brouȝtyn a fayre mayne
24 and a strong power, & ech man yn his best aray; And þe Duk of
Lancastre and þe Duk of York comyn yn þe same maner with men
of armeȝ and archers, folouyng þe King; and Ser William Scrop,
Tresorer of Engelonde, come yn þe same maner. ¶ And þus, yn
28 þis aray, comyn alle þe worthi men of þis londe vnto our King;
and alle þis peple come to London yn on day, yn so moche þat¹³
euery strete & lane yn London & yn þe sowthbarbeȝ weren fulle of
ham logged, and .x. or xij myle about London euery way. And
32 þis¹⁴ pepil brouȝt þe King to Westmynstre, and went hom ayen
vnto hir loggyng, bothe hors & man. ¶ And þan on þe Monday,
þe xvij day of Septembre, þe parlement began at Westminster, þe
which was clepyd "þe grete parlement"; and on þe Fryday next
36 folowyng, þe Erle of Arundel was brouȝt yn-to¹⁵ parlement

¹ retenu with him of peple R. ² in þe T. ³ in the R.
⁴ þei om. T. ⁵ to T. ⁶ of om. R. ⁷ vnto T.
⁸ bothe om. TR. ⁹ bouche T. ¹⁰ ham om. TR.
¹¹ with hym om. TR. ¹² manere TR. ¹³ alle om. T. I alle R.
¹⁴ in R. ¹⁵ þese T. ¹⁶ in to þe R.

among alle þe lordez,—and þat was on¹ saint Matheweȝ day þe Apostyll & euaungelist,—&² þere was³ foriuged vnto the deth in þis⁴ hale, þat was made yn þe palis at Westmynstre. And þis was his Iugement: he⁵ scholde go on fote, *with* his handez y⁶bounde 4 be-hynde hym, from þe place þat he was foriuged ynne, and so forthe prouz þe cite of London vnto þe Toure hyll, and there his hed to be smetyn of; and so⁷ it was do yn dede yn þe same place. ¶ And vj. of þe grete lordez þat sat on his Iugement redyn 8 *with* hym vnto þe⁸ place there he was do vnto⁹ deth. And to se þat¹⁰ þe execussion were y¹¹do aftir his¹² dome, and by þe Kingis commaundement went with hem¹³ on fote men of armeȝ and archers, a grete multitude of Chestirschire men yn streyngthyng of the lordez 12 þat brouȝt þis erle vnto his deth, for þai draddyn þat þe erle schulde haue be rescued and take fro ham, whanne þay come yn-to London. ¶ Thus he passed forth þurgh þe cite vnto his deth; and þere he toke it full paciently; on whose soul God haue mercy! amen! 16 ¶ And þanne come þe frere¹⁴ Austyns, and toke vp the body and þe hed of þis gode Erle, and bare it whome yn-to¹⁵ hir hous, and buried hym yn hir quere. ¶ And yn¹⁶ þe morow¹⁷ aftir, was Ser Richarde, Erle of Warwic, brouȝt yn-to þe parlement, þere as þe 20 Erle of Arundel was foriuged; and þai yaf þe Erle of Warwic þe same Iugement þat þe forsaide erle hadde; but þe lordez had compassion on¹⁸ hym because he was of grete¹⁹ age, and relecyd hym to perpetuall pryson, and put hym yn-to²⁰ þe Ile of Man. ¶ And 24 þanne the Mondaye next aftir, þe lorde Cobban of Kent, Ser Iohn Cheyne,²¹ knyȝt, were broȝt yn-to þe parlement, yn-to²² þe same hale; and þere þay were Iugid to be hangyd & draw; but, prouz þe prayer and grete Instaunce of alle þe lordez, þat Iugement was 28 foryeue ham, and relecyd to perpetual prison.

¶ And þis same tyme was Richard Whityngton, Meyre of London; and Iohn Wodekoc and William Askam, schereveȝ of London; and þai ordeined, at euery yate and yn euery warde, 32 strong wacche of men of armeȝ and of archers, and prinspally at euery yate of London, duryng þis²³ same parlement.

¹ on TR. of Kk. ² & om. T. ³ he was T. ⁴ his T. ⁵ þat he T.
⁶ y om. TR. ⁷ so om. T. ⁸ leaf 117. ⁹ vnto þe T.
¹⁰ þat om. R. ¹¹ y om. TR. ¹² hir TR. ¹³ with hem wenten T.
¹⁴ freres of T. ¹⁵ home vnto TR. ¹⁶ on R. ¹⁷ on þe morne T.
¹⁸ of TR. ¹⁹ more TR. ²⁰ to om. TR.
²¹ ser Iohn Cheyne . . . turned hem omitted in R to page 358, line 30.
²² to om. T. ²³ þe T.

¶ The King at his parlement¹ made .v. Dukis, a Duchasse, & a Marke3, & iiij Erle3; & þe first of ham was þe Erle of Derby, & he was made Duke of Hereforde; and þe ij was þe Erle of Ruth-
 4 land, and he was made Duke of Awmarle; þe iij was þe Erle of Kent, & he was made Duke of Surreye; and þe iiij was þe² Erle of Hontyngton, and he was made Duke of Excestre; and þe .v.³ þe Erle of Notyngham, and he was made Duke of Norfolk; and⁴
 8 þe Erle of Somersete was⁵ made þe Markeys of Dorset; & the Lord Spenser was made Erle of Gloucestre, and þe Lorde Neuytle of Rabye was made Erle of Westmerland; & Ser Thomas Percy was made Erle of Worscetir, and Ser William Scrope, þat was Treserer of
 12 Engelonde, he was made⁶ Erle of Salysburye. ¶ And whanne þe King had þis⁷ do, he helde at⁸ þe parlement a⁹ rial ffeet vnto all his lordez, and to al maner of pepil þat pidir wolde come.

¶ And yn þe¹⁰ same yere deyed Ser Iohn of Gaunt, þe Kingez vncle, & Duke of Lancastre, yn the bischoppe3 In yn Holborn, and was brout fro þenne3 to Saint Poulez and þere þe King made & hilde his terement welle & worthily with all his lordez,¹¹ and þere he was beryed besyde Dame Blaunch his wiff, þat was douȝtur &
 20 heyre to þe gode Henry, þat was Duke of Lancastre.

[*The Fight between Bolingbroke and Norfolk stopt.*]

¶ And yn the same yere þer fil a discencyon and a debate betuene þe Duk of Herford & þe Duke of Norfolk, yn so moche þat þay waged batayle & cast down her gloues; & þanne þey¹² were
 24 take vp and¹³ seled, and the day & þe place of batayle assygned at Couyntre.¹⁴ and þedir come þe King and¹⁵ alle his lordez at þat¹⁶ day, and was sette yn þe ffeelde; and þan þeze ij worthi lordez comyn yn to þe ffeelde, clene armed and wel arayed with alle her wepon,
 28 and redy to do her batayle, and were yn the place redy to fȳt at þe vttrest. ¶ But þe King bade hem cese, and tok þe quarel yn-to his honde, and forthwith, þere present, exiled¹⁷ þe Duk of Herforde for þe terme of .x. yere, and þe Duke of Northfolk for evyrmore;

¹ kyng did T. ² þe om. T. ³ þe v om. T.

⁴ and dame Margrete þe oold ladi of Northfolk and T. ⁵ he was T.

⁶ Englund made him erle of Wiltshire and sir Iohn Mountagew T.

⁷ thus T. ⁸ þe T. ⁹ and a T. ¹⁰ þis T.

¹¹ lordes in the chirche of seynt Poules in london T.

¹² leaf 117, back. ¹³ and a T.

¹⁴ sealid and þe bataile synyd and þe day y sett and þe place assynyd and whanne þe day schulde be vttirli assynyd to be doon at Couentre T.

¹⁵ with T. ¹⁶ þe T. ¹⁷ he exilid T.

and Ser Thomas Arundel, Archebischop of Caunterbury, was exiled þe same tyme for evyr, and deposed of his ssee, for malice of þe King. ¶ And anon þese iiij worthi lordez were commaunded and defendid þe Kinges Reme; & anon þay gat hem schippeþ at dyuers 4 hauens, and went ouer þe see ynto dyuers londez, eche his way; & þe Duk of Northfolke went to Veniþe, and þere he deied: on whose soule God haue mercye! amen!

¶ And þanne King Richarde made Ser Roger Walden, a clerke 8 of his,¹ Archebischop of Caunterbury.

¶ And yn þe xxij yere of King Richardeþ regne, be fals counsel and ymaginacion of ffals men and couetous² þat were aboute hym, were made & ordeyned³ blank Chartureþ, and made 12 ham to be selid of alle maner of riche men prouþout þe Reme, in-so-moche þat þai compellid dyuers pepill to sette to⁴ her seelez; and⁵ þis was so⁶ for gret couetize; wherfore alle þe⁷ gode hertis of þe Reme clene⁸ turned away fro hym⁹ euyr eftir, and þat was 16 vtturli¹⁰ destroccon & ende of hym¹¹ þat was so hygh and so excellent a king, þrough couetyse and fals counsel: Alas, for pite, þat such a king myþt not se!

¶ And þanne King Richarde sette his kingdom and his riall 20 londe to fferme of Engeland,¹² vnto iiij personeþ, þe which were þese, Sir William Scrope,¹³ Erle of Wilschire & Treserer of Engeland, Ser¹⁴ Iohn Busch, Henry¹⁵ Grene, and Ser Iohn Bagot, knyþtes; þe¹⁶ whiche¹⁷ turned hem to moche myschef and deth 24 with-ynne a¹⁸ lytil tyme aftir, as ye schal here¹⁹ wretyn sone aftir.

[*Richard II's Expedition to Ireland.*]

¶ Thanne²⁰ King Richarde made gret ordynaunce, and went ouyr see²¹ Into Ireland, and mony grete lordez with hym, with grete osten, for to streyngthe hir king, as men of armeþ, archers,²² 28 and moche grete stuff & riþt gode ordynaunce, as longith to warre. ¶ And or he passid þe see, he ordeyned and made Ser Edmund of Langley his vncl, Duk²³ of York, his Lieutenaunt of Engeland

¹ a clerke of his *om.* T. ² of couetous men T.

³ ordeynyd and maad T. ⁴ to *om.* T. ⁵ to and T. ⁶ do T.

⁷ þe *om.* T. ⁸ weren clene T.

⁹ him þat is þe kyng T. fro hym þe kyng Kk.

¹⁰ and was vttirly his T. and þat vtturly Kk.

¹¹ of hym *om.* T. ¹² of Engeland to ferme T. ¹³ of Scrope T.

¹⁴ and sir T. ¹⁵ and sir Harry T. ¹⁶ þe *om.* T. ¹⁷ whiche þat T.

¹⁸ a *om.* T. ¹⁹ here fynde T. ²⁰ And þanne T.

²¹ wente him ouer þe see T. ²² and archers T. ²³ þe duke T.

yn his absence, be¹ þe gouernaunce &² counsel of þese iiij knyztis þat had take Engelande to ferme of the King. ¶ And þanne he passed þe see, and come ynto Irelande, and þere he was welle and
4 worthily resceyved. And þese rebellis of Ireland bith³ callid 'wilde⁴ Irisch men'; and⁵ anon her chefteyneȝ & hir⁶ gouernoures &⁷ leeders comyn doun vnto þe King, & yolde ham vnto hym, bothe body & godeȝ, alle at his owne wille, & swore to be his lige
8 men, and þer-to dede to hym⁸ homage & feaute, and gode seruiȝe; & þus he conquerid⁹ þe moste party of Ireland yn a litil tyme.

[*The Return of Bolingbroke.*]

¶ While þat¹⁰ King Richard was þus yn Irelande, Ser Henry of Bolingbroke, Erle of Derby, þat þe king hadde made before Duk
12 of Herforde—þe which Duk, þe King had exiled out of þis lande—was come ayen yn-to Engeland, for to chalange þe Duchery¹¹ of Lancastre as for¹² riȝt & trewe heritage. ¶ And he come doun out of Fraunce by londe to Calis, and þere mette hym Ser Thomas of
16 Arundel, þat was Archebischop of Caunturbury, þat was exiled out of Engeland; and with hym come þe Erle of Arundell sone, & his heire, þe which was yn warde and yn¹³ kepyng of Ser Iohn Selly, kniȝt, sum tyme with þe Erle of Huntynghon, and with þe Duk of
20 Excestre, þe which was yn the Castell of Rygate yn Suthsex; and þere he stale away from Shelly, & come to Caleys; & þere he was kept welle and worthily til þis¹⁴ oper ij lordez were come to Caleys.

¶ And þan þis worthi Duk, & þe Archebischop of Caunturbury,
24 Arundel, schippid yn þe hauene of Caleis, and drow his cours Norpewarde, and arryued yn Yorkschyre, Rauensporne, fast by Brydlyngton; and þere he come, and entrid þe londe, & þese ij lordez with hym, and hir meyne. And þanne moche pepil of the
28 Reme, þat wist of his comyng and¹⁵ where he was, anon drowyn to¹⁶ hym, and welcomyd þese lordez, and socurred hym yn alle maner þyngis, and passed forth yn¹⁷ the londe, and gadryd myche peple.

32 ¶ And whanne King Richard wist of þis, & herde¹⁸ þat þese ij lordez were come ayen yn-to Engelande, and were loded, þanne

¹ be om. T. ² and þe T. ³ ben T. ⁴ the wilde T.

⁵ and om. T. ⁶ hir om. T. ⁷ and her T.

⁸ there to him diden T. ⁹ leaf 118. ¹⁰ þe T.

¹¹ dukedom T. ¹² for his T. ¹³ yn om. T. ¹⁴ these T.

¹⁵ and om. T. ¹⁶ anon þei drewe vnto T. ¹⁷ into T.

¹⁸ Richard herde and wiste T.

þe King left alle his ordynaunce yn Irelande, and come yn-to Engelandewarde yn alle þe hast þat he myzte, & come yn-to¹ þe Castell of Flynt; and þere he abode for to take his counsell, and what myght² best be do; but to hym com non. ¶ And þanne Ser⁴ Thomas Percy, Erle of Worcestre, þat was þe Kingis Steward, when he wist³ and knew þis, anon he com yn-to the halle among alle þe pepil, and þere he brake þe yerd of þe Rial Kingis housholde; and⁴ euery man went his way, and forsok his maistir & souereyne lorde, and left hym alone: ⁵and þus was King Richard brouȝt adoun and destroyed, and stode alle alone,⁵ without counsel, confort & socour⁶ of eny man. Allas! for pite of þis ryal King!

12

¶ And anon come tydynges þat Harry of Bolyngbroke was vp with a⁷ strong power of pepill, and þat alle þe Schyreveȝ of Engeland reysed vp þe Schires yn streynȝthing of hym ayens King⁸ Richard; and þus sone he was come out of þe Northcuntre 16 to Bristow, and þere he mette with Ser William Scrope, Erle of Wilschire and⁹ Tresorer of Engeland, and with Ser Iohn Busch and Ser Henry Grene, and Iohn¹⁰ Bagot, but he ascapyd from hym, and went ouer þe see In-to Irelande; & þeȝe oper ij¹¹ knyȝtes were 20 take, and her hedis smytyn of; & þus þei deied for her fals couetize.

¶ And þanne was King Richard y¹²take, & brouȝt vnto þe Duk; and anon þe Duk put hym y[n] saff¹³ warde and strong 24 holde, vnto his comyng to London. ¶ And þanne was þere¹⁴ a Rumore yn London, ¹⁵and a strong noyse, þat King Richarde was come to Westmynstre; and the pepil of London ranne þider, and wolde haue don moche harm and scathe yn hir wodnesse, ne hadde 28 þe Mayre and þe aldermen, and oper worthi men, cecid ham with faire wordes, and turned hem ¹⁶hom ayen vnto London. ¶ And þere was¹⁷ Ser Iohn Slake, Dene of the Kinges chapel of Westmynstre, take,¹⁸ and brouȝt to London, and put yn¹⁹ Ludgate; and 32 Bagot was take yn Irelande, and brouȝt to London, & put yn prisone yn Newgate, þere to be kept and²⁰ abide his answe-re.

¹ vnto T. ² what myghte T. what Kk.³ Steward whenne he wiste T. Steward wist Kk.⁴ and tho hit disparbelid and T. ⁵⁻⁵ om. T.⁶ withoute comfort or socoure or good counceille T. ⁷ a wondir T.⁸ þe king T. ⁹ and om. T. ¹⁰ sir Iohn T. ¹¹ iij T.¹² y om. T. ¹³ into faste T. ¹⁴ and there was thanne T.¹⁵ leaf 118, back. ¹⁶ MS. R begins again. ¹⁷ was take T.¹⁸ take þm. T. ¹⁹ in prison in T. ²⁰ and to T.

¶ And sone aftir, þe Duk brouȝt King Richard pryuyly to London, and put hym yn the Tour, vndir sure kepyng as a prisoner. And þanne come þe lordez of the Reme, with alle hir counsel, vnto þe
 4 Tour to King Richard and saide to hym of his mysgouernaunce and extorcion þat he hadde do, maade, and ordeyned, to oppresse alle þe comyn pepil, & also alle¹ þe Reame; wherfore al þe comyn peple of his Reme wolde haue hym deposed of his kingdom; and
 8 so he was deposyd at þat tyme in þe Tour of London by alle his² lordez counsel, and by³ the common assent of al þe Reme. ¶ And þan⁴ he was put fro þe Tour vnto þe castel of Ledis yn Kent, and þere he was kept a while; and þan was he hadde fro þennez vnto
 12 þe kastell of Pomfret in þe Northcuntre, to be kept yn pryson; and sone aftirward riȝt þere he made his ende.

¶ Whanne⁵ King Richarde was deposed, and hadde resyngned his croune and his kinglom, and hym self kept fast yn holde, þan
 16 alle þe lordez of þe Reme, with þe comyns assent, and by one⁶ accorde, chosyn þis worthi lorde, Ser Henry of Bolyngbroke, Erle of Derby, Duk of Herford and Duke of Lancastre be riȝt lyne and heritage; and for his myȝtful manhode þat þe peple founde yn
 20 hym, before al oþer þei choson hym, & made hym King of Engelande.⁷

Of Ser Henry of⁸ Bolingbroke, Erle of Derby, þat regned aftir King Richarde, þe⁹ which was þe fourth Henry after þe
 24 **Conqueste. Capitulum cexliij.¹⁰**

And aftir Kinge Richarde þe secunde was deposed and put out of his kingdom, þe lordez & þe comyns, alle with on assent, and alle oþer worthi of þe Reme, chosyn Ser Henry of Bolyngbroke, Erle
 28 of Derby, sone & heyre of Iohn a Gaunt, Duke¹¹ of Lancastre, for his worthi manhode þat ofte tyme hadde be founde yn hym, and yn dede preuid; vpon Saint Edwardez Day þe Confessoure, he was crowned King of Engeland at Westmynstre, by alle þe Remys
 32 assent, next aftir¹² deposyng of King Richard. ¶ Thanne he made Henry, his eldist sone & his heire, Prynce of Walis, Duk¹³ of Cornewayle, and Erle of Chestre; and he made Ser Thomas of Arundel, Archebischof of Caunturbury ayen, as he was before;

¹ to aȝt T. ² his TR. hir Kk. ³ by om. T.

⁴ there T. þere R. ⁵ And þanne whenne T. And whanne R.

⁶ one om. R. ⁷ Engelande amongis hem. T. ⁸ om. T.

⁹ Richarde þe om. T. ¹⁰ cc^o T. cexliij R. ¹¹ Iohn þe duke TR.

¹² aftir þe T. ¹³ and duke T.

and Ser Roger¹ Walden, that King Richard had made Archebischop of Caunturbury, he made² Bischop of London, for þat time it stode voyde; and he³ made þe Erlez sone of Arondel, ⁴that come ouer the see with him from Caleys into Englund, he made him Erle of ⁴Arundaft, and put hym yn possession of alle his londez; and þere he made homage and feaute unto his liege lorde þe King, as alle oper lordez hadde do.

¶ And þanne anon deied King Richard in þe castell of 8 Pountfret yn the Northcuntre, for þere he was enfammed vnto the deth be his keper, for he was kept into⁵ iiij or v. dayez fro mete and drynke; and so he made is ende yn þis worlde. Yet moche pepil yn Engeland and yn opir⁶ landez saide þat he was alyue⁷ meny yerez aftir his deth; but wheþer he were a⁷lyue or ded, þei⁸ hilde hir fals opynions and beleue þat þay⁹ hadde; and moche pepil aftirward comyn to myschif and to foule deth, as ye schulle here aftirwarde. ¶ And whanne King Henry wist and knew 16 warly¹⁰ þat he was ded, he lete sere hym yn þe best maner þat he myzte,¹¹ and¹² closed hym yn¹³ lynnyn cloth, alle saue his visage, and þat was left opou þat men myzt se and know his person from alle oper men; and so he was brought to London with torchis lyzt 20 brennyng vnto Saynt Poulez, and þere he hadde his masse and his dirige, with moche reverence and solempnite of seruiþe. ¶ And fro Poulez was¹⁴ brouzt ynto þe Abbey of Westmynstre, and þere hadde¹⁵ alle his hole seruiþe ayen; and fro Westmynstre he was 24 ladd¹⁶ ynto¹⁷ Langeley, and þere he was beryed: on whose soule God haue mercy! Amen!

¶ And yn þe first yere of King Henryez regne he hilde his Cristismasse yn þe Castell of Wyndesore; and on þe twelfthe 28 evyn come þe Duke of Awmarle vnto þe King, and tolde hym þat he & þe Duk of Surrey, þe¹⁸ Duk of Excestre, þe¹⁸ Erle of Salusbury, þe¹⁸ Erle of Gloucestre, & opir moo of her afinite, were accorded to make a mummyng vnto þe King on¹⁹ xijth day at 32 nyght; and þere þay cast to sle þe King yn hir revelyng; and þus þat²⁰ Duke warned þe King. And þanne þe King come þe same²¹

¹ Roger of T. ² made him TR. ³ he om. R. ⁴⁻⁴ RT; om. Kk.

⁵ in T. ⁶ leaf 119. ⁷ on T. ⁸ forth thei T.

⁹ men T. ¹⁰ verily T. ¹¹ þat he myzte om. TR.

¹² and closid hit in a fayre chest with dyuerse spiceries and bawmes T. and closed him in a fair chiste with diuers spicez and bamez and R.

¹³ in a TR. ¹⁴ he was TR. ¹⁵ he hadde T. ¹⁶ ladde T. hadd Kk.

¹⁷ to T. vnto R. ¹⁸ and þe T. ¹⁹ on þe T. ²⁰ þis R.

²¹ þe same TR. same Kk. þe om. R.

- nyzt to London¹ priuili, yn alle þe² hast þat he myzte, to gete hym helpe, socoure, comfort³ & counsel. And⁴ anon þeze oper, þat wolde haue do þe King to deth, fleddyn yn alle þe haste þat þei 4 myghte,⁵ for þei knewen welle þat her counsel was bewrayed. ¶ And þanne fled þe Duke of Surrey, and þe Erle of Salusberye with⁶ alle hir meyne, vnto þe toun of Siscetre; and þere þe pepil of þe toun wolde haue arestid ham; and þey wolde not stonde to 8 her arest, but stodyn at her⁷ defence, & fauzt manly; but at þe⁸ laste þey were ouercome and take;⁹ and þere þei smote of þe Dukes hed of Surrey, and þe Erlez hed of Salusbury, & mony oper moo; & þere¹⁰ þay putte þe quarters in sackys, and her hede3 on¹¹ 12 pole3 born on hy, and so¹² þei were brouzt þrouz þe cite of London vnto London brygge; and þere her hede3 were sette vp an¹³ hy, & her quarters were sent to oper gode tounes3 and cite3, and set vp þere.
- 16 ¶ At Oxynforde were¹⁴ take Ser Thomas¹⁵ Blount, knyzt, Benet¹⁶ Sely, knyzt, and Thomas Wyntirsell, squyer; and þese were behedid & quarterd; & the knyzttes hedis were sette on pole3 & brouzt to London, & sette on London brygge, and þe quarters sent 20 forth to oper place3 & tounes3. ¶ And yn þe same yere at Pritwelle yn¹⁷ Essex, was take Ser Iohn Holond, þe Duk of Excestre,¹⁸ with þe¹⁹ comyne3 of þe cuntreye; and þay brouzt hym fro þe mille vnto Plasche; and to þe same place þere King Richard hadde 24 arestid²⁰ Ser Thomas of Wodstoke, þe Duk of Glowcestre. And ryzt þere, yn þe same place, þei²¹ smytyn of þe Duk of Excestrez hed, & brouzt it to London vpon a poole; and it was sette on London Brygge. ¶ And yn þe same yere, at Bristow, was take þe 28 Lorde Spenser, þat King Richard hadde made Erle of Glowcestre; & þe comyne3 of the toun of Bristow²² toke hym, and brouzt hym in to þe Market place of the Toun; & ther thay smyte of his hed and sent hit to London, and hit was sette on London brygge.
- 32 ¶ And yn þe same yere was Ser Bernarde Brokeys, kni3t, take and

¹ to London TR. om. Kk. ² þe om. R. ³ and comfort T.

⁴ And om. T.

⁵ haste þat þei myghte T. haste þat þey myzte R. om. Kk.

⁶ and with R. ⁷ her om. TR. ⁸ þe om. T. ⁹ took hem T.

¹⁰ þere om. T. ¹¹ vpon T. ¹² so om. T. ¹³ on TR.

¹⁴ were TR. we Kk. ¹⁵ ser Thomas om. T. Iohn) R.

¹⁶ and Benet T. ¹⁷ in a mille in TR.

¹⁸ Essex there sir Iohn) holande þe duke of Excestre was take T. Essex þere sir Iohn) holande þe Duke of Excestre was take R.

¹⁹ þe om. R. ²⁰ hadde arestid T. hadde arested R. arestid Kk.

²¹ thei T. þey R. þe Kk. ²² leaf 119, back.

arestid, & put yn-to þe Tour of London; and Ser Iohn Selley, kniȝt, & Ser Iohn Mawdeleyne & Ser William Fereby, persons of King Richardeȝ, were¹ arestid and put yn-to þe Tour of London. and þedir come þe Kingeȝ Iusticeȝ, and saat vpon hem yn the 4 Toure; and þere were² dampned alle iiij vnto þe deth.³ And the dome was yeue vnto Ser Bernarde Brokeys, þat he shulde go on fote fro the Tour þrouȝ þe toun of⁴ London vnto Tyburne, and þere⁵ to be hangyd, & aftir his hed to ben⁶ smyten of & sett on 8 London Brigge, & Ser Iohn Selley, knyȝt, and Ser Iohn Maudeleyn & Sir William Feriby, persons, weir draw þrouȝout London to Tyburne, & þere hanged.⁷

¶ And yn þe⁸ same yere King Henry sent Quene Isabell, þat 12 was King Richardeȝ wiff,⁹ hom ayen yn-to Fraunce,¹⁰ and yaff hir Golde & siluer and mony oþer Iewelleȝ; and so¹¹ sche was¹² discharged of alle hir dower, & sent out of Engeland.

¶ And yn þe secunde yere of¹³ King Henri þe iiijth, was Ser 16 Rogger of Claryngdon, kniȝt, & ij of his men, & þe Priour of Launde, & viij frere Menoures, and sum Maistres of diuinite, & oþer, for treson þat þay wrouȝt ayens the King, were drawe & hangyd at¹⁴ Tyborne, alle xij presoners & personeȝ.¹⁵ 20

¶ Than¹⁶ beganne þe¹⁷ discencion¹⁸ & debate yn þe cuntre of Walis betwene þe Lorde Grey Rithyn¹⁸ & Oweyn of Glyndore, Squier of Walis. And þis Oweyn rerid a nownbyr of Walschemen, and kept þat¹⁹ cuntrey about ryȝt strong, & dede myche harme, and 24 destroyed þe Kingis touneȝ and lorschippeȝ þrouȝout Walis, & robbyd & slowgh þe Kingis pepil, both Englisch and Walsch; and þus he endured xij²⁰ yere large. And he toke þe Lorde Gray of²¹ Rithyn presoner, and kept hym fast yn holde tyll he was 28 raunsonde of prysoners of þe March, and kept hym long tyme yn holde; and at þe²² last he made hym wedde on of his douȝtris,²³ and kep[t]e hym styll þere²⁴ with his wiff, and sone after he deyed.

¹ and þei weren T. ² þey weren T. ⁵ vnto þe deth alle four R.

⁴ þe tour of om. TR. ⁶ þere om. T.

⁶ aftir his heed T. aftir his hed R. his om. Kk.

⁷ hangid and her heedis smyten of and sett on london) brigge T. hanged and hir hedis smyten of and set on london Brigge R. & sett on London Brigge om. Kk. ⁸ þis T. this R. ⁹ þat was . . . wiff om. T.

¹⁰ fraunce þe which was kyng Richardis weddid wiff T. ¹¹ so om. T.

¹² was so T. ¹³ of þe reigne of T. ¹⁴ at þe T.

¹⁵ & personeȝ om. TR. ¹⁶ There T. Ther R. ¹⁷ a T. þe om. R.

¹⁸⁻¹⁸ and a debate bitwene þe lord Grey Reffen in þe cuntree of Walis T.

¹⁹ at þat TR. ²⁰ a xij T. ²¹ of om. T. ²² þe om. T.

²³ his douȝtris TR. douȝtris om. Kk. ²⁴ there styll T.

¶ And þanne þe¹ King,² knowyng þis myschef, destruccion and treson, þat þis Oweyn hade y³wrouzt, þen anon he ordeyned a strong power of men of armez and of archers, & moche oþer stuffe 4 þat longid to warre, for to abate & destroye þe malice of þe⁴ fals Walschmen. And þanne þe King come yn-to Walys with his power, for to destroy þis Owen and oþer rebellis, fals Walschmen. And⁵ anon þei fledden yn-to þe mountayne; and þere myzte þe 8 King do hem non harme yn no maner of⁶ wyse; but ofte þei toke þe Kingis cariage, and euery day destroyed his peple. But Oweyn and his men, þe moste parte, ascapid harmelez; ffor þe King ne his meyne myzt not come⁷ to hem yn no maner of⁸ wise 12 for þe mountayne; and so the King come to⁹ Engeland ayen, for lesyng of moo of his peple, and þus he¹⁰ spedde not þere.

¶ In þis same yere was gret scarsite of whete yn Engeland, for a quarter of whete was at xvj s.; ¹¹and merchaunthes were sent out 16 of Engeland ouyr see¹¹ ynto Spruce for whete. anon¹² þay hadde lade & freight shippez ynow, & came hoom yn saafte, blessid¹³ be God of¹⁴ alle his yeftis!

¶ And yn the iij^{de} ¹⁵yere of King Harryez regne, ther was a 20 sterre seyne in þe firmament, þat schewed hym-self þrouz alle¹⁶ þe worlde, for dyuers tokenns þat schulde befall e sone after; þe which sterre was named & called be clergie¹⁷ 'Stella comata.' And on Seint Marye Magdaleyne day, next aftir,¹⁸ yn þe same 24 yere, was þe Batayle of Schrouysbury; and þedir come Ser Henry Percy, þe Erlez sone of Northombirlande, with a grete multitude of men of armes & archers, and yaf¹⁹ batayle to²⁰ King Harry þe iiij^{the}, þrouz fals²¹ counsel and wicked reede of Ser Thomas Percy, is vnclde, 28 Erle of Worcestre; and þere was Ser Harry Percy slayn; and þe most parte of his mayne, yn the feelde,²² and Ser Thomas Percy take, and kept yn holde ij dayez tyll þe King hadde sette rest among his peple on both sydes. And þanne Ser Thomas Percy 32 was Iugid to be ded, þat is to wete, drawe, hangyd, & his hed

¹ þe om. T. ² king Harry T. ³ y om. TR. ⁴ þese T. þis R.

⁵ and om. T. ⁶ of om. TR.

⁷ nought come T. not come R. not om. Kk.

⁸ of om. TR. ⁹ into TR. ¹⁰ he om. R.

¹¹—¹¹ and þanne was marchaundise of Engeland sente ouer þe see T.

¹² and anon T. and anon R. ¹³ and comen in haste y blessid T.

¹⁴ in R. ¹⁵ leaf 120. ¹⁶ out al R.

¹⁷ & called be clergie om. T. ¹⁸ folowyng T. folowyng R.

¹⁹ yaf a T. ²⁰ to þe T. ²¹ the fals T.

²² Percy slayn in þe felde & þe moste part of his meyne R.

smyte of for his fals treson at Schrowesbery, & his hed brouzt to London & set on London-is¹ Brygge. And al² o^{per} peple þat³ were slayne þere,⁴ on þe Kingez syde⁵ and yn boþe parteys,⁶ þe King let bury: and þere was slayn on þe Kingy³ syde yn the⁷ 4 batayle, þe Erle of Staffarde, and Ser Water Blount yn þe Kingys kote armyour, vndir þe Kingez baner, and mony mo worthi men; on⁸ whose soule God haue mercy! amen!

¶ And yn þe iiij^{the} yere of King Harryez regne, come þe 8 Emp[er]joure of Constantynoble, with mony grete lordez and knyghtes and moch o^{per} peple of his cuntre, in to Engelande, to King Harry, with hym to speke⁹ and to disporte hym, and see¹⁰ þe gode gouernaunce & þe condicionez of our peple, and know¹¹ þe 12 commodite³ of Engeland. And our King, with alle his worthi lordez, godely and worschepfully hym resceyved, and welcomed hym¹² and alle his mayne þat come with hym, and dede hym alle þe reuerence & worschip þat þay cowthe and myzte. And anon þe 16 King commawnded al maner officers þat he schulde be serued as worthily & as¹³ ryaly as it longith to¹⁴ such a worthi lorde & Emperour, on his owne cost, as long as þe Emperour was¹⁵ yn Engeland, and alle his men þat comyn with hym. 20

¶ And yn þis same yere came dame Iohane,¹⁶ þe Duchasse of Bryttayne, yn-to Engelande, and landed at Falemouth yn Corneweyle; & fro þennez she was brouzt to þe cite of Wynchestre, and þere sche¹⁷ was weddyd vnto King Harry þe iiij^{the} yn the Abbey of 24 Saynt Swythens of Wynchestre, with alle þe solempnite þat myzt be do and made. ¶ And sone after, sche was brouzt fro þennez to London; and þe meyre, with¹⁸ þe aldermen and þe comyns of þe cite of London, rydyn ayens hir, and hir welcomed,¹⁹ and brouzt 28 hir throuz þe cite of London vnto Westmynstre; and þere sche was crowned & made²⁰ Quene of Engeland; and þere þe king made a ryalle and a²¹ solempne fest for hir, and for al maner men þat pedir wolde come. 32

¶ And yn þis same yere, Dame Blaunche, þe eldist dougtr of

¹ is *om.* TR. ² aft þe T. ³ that there T. þat þer R.

⁴ þere *om.* TR. ⁵ side in þat Bataile R.

⁶ slayne on boþe parties T. and yn boþe parteye *om.* R.

⁷ kyngis side in þat T. þat R. syde *om.* Kk. ⁸ of T.

⁹ to speke with him T. ¹⁰ to see T. to se R. ¹¹ to knowe T.

¹² hym *om.* R. ¹³ as *om.* R. ¹⁴ vnto T.

¹⁵ Emperoure was T. Emperour was R. was Kk. ¹⁶ Iane TR.

¹⁷ sche *om.* T. ¹⁸ and T. & R. ¹⁹ welcomyd hir T.

²⁰ & made *om.* R. ²¹ and a TR. and *om.* Kk.

King Harry þe iiiijth, was y¹sent ouyr see² with þe Erle of
 Somersete, hir vncl, and with Maister Richarde Clyfforde, þanne
³Bischop of Worcestre, and with mony oþer lordez and worthi
 4 knyztis, ladiez,⁴ and Squyers,⁵ as longed to such a worthi lady, and
 come vnto Coleyne. And þedir come þe Duke, sone of Barrey,
 with a faire mayne, and resceyved þis worthi lady, and þere the
 Bischop⁶ of Worcestre wedded & sacred ham to-gedir, as holy
 8 church it⁷ wolde; & þere was made a ryalle feest and a⁸ grete Iustize,
 yn⁹ reverence and worschip of ham, and to alle peple þat þedir
 come. ¶ And whanne þis maryage and fest was do, þe Erle and
 þe Bischop, with alle hir meyne, token her leve of lordez and
 12 ladiez and come home ayen yn-to Engelond in saafte, y¹⁰þankyð be
 God!

¶ And yn þe .v. yere of King Harryez regne, þe Lorde Thomas,
 King Harryez sone þe iiiijth, and þe Erle of Kent went ouyr see,¹¹
 16 and mony oþer lordez and knyztis, and men of armys & archers,
 and went to¹² þe se to chastise þe rebellis þat afore hadde do moch
 harme to our Englisch¹³ Marchauntez & to mony tounes and portis
 yn Engelond vpon þe se costis. ¶ And þe Lorde Thomas, þe
 20 Kingis son, cam yn-to Flaundres, toffore a toun þat is callid þe
 Seluse, among alle þe schippe of dyuers nacyons þat were þere;
 and after, þai rydyn with her schippe among ham, and went
 alonde, & sported ham þere ij. daiez, and cam ayen to hir schippe,
 24 & token þe brode se, & þere þay mettyn with iij carrakez of Iene,
 þat were lade with dyuers Marchaundize, and welle y¹⁴manned;
 and þere þay fouztyn to-gadryze longe; but þe Englischmen hadde
 þe victorie, and brouzt þe Carrakez yn-to þe camere before
 28 Wynchylse; and þere þay cantid þes godez, and on of þeze Carrekez
 was sodenly þere brent, & þe lordez and hir peple turned hom
 ayen, and went no firthir at þat tyme.

¶ And yn that same yere, Serle, yoman of King Richardez
 32 Robys, come yn-to Engelond out of Scotland, and saide to diuers
 peple þat 'King Richard was alyve yn Scotlond'; and so, moch of

¹ y om. TR. ² þe see T. ³ leaf 120, back. ⁴ and ladies TR.

⁵ and worthi squyers T. worthi squiers R.

⁶ the bisshop T. þe Bisshop R. bisshop Kk.

⁷ it om. TR. ⁸ a om. TR.

⁹ in þe T. ¹⁰ y om. TR.

¹¹ iiiij^e wente ouer þe see and þe Erle of kent T. wente ovir see and þe erl
 of kent R.

¹² archers a greet meyne wenten to T. archers a greet meyne went R.

¹³ Engliishe men T. ¹⁴ y om. R.

þe peple beleued yn his wordez; wherfore mych of þe peple of þe Reeme were yn gret erreure and gruching ayens þe King, prou3 fals informacion¹ þat þis Serle hadde made, for moche peple beleuyd & trustid to² his seyng; but at þe³ last he was take yn the North 4 cuntre, and by lawe juged to be draw prou3 euery cite & gode burgh toun yn Engeland; and so he was serued. And at þe³ last he was brouzt to London, vnto Gilde⁴-halle before þe justize; and þere he was juged to⁵ be brouzt to þe Tour of London, and þere to 8 be laide vp⁶-on an hirdille, & þan to⁷ be drawe prou3 þe cete of London to Tyborne, &⁸ hangyd, & þan quarterde, and his hed smyte of & set on London Brygge, & his quarters to be sent to iiij gode townes of Engeland, & þere set vp: & þus endid he his⁹ fals 12 treson & desceit.

¶ And yn þe vj yere of King Henry³ regne, þe Erle of Marre, of Scotland, be saaf condit come ynto Engeland for to chalange Ser Edmund, þe Erle of Kent, of certeyn cours of warre on hors-bak; 16 & so þis chalange was accept and graunted, and þe place take yn Smythfelde at London. And þis Erle of Marre, þe¹⁰ Scot, com proudly¹¹ yn-to the felde, as his chalange asked. And anon com yn þe Erle of Kent, and rode vnto þe Scot, and manfully rydyn 20 togadir with scharp¹² speris dyuers cours; but þe Erle of Kent hadde þe Felde, and gate hym moch worschip & þanke of al maner of¹³ men for his manful dedis.

¶ And þis yere¹⁴ Ser Richard Scrope, Archebyschop¹⁵ of York, 24 and þe lorde Mounbray, Erle Marchal of Engelande, gadrid vnto hym a strong meyne yn þe North cuntre ayens King Henry. and þan King Henry, heryng¹⁶ þerof, yn alle þe hast þat he myzte, come with his power northwarde, and mette with ham at York; 28 and þere were þei¹⁷ ij lordez take, and brouzt to¹⁸ þe King, and anon þe Iuge³ weryn sette, and pese ij lordez brouzt forth; and þere pai were dampned vn-to þe¹⁹ deth, þat boþe her hedis schulde be²⁰ smyte of; and þere þay made her ende: on whose soulez God, for 32 his pete, haue mercy! Amen!

¹ thorough informacion) of lesyngis and falslies T. þoru3 informacion) of his lie3 and fals lesyngis R.

² peple trustid him and bileuuyd in TR. ³ þe om. T. ⁴ þe Gilde T.

⁵ forto T. ⁶ vp om. TR. ⁷ to om. R. ⁸ and þere TR.

⁹ for his TR. ¹⁰ a T. ¹¹ leaf 121. ¹² scharp om. T. ¹³ of om. R.

¹⁴ And in þe same yere of kyng Harries reigne þe iiijth T. And in þe vi. yeer of kinge henries regne þe iiijth R.

¹⁵ þe Erchebisshop T. ¹⁶ þanne þe kyng heryng T.

¹⁷ þese T. þeje R. ¹⁸ vnto T. ¹⁹ þe om. R. ²⁰ heedis were T.

¶ And whanne¹ þis was do, þe King come to London ayen, a[n]d² restyd hym. And anon, God, of his grete godenesse, wrouzt and schewyd meny grete myracles for his worthi Clerke, þe³ 4 Archebischop of Yorke, þat þus was down to⁴ deth.⁵

¶ And yn þe vij yere of King Henrye⁶ regne come⁶ Dame Luce, þe Duke⁷ sistir⁷ of Millane, yn-to⁸ Engeland, and so vnto London, and þere was weddid to Ser Edmund Helond, Erle of 8 Kent, yn þe priory of Saint Mary Ouerey yn Southwerke, with moche solempnite and grete worschip: and þere was þe King hym selfe, and yaf hir at þe churche dore. ¶ And whanne⁹ þay were weddyd, and masse do,¹⁰ þe King, his owne persone, brouzt and 12 ladde þis worthi lady yn-to þe Bischopis place of Wynchestre; and þere was a wondir grete fest helde, to alle maner of pepil þat come pedir.¹¹

¶ In þis¹² same yere, Ser Robert Knollis, kniȝt, þe worthi 16 warriour, deied at his Maner yn Northfolke: and fro þenne³ he was brouzt to London on¹³ an hors beere, with myche torche lyghte; and so was he brouzt to¹⁴ þe Whit-Fris yn Flet-strete; and þere was do and¹⁵ made a ryal &¹⁶ solempne terement for 20 hym, for þem¹⁵ þat þidir wolde come, boþe pore & rich; and þere he lyth beryed¹⁷; on whose soule God¹⁸ haue mercy! Amen!

¶ And¹⁹ yn the²⁰ same yere Ser Thomas Ruston,²¹ kniȝt, Constab[l]e of þe Tour of London, was dreynt yn²² Themys²³ at London 24 Brygge, as he com fro Westmynstre towarde þe Tour yn a barge; and al prouȝ lewdenesse. And yn þe same yere Dame Phelyp, þe yongyr douȝtir of King Henry þe iiij^{tho}, was ladde ouer þe see with Ser Richarde, þe Duke³ brothir of Yorke, and Ser Edmund Cour- 28 teneye, bishop of Norwiche, and mony oþer lordiȝ, kniȝtis and squyers, ladieȝ and gentil-wymmen, as²⁴ perteyneth to²⁵ such a worthi Kingis douȝtir, and come yn-to Denmarke, to a toun²⁶ þat is callyd Elsyngborgh. And þedir come þe King of Denmarke, wipe 32 his lordis, and resceyvid þis worthi lady for his wiff, and welcomyd

¹ as T. ² and there T. and pere R. ³ þe om. TR.

⁴ vnto R. ⁵ vnto þe deeth T. ⁶ come om. T. ⁷ doughtir T.

⁸ come into T. ⁹ And as sone as T. ¹⁰ and þe masse was doon T.

¹¹ þedir om. T. ¹² þe TR. ¹³ vpon TR. ¹⁴ vnto T.

¹⁵⁻¹⁶ maad for him a solempne feste and a roiat terment for tho T. þe R. ¹⁶ and a R.

¹⁷ buried bi dame Constance his wiff in mydde of þe bodi of the churche T. beried be Dame Constance his wiff in þe myddel of þe body of þe chirche R.

¹⁸ god of his pitee T. god for his pite R. ¹⁹ And þus T.

²⁰ this R. ²¹ Rempston R. ²² in þe R. ²³ yn Themys om. T.

²⁴ þat TR. ²⁵ vnto T. ²⁶ Toure T.

pese worthi lordez, and dede ham moche reuerence & gret worschip.

¶ And panne þei were brouzt to a toun þat is¹ callid London yn Denmark, and pere was this lady weddid and sacryd to þe King of Denmark with moche solempnite; and pere was sche crowned 4 Quene of Denmark, Norway and Swethyn; & pere was made a riale fest. ¶ And whanne þis Fest and mariag was do & endid, þeze lordez² and ladiez tokyn her leve of the³ King and Quene, and comyn home ayen yn-to Engelonde yn hast, þanked be Ihesu! 8

¶ And yn the viij zere of King Harrye³ regne, per was a man þat was clepid 'þe walsch clerke,' and⁴ apelyd a knyzt þat me callyd Ser Perciual Sowdon, of treson; and pere þey were ioyned to fyt vnto þe deth, within⁵ þe listez, & þe day,⁶ tyme and place 12 assigned and lymytid to be do and ende, yn Smythfelde. At þe which day þe ij persone³ comyn yn to þe felde, and fouztyn soore and myztili togadris; but at þe⁷ last þe knyzt ouercame þe clerke, and made hym yelde⁸ creaunde of his fals plechement þat he sayde 16 on hym; and þan was he dispoyled of his armeour and drawe out of þe ffelde to Tyburne; & pere was he hangyd, and þe knizt take to grace, and was a gode man.

¶ And yn þis same yere, Ser Henry,⁹ erle¹⁰ of Northombirlande, 20 & þe Lorde Bardolf, comyn out of Scotlande, yn preiudice & destruccion of King Harry; wherfore pay of the Northcuntre arysyn vp,¹¹ and¹² smytyn of her hedis, and¹³ sent þe hed of the Erle, and þe¹⁴ quarter of þe lorde Bardolfe, to London; and pere 24 þey were set vp on þe brygge, for fals treson þat pay had purposed ayens þe Kinge.

¶ And yn þe ix yere of King Harre³ regne, was Ser Edmu[n]de¹⁵ Holonde,¹⁶ Erle of Kent, made¹⁷ Amerel of Engelonde, for to kepe 28 þe see. And he went to þe see with mony ryalle¹⁸ schippis, þat were full well arayed and¹⁹ enarmyd with mony a gode man of arme³ & of²⁰ archers, and of gode defence of²¹ warre yn þe Kinges name of Engelonde; and so he londit at þe²² laste yn þe costes of 32

¹ men T. me R. ² leaf 121, back. ³ the om. T. ⁴ and he TR.

⁵ in T. with ynne R. with Kk. ⁶ day and T. ⁷ þe om. T.

⁸ yelde him TR. ⁹ ser henry om. T. ¹⁰ þe Erle T.

¹¹ vpon hem T. vp on ham R.

¹² and faught with hem and sconffitid hem and took hem and T. and fauzt with ham and scomffitid ham & took ham & R.

¹³ and quartrid her bodies and T. and quartred hir bodies and R.

¹⁴ a TR. ¹⁵ Edmū Kk. ¹⁶ of holonde T. ¹⁷ was maad T.

¹⁸ a roiaff T. ¹⁹ and apparellid and T. and appareiled & R.

²⁰ of om. TR. ²¹ in T. ²² þe om. T.

Brittaigne, in þe Ile of Bryak, with alle his peple; and he besegid þe castel and assauted it. and pai with-ynne¹ with-stode hym with grete defence & streinþe, and anon let sette his ordynaunce; & yn
 4 þe leyngethe of a gune com a quarel, & smot þe gode Erle yn þe hed, & þere he cauȝt his deth-wownde, but yet þei left not tylle pay hadde gotyn þe Castell and alle þat was þere-ynne; and þere þis gode lorde deid: on whose soule God haue mercy.² ¶ And þanne
 8 his³ meyne comyn hom ayen in-to Engelond with þe Erleȝ body, and was buried among his auncetreyȝ riȝt worthily. ¶ And yn þe same yere was a gret frost⁴ yn Engelond, þat dured xv wokeȝ.

¶ And yn þe⁵ x yere of King Harryes regne þe iiij^{the}, come þe
 12 Senescall of Henaud, with oþer meyne, yn-to Englonȝ, for⁶ to seke⁷ auntreȝ, and to gete hym⁸ worschip yn dedis of armeȝ, boþe on horsbak and on foote, of al maner poyntis of⁹ dedis of armeȝ and¹⁰ warre. And þe Senescal Chalanged þe Erle of Somerset; and
 16 þe Erle delyuerde hym manfully yn al his chalangeȝ, and put his aduersari to þe worsse yn alle poyntis, & wanne hym þere grete worschyp and degre¹¹ of the ffeelde. ¶ And þe next day come yn to þe ffeelde a noþer man of armeȝ of the Seneschallys party; &
 20 ayens hym com Ser Richard of Arundell, knyȝt; and þe¹² Henauder hed¹³ þe bettyr of hym¹⁴ on fote in on poynt, for he broȝt hym on his kne. ¶ And þe thrid day come yn¹⁵ a noþer man of armeȝ yn to the felde; and ayens hym Ser Iohn Cornewayle, knyȝt; and manly
 24 & knyȝtly quyt hym yn alle maner of poynteȝ ayens his aduersary, and had þe bettyr yn the felde. ¶ And¹⁶ þe iiij day come yn¹⁷ a noþer man of armys of Henaude, yn¹⁸ þe felde; and ayens hym com Ser Iohn Cheynees sone,¹⁹ and manly quyt hym ayens his aduersary,
 28 for he caste bothe²⁰ hors & man into þe ffeelde; and þe King, for his manhode at þat tyme, dubbyd hym knyȝt. ¶ And þe v day þer com a noþer man of armeȝ of²¹ Henaudeȝ party yn-to þe ffeel[d]e; and to hym come Iohn²² Stewarde, squyer, and manfully quyt hym þere yn
 32 al maner of poyntis, and hadde þe bettir. ¶ And þe vj day come a nother Henauder; & to hym come William Porter, squier; and manfully he quitte²³ hym yn þe ffeelde, and hadde þe bettir,²³ and þe

¹ with-ynne om. T. ² mercy Amen TR. ³ his TR. þis Kk.

⁴ forst Kk. ⁵ þe same T. ⁶ for om. TR. ⁷ seke T. seihe Kk.

⁸ hym om. T. ⁹ and T. & R. ¹⁰ and of TR. ¹¹ and þe gree T.

¹² þe he R. ¹³ hed om. R. ¹⁴ leaf 122. ¹⁵ yn om. T.

¹⁶ And on TR. ¹⁷ yn om. T. ¹⁸ into TR. ¹⁹ his sone T.

²⁰ bothe om. TR. ²¹ of þe TR. ²² sir Iohn T. to him yn sir Iohn R.

²³—²¹ quytte him and hadde þe bettir in þe ffeelde and T. him and hadde þe bettir in þe felde R.

King dubbid hym kniȝt þe same time. ¶ And þe vij day come a noþer Henauder yn-to¹ the felde; & to hym come Iohn Standisch, Squyer, and manly quit² hym on his aduersary, and hadde þe bettir yn þe ffelde; and þere þe King dubbyd hym kniȝt þe same 4 day. ¶ And yn³ þe same day come a noþer Henauder; and to⁴ hym come a squier of Gasquoyne; and⁵ proutly & manly he quitte hym on his aduersarye, and þere hadde þe bettir, and anon þe King dubbyd hym kniȝt. 8

¶ And⁶ þe viij day com yn-to þe ffelde ij men of armes of Henaude; and to ham come ij soudiers of Calis þat were breþryn, y⁷Clepyd þe Boroughez; and welle and manly quit hem on hir aduersarieȝ, and hadde þe bettir yn þo⁸ felde; and þus endid þis 12 Challenged with moche worschep. And þe King, at þe reuencens of the straungers, made a grete fleest, and yaff rych yeftis; and pay tokyn hir leue, and went whom yn-to hir cuntre.

¶ And yn þe xj ȝere of King Hen[r]yeȝ regne þe iiij^{the}, þere was 16 a gret Batayle yn⁹ Smythfelde betwene ij squiers; þat on¹⁰ men callid Glowcestre, and¹¹ þat was¹² appelaunt, and¹³ Arture, þat was¹⁴ defendaunt; and welle and manfully fouȝtyn togadrys longe tyme. And the King, for hir manfulnesse and of his grace, toke 20 hir quarell yn-to his honde, and mad ham go¹⁵ out of þe felde at¹⁶ ones; and¹⁷ so þay were dyvyded of hir bataile; and þe King yaf ham grace.

And yn¹⁸ þe xij ȝere of King Henryȝ regne þe iiij^{the}, Rys ap¹⁹ 24 die, a Squier of Walis þat was a rebell & a ryser,²⁰ and²¹ supporter of Owen of Glyndore þat dede moche destrucción to þe pepil yn²² Walis, was²³ take, & brouȝt to London. And þere he come afore þe Iustize, and was dampned for his treson; & þan he was leyde on²⁴ 28 an hirdyl, and so draw forth to Tyburne prowghe the cite, and þere was hangyd, & lete doune ayen, and his hed smytyn of; and his bodi quarterde and sent to foure towneȝ, and his hedde sette on London Brygge. 32

¶ And the²⁵ xiiij ȝere of King Henryȝ regne,²⁶ deyed

¹ to om. T. ² he quytte TR. ³ on TR. ⁴ vnto T.

⁵ þat T. ⁶ And in T. ⁷ y om. TR. ⁸ þe TR.

⁹ doon in T. do in R. ¹⁰ on om. R. ¹¹ and om. R.

¹² was þe TR. ¹³ and þat oþer T. ¹⁴ was þe TR. ¹⁵ to go T.

¹⁶ boþe at T. ¹⁷ and om. R. ¹⁸ þanne T. yn om. R.

¹⁹ rose vp oon T. of R. ²⁰ & a ryser om. T. ²¹ and also T.

²² of T. ²³ Walis and at laste he was T. ²⁴ vpon TR.

²⁵ in þe T. ²⁶ of King harries T. of king henrieȝ Regne þe iiij R. of his regne Kk.

Ser Iohn Beauford, Erle¹ of Somerset, þat was ²Capteyne of Caleys, and was beryed at þe Abbey of Tour-hille: on whose soule God haue mercy! Amen! And yn þe same yere þe Lorde Thomas, ⁴King Harryez sone, wedded þe Countesse of Somerset. And þe³ same yere come þe ambasceturs of Fraunce yn-to Engelonde, from þe Duk of Burgoyne, vnto the prince of Engelonde, King Harryez sone and his⁴ heire, for help & socour of men of armez and archers ⁸ayens the Duk of Orlyauns. And he sent forth⁵ þe Erle of Arundell, Ser Gylbarde Vmfrauyll, ⁶Erle of Kyme, and þe Lorde of Cobham, Ser Iohn Oldecastell, and mony oþer gode knyztis, and worthi squyers and men of armez, and gode archers, ouyr see⁷ yn-to ¹²Fraunce, and comyn to⁸ Parys, to þe Duk of Burgoyne, þere⁹ he resceyvyd and welcomyd þese¹⁰ Englisch lordis and alle hir meyne. ¶ And þanne it was do hym to wete þat þe Duk of Orlyaunce was come to Senclowe, faste by Parys, with a grete noumbre of men of ¹⁶armys & arblasters; and þedir¹¹ went our Englisch men, and fouztyñ *with* ham, and gotyn þe brygge of Senclowe; & þere þay slow mony¹² of the Frensch men and Armenackez, and þe reme-naunt fledde, and¹³ wolde no lengir abide. And oure Englysch ²⁰men comyn ayen to Paris; & þere þay tokyn hir leue of the Duke, and comen hom ayen yn-to Engelonde yn saafte, & he¹⁴ yaf ham gret yeftis. ¶ Anon folowyng, the Duk of Orlyaunce sent ambas-setours yn-to Engelond, to King Harry þe iiij^{the}, besechyng hym of ²⁴his help & socour ayens his dedely enmye, þe Duke of Burgoyne. And þan þe King made Thomas, his sone, Duke of Clarence, & his oþer sone John¹⁵ Duke of Bedforde, and his oþer sone Vmfray Duk of Gloucestre; & Ser Thomas Beauforde, Erle of Somerset¹⁶; & þe ²⁸Duke of Awmarle he¹⁷ made Duk of Yorke. ¶ And þan þe King ordeyned his sone Thomas, and¹⁸ Beauford, Erle of Somerset,¹⁹ and Sir Iohn Cornewayle, and meny oþer lordis, kniȝtis²⁰ & ²¹squyers, men²² of armez and²³ archers, to go ouyr²⁴ yn-to Fraunce, yn

¹ þe Erle TR. ² leaf 122, back. ³ þis T. in this R.

⁴ his om. T. ⁵ And thanne ther went ouer þe see T.

⁶ vmfrauyll om. T. ⁷ wente ouer þe see T. þe se R. ⁸ into T.

⁹ and þere TR. ¹⁰ welcomyd wele and goodly these T.

¹¹ tho T. ¹² moche peple T.

¹³ and wente and T. ¹⁴ and þe duke T. Duk R.

¹⁵ sone Iohn TR. John om. Kk. ¹⁶ Dorsett T. Dorset R.

¹⁷ þe whichche T. ¹⁸ and om. TR. ¹⁹ dorsett T. Dorset R.

²⁰ lordis and many oþer knyghtis T. and knyztis R.

²¹ & om. R. ²² and men TR.

²³ and many oþer T. ²⁴ to gone ouer þe see T. to go over þe se R.

helpyng & streynghyng of the Duke of Orlyauunce. ¶ And pese worthi lordez, with alle his retynu, schippyd at Hampton, and sayled ouyr yn-to Normandy, and landed at Hoggez. And pere mette with ham þe lorde Hambe, at hir londyng, with vij M¹ men 4 of armes of Frenschmen¹; and alle were put to flyzt, and takyn of hem vij C men of armes & iiij C hors, *with-out* þo pat were slayn yn the felde. And so þei ryden forth prou3out Fraunce, and token Castell & tounez, & slowz mych pepil of Frenschmen pat with-stode 8 ham, and tokyn meny prysoners as pay roode; and so þai passyd² forth til þay comyn to Burdeux; and pere pay restid ham a while, and sette þe cuntre yn pees & rest tyll þe vyntage were redy to sayle; and þanne þe Duk with his mayne com hom yn-to Engeland 12 yn saafte, þankyð be God! ¶ And yn þe same yere was þe Kingis coyne³ chaynged prou3-out Engeland, by þe King and his counsel, pat is to say, þe noble, half noble, & ferthyng of goolde.

¶ And þe ⁴xiiij yere of King Harrye3 regne þe ⁵iiij^{the}, he lete 16 make galaiez of warre, for he hadde hopid to haue past þe grete se, and so forth to Ierusalem, and pere to haue endid his lyf. but God vised hym⁵ sone aftir with Infirmyteez and grete sekenessez, þat he myzt not wel endure no while, so feruentli he was y⁶tak. And he 20 was⁷ yn Bedde at Westmynstre yn a faire Chaumbre; and as he lay abedde, he axed his Chaumbirleyn what he⁸ callyd that Chaumbyr þat he lay-ynne: he answerde and sayde 'Ierusalem.' þanne⁹ he sayde, his prophecie sayde 'he¹⁰ schulde make an ende 24 and deye yn Ierusalem.' and þan¹¹ he made hym redy vnto God, & disposed alle his wille, and sone aftir he deyed, and was caryed be water fro Westmynstre yn a barge to Feueresham, and fro þennes to Caunturburye be londe, with moche torchelyzt brennyng, yn-to 28 þe Priorie¹² of Crichirch, and pere he was worthili entered & beried besyde saint Thomas shryne of Cawnturburye. And þus endid pis¹³ worthi King Henry abowte myd Lent Sonday, in þe yere of our Lorde Ihesu Crist, M⁺CCCCxiiij,¹⁴ on whos soule God haue 32 mercy! Amen!

¹ frensshmen þre sergeauntes of armes with him T. ² riden R.

³ yeer þe kingez coyn was R.

⁴ leaf 123.

⁵ him so TR.

⁶ y om. TR.

⁷ take and brought T. was brouzt R. ⁸ thei T. þey R.

⁹ and þanne T. and thanne R. ¹⁰ þat he T.

¹¹ þan om. T.

¹² abbey T.

¹³ the T. þe R.

¹⁴ and xiiij T.

And aftir þis King Henri, regnyd his sone Henry, þe v^{the}
aftir þe conquest.¹ *Capitulum CC.xliij.*²

And aftir þe deth of King Harry þe iiij^{the}, regnid King Harry
4 his sone, þat was born at Mummoth yn Walis, þat was³ a worthi
King, and a gracious man, and a gret conquerour. ¶ And yn þe
firste yere of his regne, for gret loue & gedenesse, he sent to þe
ffreris of Langeley, þere as his Fadir hadde do burye King Richard
8 þe ij^{de}, & let take vp his body ayen out of the erthe, and dede
bring hym to Westmynstre, yn a ryal chare couert with blak
veluet, & baners of diuers armeȝ alle aboute. & al þe horsses
drawyng þe chare were trappid yn black, & bete with diuers armeȝ,
12 and mony⁴ a torch brennyng, by alle þe wey, til he come to
Westmystre. And þere he lette make for hym a ryalle & a
solempne terement, and buried hym be Quene Anne his wiff, as
his owne desire was, on þe firther syde of Seynt Edwardȝ schryne,
16 yn the Abbey of Saint Petris of Westmynstre : on whose soule God
haue mercy ! Amen !

¶ And yn þis same yere weren⁵ certeyne of Lollardeȝ and fals
heritikis takine, þat hadde pu[r]sued, þrouȝ fals treson, to haue
20 slayn þe⁶ King, and for to haue destroyed alle þe clergy of þis
Reme. & þai myȝt haue hadde her fals purpos, but oure Lorde God
wolde not suffre it ; for yn hast þe⁷ King hadde warnyng þerof, & of alle
hir fals ordinaunce & worchyng, and come sodenly with his power
24 to Saint Johnes-without-Smythfelde ; and anon þei tokyn a certeyn
of þe Lollardeȝ & fals heritikeȝ, and brouȝt hem⁸ vnto þe Kingis
presens, & þere þei⁹ tolde all her fals purpos & ordinaunce, how þey
wolde haue do & wroȝt, & þay myȝt haue regned &¹⁰ hadde her
28 wyll, and þere þei tolde which were her captens & her¹¹ gouernours.
& þan þe King commaunded ham to þe Tour of London ; & þanne
þey took moo of ham, bope within þe cite & without, ¹²and sent ham
to Newgate and to¹³ bothe¹⁴ Countieȝ. And þan þere¹⁵ were [þei]
32 brouȝt yn¹⁶ examynacion before þe clergy and þe Kingis Iusticeȝ ;
& þere þei were conuicte of¹⁷ hir fals heresye, & dampned before þe
Iusticeȝ for hir fals treson : & þus¹⁸ was her Iugement, þat þay

¹ regnyd Harry his sone T. ² CC.xliij om. T. CC.xlv R.

³ Walis and he was T. ⁴ many TR. moy Kk. ⁵ weren a TR.

⁶ oure TR. ⁷ oure T. þey R. ⁸ hem om. T. ⁹ þei om. T.

¹⁰ and haue T. ¹¹ her om. T. ¹² leaf 123, back. ¹³ into T.

¹⁴ bothe the T. ¹⁵ thei T. ¹⁶ into T.

¹⁷ thei were committed before þe clergie for T. conuict befor þe clergie for R.

¹⁸ þis T. this R.

schulde be drawe fro þe Tour of London, prou3 London, vnto seint Gyle3 felde; & þere to be hangid & brent on¹ þe galows. ¶ And also was² take Ser Roger Acton, kni3t, boþe for Lollardye & eke for treson ayens þe King and þe Reme. and he come afore þe⁴ clergie, and was conuict of³ his⁴ lewed Lollardye, and⁵ ⁶before þe Iustize ydampned to be brent,⁶ &⁷ to be draw fro þe Tour of London prou3 þe cite to Saint Gyle3 felde, & to⁸ be hanged & to be⁹ brent. 8

¶ And þe¹⁰ ij yere¹¹ of King Harrye3 regne¹² þe v^{the}, he hilde a counsel of alle þe lordez of the Reme at Westmynstre; and þere he put ham þe¹³ demaunde, & prayed¹⁴ hem of hir godenesse and of her gode counsel¹⁵ to schewe hym, as touchynge þe titile &¹⁶ ry3t þat¹² he hadde to Normandy, Gasquoyne & Guyenne, þe which þe King of Fraunce withhilde hym¹⁷ wrongefully and vnri3tfully, þe wh[i]che his auncetrez before hym hadde holde be trewe titill of conquest, & ri3t heritage. ¶ The which Normandy, Gasquoyne & Guyenne, þe¹⁶ gode King Edward of Wyndesore, and his¹⁸ ansetrye3 before hym, hadde holde alle hir lyve3 tyme. And his Lordez 3af hym counsel to sende ambassetours vnto þe King of Fraunce and his counsel, þat¹⁹ he schulde yelde vp to hym his ri3t heritage, þat is to²⁰ say, Normandie, 20 Gasqueyne, & Guyenne, þe²¹ which his predecessoris had y²²holde afore hym, or ellis he wolde it wyne with dunt of swyrde yn schort tyme, with help²³ of Ihesu. ¶ And þanne þe Dolfynne of Fraunce answeryd to our²⁴ ambassetours, & sayde yn²⁵ þis manere: 24 þat þe²⁶ King was ouyr yonge &²⁷ tendir of age to make eny warre ayens hym, and was not like yette to be no gede (*sic*) warryor to²⁸ make such a conqueste þere vpon hym; &²⁹ yn scorne & despite he sent to hym a tonne fulle of teneys-ballis, be-cause he schulde³⁰ haue sumwhat 28 to³¹ play with-alle, for hym & for his³² lordez; & þat become hym bettir þanne to mantayne eny warre, he sayd.³³ ¶ And þanne our³⁴

¹ in R. ² ther was T. ³ was committed for T. for R.

⁴ his clergie and TR. ⁵ and om. R.

⁶⁻⁶ to be brent and dampnyd bifore the Iustices T. Iustice to be brent & dampned R.

⁷ and om. T. ⁸ þere R. ⁹ to be om. TR. ¹⁰ in the R.

¹¹ And in the yeer T. ¹² regne om. R. ¹³ this TR.

¹⁴ praide and bisoughte T. praide & besou3te R.

¹⁵ counceile and good wille T. counseth and goodwill R. ¹⁶ and the T.

¹⁷ hym om. TR. ¹⁸ his TR. hir Kk. ¹⁹ and þat TR.

²⁰ is to TR. is Kk. ²¹ Gascoigne and Gyene and Normandie þe T.

²² y om. TR. ²³ þe helpe T. þe help R. ²⁴ oure T. our R. om. Kk.

²⁵ on T. ²⁶ oure T. ²⁷ and to T. ²⁸ to do and to T. and to R.

²⁹ And sumwhat T. ³⁰ wolde R. ³¹ forto T.

³² for his TR. for Kk. ³³ he sayd om. T. ³⁴ anon oure T.

lordez, þat were ambassetours, tokyn hir leue & comyn yn-to
Engelond ayen, & tolde þe Kinge and his Counsel of the vngodely
answere þat þay hadde of the Dolfyn, and of þe present þat he hadde ¹
⁴ sent vnto the Kinge. ¶ And whanne þe King hadde herde here
wordez, and the answeere of the Dolfyne, he was wondir sore
agrevyd, & ryzt evil payed towarde the Frenschmen and towarde þe
King & þe Dolfyn, and þouzt to venge hym apon hem as sone as
⁸ God wolde sende hym grace and myght; and anon lette ² make
tenysballis for the Dolfyn in alle þe haste þat þay myzte be maad, ³
& þat þei were harde & grete gunestonys, for þe Dolfyn to play
with-alle. ¶ And þanne anon þe King sent for alle his lordez, &
¹² hilde a gret ⁴ Counsel at Westmynstre, and tolde vnto hem þe
answere þat he ⁵ hadde of the Dolfyn, and of ⁶ his worthi present
to ⁷ hym and to ⁸ his lordez, to play with-alle. And þere þe King
and his lordez were accorded þat þay schulde be redy yn armys with
¹⁶ hir power, yn þe best aray þat myzt be, ⁹ and gete ¹⁰ men of armes
and archers, ¹¹ and alle oþer stuff þat longed þerto, ¹² & to be redy
with alle hir retynu to mete at Southhampton be Lammesse next
folouyng, without eny delaye; for the King ordeyned is ¹³ Naueye
²⁰ of schippe, with al maner stuff ¹⁴ & vitaille þat longid to such a
warriour, of al maner ordinaunce, ¹⁵ yn the hauen of Southhamton,
in ¹⁶ to þe nowmbir of iij^c xx^{ti} sayle. ¶ And þere fil ¹⁷ a grete deseje
& a foul myschif; for þer were iij lordez þat ¹⁸ þe King tryst moche
²⁴ ynne, þat, ¹⁹ for fals couetize purpozid ²⁰ þe Kingis deth, & þouzt to
haue slayn hym and alle his breþryn or he hadde take þe see, þe
which were named þus: Ser Richarde, þe Erle of Caumbrydge,
broþer to þe Duk of York; þe ij was þe Lord Scrope, Treserer of
²⁸ Engelond; þe iij was Ser Thomas Gray, knyzt, of the Northcuntre.
And þeze iij lordez afore sayde, for lucre of Moneye, had made
promis to þe Frenschmen to ²¹ haue slayne oure King and alle his
worthi brethryn, by a false trayne sodenly, ere þay hadde be war.
³² But God, of his gret grace, hylde his holy hand ouyr ham, & saued

¹ whiche he hadde T. þe whiche he hadde R. þat hadde Kk.

² he lete T. ³ maad TR. padde (sic) Kk. ⁴ leaf 124. ⁵ thei T.

⁶ of om. R. ⁷ that he sente to T. þat he sente to R. ⁸ to om. T.

⁹ be done T. be do R. ¹⁰ to gete T.

¹¹ archers þat myghte be gotten T. archers þat myzte be gotten R.

¹² longid toward it T. to it R. ¹³ þanne his T. ¹⁴ of stuff T.

¹⁵ of ordinauncis T. ¹⁶ in om. T.

¹⁷ And thanne felle ther T. And þanne fil þer R. ¹⁸ which þat TR.

¹⁹ ynne þat om. T. þat om. R.

²⁰ couetise þat þei hadde purposid & Iugid T. couetize þat þey hadde
purposed and iuged R. ²¹ forto TR.

hem from þis pavelous meyne. ¶ And for to haue do¹ þis, þei reseeyued of þe Frenschmen a mylyon of golde, þat² was þere oponly previde; and for þer fals treson þey were all iij Iuged vnto deth³; and þis was þe Iugement: þat þai schulde be ladde prou3 Hampton, 4 and without þe⁴ Northegate, þere to be hedid; & þus þai endide, for her fals couetyse and treson.

¶ Anon as þus⁵ was do, þe King and alle his meyne made hem redy, and wenton to schyppe, &⁶ sayled forth with xv^c schippe3, 8 and arryued with-ynne Sayne, at Kitcaws, vpon our Ladiez Evyn, þe⁷ Assumpcion, yn Normandye, with al his ordynaunce; & so went⁸ forth to Hareflyte, & besegid þe toun al aboute, by londe and⁹ by watir, and sent to þe capteyne, and bade hym delyuer þe 12 toun: and he saide, 'non¹⁰ he delyuerd hym, ne non he wolde to hym delyuer,¹¹ but bade hym do his beste.' ¶ And þan þe¹² King leyde his ordynaunce vnto þe toun, þat is for to saye, Gunnez, Engyne3,¹³ Tripgettis, & schet and cast vnto þe wallis & eke yn-to 16 þe toun, & caste down both tourez and toun, & layde ham vnto þe grounde: & þere¹⁴ he played at¹⁵ tenys with his harde gune-stone3 þat¹⁶ were withynne þe toun. ¶ Whanne þai schulde plai, þai songyn 'welawaye and alas þat¹⁷ eny suche tenye3-ballis were made,' 20 and cursed al þo þat warre beganne, & þe tyme þat¹⁸ þei were born. ¶ And on þe morow þe King dede crye at euery gate of þe toun, þat euery man schulde be redye, on þe morowe erlye to make assaute vnto þe toun. ¶ And Gilliam¹⁹ Bocher & Iohn Gaunt,²⁰ with 24 xij oper worthi burge3, comyn to þe King, and besouzt hym, of his ryall mageste & power, to²¹ withdrawe his malice and²² destruction þat he dede vnto hem, & besouzt hym of viij dayez respite and trewez, yef eny rescu myzt come vnto hem, and ellis to yelde vp þe 28 toun vnto hym, with alle her gode3. ¶ And þan þe king sent forth þe Capteyne, and kept þe Remenaunt stille with hym. And þe lorde Gancort went fforth to Rone yn alle hast, vnto þe Dolfyn, for²³ help & socour; but þer was non, ne no maner rescu²⁴; for þe 32 Dolfyn wolde not abyde. ¶ And þus þis Capteyne come ageyne to²⁵

¹ þo R. ² and þat R. ³ the deeth T. ⁴ þe om. R.

⁵ this T. þis R. ⁶ and token and T. ⁷ þe om. T.

⁸ wente him T. ⁹ and eek T. ¹⁰ that noon T. ¹¹ yelde TR.

¹² oure T. ¹³ Engynes and T. engyne3 and R. ¹⁴ þere om. T.

¹⁵ at the T. at þe R. ¹⁶ to hem that T.

¹⁷ that euer T. þat evir R. ¹⁸ that euer T. þat euer R.

¹⁹ William T. And thanne William R. ²⁰ Grannt R.

²¹ leaf 124, back ²² and his T. & his R. ²³ forto haue T.

²⁴ reson R. ²⁵ vnto TR.

þe King, and yelde vp þe toun, and delyverde hym þe keye3. And þan he callyd his vncle, þe Erle of Dorset, and made hym Capteyne of the toun¹ of Hareflete, & delyuered hym þe keie3, and bade hym
4 go put out alle þe Frensch peple, both man, womman and chylde, & stuffe þe toun² with Englisch men. ¶ And þan þe King sent yn to Engelonde,³ þat what crafti man wolde come þidir, & ynhabit hym þere ynne þe toun, he scholde have hous and housholde to
8 hym & to his heyre3 for eyrmore. And þidir went mony dyuers Marchaunte3 & Crafti men, & inhabited ham þere, to streynth þe toun, & weryn welcome. ¶ And whenne þe King saw þis, þat hit was⁴ welle stoffed both of vitaille & of men, þis worthi Prynce
12 & King toke his leve, & went hym to Caleys warde by londe. ¶ And þe Frensch men herde of his komyng, and⁵ pouzt to stoppe his way, þat he scholde not passe þat way; & yn hast broken alle þe brygges þere eny passage was for hors & man, yn-so-moche þere⁶
16 myzt no man passe ouyr þe see Ryuers, noþer on hors ne on foote, but yef he schulde be drounde. ¶ Wherefore our⁷ King, with alle his peple, went & souu3te his way fer vp to⁸ Paris warde; & þere was alle þe ryal power of Fraunce redy to yef hym batayle, and to
20 destroy al his pepyl; but God⁹ almy3ti was his gide, and saued hym and alle his peple,¹⁰ and withstode alle¹¹ his enymys purpos, þankyð be God, þat so sau3d¹² his owne knyzt & King yn his riztfull tytyl! ¶ And¹³ our King saw¹⁴ þe multitude & nowmbre of
24 his enymys to withstonde his way & for to yeue hym bataile, þanne þe King, with a meke hert and a gode spiryt, lyfte vp his hande3 to Almy3ti God,¹⁵ besechyng hym of¹⁶ help & socour, and þat dai to saue his trew seruaunte3. ¶ And þanne our King gadryd alle his
28 lorde3 togadir,¹⁷ and oþer pepil aboute hym, and bade hem alle to be of¹⁸ gode chere, for þei schulde haue a¹⁹ fayre daye and a gracious victori, and þe bettir of al hir²⁰ enymys; and prayed hem alle to make hem redy vnto þe batayle; for he wolde rapere be ded þat

¹ towne that is to seie T.

² stuffid this towne of Harflete T.

³ Englund and dide crie in euery good towne of Englund T. Engelonde and dede crie in euery good town of engelonde R.

⁴ þat hit was T. saw þat it was R. þat is Kk.

⁵ thei T. ⁶ þat ther T. þat þer R. ⁷ þe R. ⁸ ferre vnto T.

⁹ god that is T. ¹⁰ meynnee T. meyne R. ¹¹ alle om. TR.

¹² that sau3d so T. saued so R. ¹³ And thanne TR.

¹⁴ king biholding and seyng T. beholdinge and seyng R.

¹⁵ god and TR. ¹⁶ of his TR. ¹⁷ togadir om. TR.

¹⁸ of TR. a Kk. ¹⁹ haue a TR. schulde a Kk. ²⁰ his TR.

day, in batayle or yn felde,¹ þan be² take of his enymys; for he wolde nevir put þe rem of Engeland to no Rawnson for his persone. ¶ And þe Duk of Yorke fill on his³ kne, and besauzt þe King of a bone, þat he wolde graunte hym þat day þe vawnt-ward yn his 4 batayle: and þe King graunted hym his asking, and sayde, “gramarcy, Cosyn of Yorke!” and prayed hym to make hym redye. ¶ And þanne he bade euery man to⁴ orden hym a stake of tre, and⁵ scharp both⁶ endis, þat þe stake myzt be pyght yn⁷ the 8 erthe a-slop, þat hir enymyez schulde not ouyr-ryde hem,—for þat was hir fals purpos,—and arayed hem al⁸ þere for⁹ to ouyr-ryde our meyne at þe first comyng of ham sodeynly yn þe first bront.

¶ And alle nyzt before þe bataile, þe Frenschmen made mony 12 grete fires, and moche revell with hontynge, and¹⁰ played our King and his lordez at þe dys, and an archer for¹¹ a blanke of hir moneye; for þei wende hadde¹² be heyrez.

[*The Battle of Agincourt.*]

¶ The morow¹³ aros, þe day gan spryng, and þe King, be gode 16 avis, lette arme¹⁴ his bataile and¹⁵ wyngesz, and charged euery man to kepe hym hoole togadir, & prayed hem al to be of gode chere. And whanne þay were redy, he askid what tyme of þe day it was, & þay sayde ‘pryme.’ ¶ “Thanne,” said our King, “nowe is gode 20 tyme, for alle Engeland prayeth for vs; and þefore be of gode chere, & lette vs go to our iorney.” And þanne he sayde with an hygh voyce: ¶ “In þe name of Almyzti God and¹⁶ Saynt George, avaunt banarer! and Saynt George, þis day þyn help!” 24

¶ And þanne þeze Frenschmen come prikkynɡ down as þei wolde haue ouyr-rydyn alle oure meyne; but God and our archers made hem sone to stomble; for our archers schet neuyr arowe amys, but it¹⁷ perished and brougt to grounde man and hors¹⁸; for þey 28 schet þat day for a wager; and our stakez made hem top ouyr terve, eche on oper, þat þay lay on hepis ij spere lengthe of heighthe. And our King, with his meyne and with¹⁹ men of armez, evir

¹ wolde rathir that day be deed in the feld T. þe feeld R.

² to be T. ³ his om. T. ⁴ leaf 125.

⁵ of tre and om. T. ⁶ at bothe R. ⁷ into TR.

⁸ hem aȝ T. hem alle R. al Kk. ⁹ for om. T.

¹⁰ and shoutyng and T. and showtinge and R.

¹¹ all for T. al for R. ¹² all hadde TR. ¹³ morne T. morn R.

¹⁴ araie TR. ¹⁵ and his TR. ¹⁶ and of R. ¹⁷ that it T.

¹⁸ hors and man T. ¹⁹ with om. R.

¹layde doune; for he most fyt¹ with his owne hondez; and our² gode archers lackid³ on⁴ arowes, and⁵ layde on with stakez. ¶ And þus Almyzti God and Saint George brouzt our enymys to grounde, and
4 3af vs þat day þe victori; & þere were slayn of Frensch-men þat day yn þe ffelde of Agyncourt, moo þan a⁶ xj M^t, without prysoners þat were take. & þere were nowmbred þat day of Frenschmen yn the felde, mo þan vj xx M^t, and of Englyschmen nouzt vij M^t; but God
8 þat day fauht for vs.

¶ And aftir come⁷ þer tydynges to þe⁸ King, þat þere was a new Batayle of Frenschmen ordeyned, redy to stele on hem, and comyn towarde hym. Thanne⁹ anon þe¹⁰ King lette crye þat euery
12 man scholde sle his prysoner þat he hadde take; and anon arrayed his bataile ayen redy for¹¹ to fyt with þe Frenschmen. ¶ Whanne þay say þat our men killyd down¹² her prysoners, þanne withdrow þay¹³ ham, and brak hir batayle and alle hir araye; and þus our
16 King (as a worthi conqueror) hadde þat day þe victory yn the ffelde of Agyncourt yn Pycardye.

¶ And þanne our King returned ayen þere þe Batayle was, to se what pepil was ded of Englyschmen, and yef eny were hurt þat
20 myht be holpe; and þere were ded yn þe ffelde, on þer party¹⁴ þe Duk of Barry, þe Duk of Launson,¹⁵ þe Duk of Braban, the Erle of Nauerne, þe Chief counstable of Fraunce, and viij oper erlez, and þe Archebischope of Saumte, and of gode Barons C¹⁶ and moo,
24 and of worthi kniȝtis of grete alyauunce of Cote armyours, M^t C.¹⁷ And of Englyschmen was ded þat day, þe¹⁸ Duk of Yorke and þe Erle of Suffolk; and of alle oper of Englisch¹⁹ Nacyon þere were not ded passyng xxvj bodiez, thanked be God! And pis batayle was
28 on a Friday, þe²⁰ which was Crispyn & Crispinianeȝ day, yn the moneth of October. And anon þe King commawnded to bery ham, and the Duke of York to be caried forth with ham, and þe Erle of Suffolke. And þere were tak²¹ prisoners, þe Duk of Orluance, þe
32 Duk of Burbone, þe Erle of Vandom, þe Erle of Ewe, þe Erle of Richmond, and Ser Bursigaunt, Marchal of Fraunce. And mony

¹⁻¹ leide downe for him bifett to fighte that day T. laide down for him fil to fighte R.

² our om. T. ³ þat lackeden T. ⁴ on om. T. ⁵ and om. T.

⁶ a om. TR. ⁷ that come T. ⁸ oure T. our R.

⁹ And T. Thanne om. R. ¹⁰ oure T. our R. ¹¹ for om. TR.

¹² a downe T. ¹³ thei withdrewe T. ¹⁴ on þer party om. TR.

¹⁵ Alaunsonn T. ¹⁶ an C T. ¹⁷ A M^t and v C T.

¹⁸ þe good T. þe gode R. ¹⁹ leaf 125, back. ²⁰ þe om. T.

²¹ take om. T.

oper worthi lordez were take yn pis batayle of Agyncourt, and brouzt vnto þe toun of Caleys, and so ouyr se¹ with þe King yn-to² Engeland, and londid at Douer, yn Kent, with alle his prisoners in saafte,—þankid be Ihesu!—and so cam to³ Caunturbury, and offred⁴ at Saint Thomas Schryne; and so roode forth prouz Kent þe next way to Eltham, & pere he restid hym tyll he wolde come to London. ¶ And þan þe Meire of London and þe Aldermen and⁴ þe Schereffes,⁵ with alle þe worþi Comeners and craftis, comyn to þe⁸ Blake-Heth, welle and worthilye arayed to welcome our Kyng with dyuers melodye, and⁶ þanke Allemyzty god of his gracious victory þat he hadde schewed to⁷ hym.

[*Henry V's Reception in London.*]

¶ And so þe King and his prysoners passyd forth by ham, til¹² he com vnto⁸ Seint Thomas watryng; and pere mette⁹ with hym alle þe Religious with precession, and welcomyd hym; and so¹⁰ þe King come ridynge¹¹ with his prysoners prouz þe cite of London, where pere¹² was schewyd mony a faire syzt at alle þe Conditez and¹⁶ at þe Cros yn Chepe, as yn heuynly aray, angelis,¹³ archaungelis, Patriarchus, prophetis,¹⁴ and virginis with dyuers melodiez, sensyng¹⁵ and syngyng to welcome our King, and alle conditus¹⁶ rennyng wyne. And þe King passyd forthe vnto Saint Paulez; and pere¹⁷ met with hym xiiij Bischopez, reuersed and mitryd, with Censers to welcome þe King, and sungun for his gracious victori *Te deum laudamus*. And pere þe King offred, &¹⁸ roode forth¹⁹ to Westminster; and þe²⁰ Maire toke leue²¹ of þe King, and rode hoom²⁴ ayen.

¶ And yn þe thrydde yere of King Henryez regne þe v^{tho}, Came þe Emperour of Almayne, King of Rome & of Hungary, yn-to Engelande, and so to þe cite of London. And þe Maire, aldermen,²² and schereviz,²³ with þe²⁴ worthi craftis of London, be þe Kingz commaundement, met with hym on the Blake-Heth yn þe best aray þat þay cowthe, on hors bak; & pere þay welcomyd hym, and brouzt hym to London with moche honour and grete reuerence.³²

¹ þe sea T. ² king of T. ³ vnto T. ⁴ & R. and om. Kk.

⁵ london with the sherefis and þe Aldirmen T. ⁶ & to R.

⁷ for TR. ⁸ to T. ⁹ þei mette T. ¹⁰ so om. T. ¹¹ MS. adyngc.

¹² that ther T. ¹³ of Aungels TR. ¹⁴ prophetis om. R.

¹⁵ of sensyng T. ¹⁶ þe Condites T. þe conditis R. ¹⁷ þanne T.

¹⁸ & took T. ¹⁹ forth om. T. ²⁰ thanne the T. þenne þe R.

²¹ his leue T. ²² and the aldirnen T.

²³ with the sherefis T. and shereues R. shereviz Kk. ²⁴ and þe T.

And atte Seint Thomas watryng þere mette with hym the King and alle¹ his lordez yn gode aray. And þere was a worthi metyng betwene þe Emperour and þe King; & þere thay kussid togadrez,⁴ & braced ech othir; and þan² þe King toke þe Emperour be þe hande; & so þai come rydyng prouzt þe cite of London vnto Saint Poulez; and þere þay lyzte, and offred; and alle þe³ Bischopez stode reuersed, with censers yn here hondez, censyng. ¶ Thanne⁴ 8 þei tokyn hir hors, and ryden to⁵ Westmynstre; and þere the King loggyd the Emperoure yn his owne palis, & þere⁶ restid hym a grete while, and alle atte þe Kingis cost.

¶ And sone aftir come þe Duk of Holond yn-to Engelond, to⁷ 12 se þe Emperour, and to speke with hym and with þe King; and he was worthily reseceyved and loggyd yn the Bischopis In of Hely, and alle at þe Kinges cost. ¶ And whanne þe Emperoure hadde wel restid hym and sey þe lande yn dyuers partees, and knew þe 16 commoditees, þanne, be processe of tyme, he toke his leue of the King; but ere he went⁸ he was made Knyzt of the Gartir, & reseceyved and weryd þe lyuerey; and þanne he thanked þe King and alle⁹ his worthi lordez; and¹⁰ þe King & he went ouer þe see 20 to Calys, and abydyn þere longe tyme, to haue an onswere of the Frensch King. And atte þe¹¹ last hit come, and plesyd hym rizt nought; and¹² þe Emperour toke his leue of the King, and passyd forth yn Goddis name; and oure King come ouyr ayen yn-to 24 Engelond, yn alle þe hast þat he myzt; and þat was on Saynt Lukes eue þat he come to Lambeth; and on the Monday next folowyng he come yn¹³ to the parlement atte Westmynstre. And yn þis same yere was a gret derth of Corne yn Engelond, but,¹⁴— 28 thankyd be God!—hit lastid not long.

How the King went þe secunde tyme yn-to Normandy; & of þe sege of Roone.¹⁵ Capitulum CC xlv.¹⁶

And yn þe forth yere of King Harryez regne¹⁷ þe fifthe, he 32 hilde his parlement at Westmynstre yn the begynnyng of¹⁸ moneth of October, and lastid vnto þe purificacion of our Lady þanne next folowyng. And þere was grawnted vnto þe King, to inaynetayne

¹ the kyng and alle T. hym alle Kk. ² thanne T. þan om. R.

³ þe om. R. ⁴ And þanne T. And þenne R. ⁵ leaf 126.

⁶ þere he TR. ⁷ to come and T. ⁸ þede T. yede R.

⁹ alle om. T. ¹⁰ And thanne TR. ¹¹ þe om. T. ¹² And thanne T.

¹³ yn om. R. ¹⁴ but om. T. ¹⁵ How the king . . . Roone om. TR.

¹⁶ CC xlvj R. ¹⁷ regne om. T. ¹⁸ of the T. of þe R.

his warres, bothe of¹ *spiritualte* & *temporalte*, an hole taxe and a dyme.² ¶ And³ anon þe King prayed al his lordez to make hem redy to streynth hym yn his ryzt; and anon he lette make a new retynnu, and charged alle men to be redye at Hampton yn þe⁴ 4 Whitson woke þanne next folowyng, without eny delay. ¶ And⁵ þe Kinge made þe Duke of Bedforde Protector & defender of his Reme of Engelond yn his absens, and charged hym to kepe his lawez, &⁶ mayntayne boþe⁷ *spiritualte* and⁸ *temporalte*. ¶ And⁸ whanne þe King hadde þus do, and sette alle þyng yn kinde, on Saint Markeȝ day, þat was þat tyme Hocwednesday, he toke his hors atte Westmynstre, and come rydyng to Poulis; & pere he offred, and toke his leue, and⁹ rode forth þrow þe cite, taking his¹² leve of alle maner of¹⁰ peple, as welle of¹¹ pore as of¹¹ Rich, praynge alle hem¹² yn generall to pray for hym. And so he roode forth to Saint Georgeȝ, and pere he offred, and toke is leve of þe Maire, Charging hym to kepe welle his Chaumbre; and so rode forth to¹⁶ Hampton, and pere abode till his retynnu was redy and come to hym; for pere was alle¹³ his Naueye of schippeȝ, with his ordynaunce, gadred and welle stuffyd, as longyd to such a ryalle Kinge, with alle maner of¹⁴ vitayleȝ for his¹⁵ pepille, as welle for hors as for²⁰ man, as longyd for such a warriour, þat is to say, armure, Gonneȝ, tripgettis, Eugyneȝ, soweȝ, Bastilleȝ, bryggeȝ of lethir, scaling laddres, mallis, ¹⁶spadeȝ, schouylleȝ, Pykys,¹⁷ boweȝ and¹⁸ aroweȝ, bowstryngeȝ, scheftis,¹⁹ &²⁰ pipis fulle of aroweȝ, as nede for such a²⁴ worthi warriour þat no þing was to sech. &²¹ whanne tyme come, þedir come to hym scheppeȝ lade with²² gunepowder.

[*Henry V's second Invasion of France.*]

¶ Whanne²³ þis²⁴ was rede, and his retynnu come, þe King and his lordez, with alle his rial host, went to schippe, & tokyn þe see &²⁸ sayled yn-to Normandy, and landed at Towk vpon²⁵ Lammas Day þan next; and pere he made xxviij²⁶ knightis at his londyng.

¹ of þe T.

² dyme in susteynyng of his warres T. dyme in susteynyng of his weris R.

³ And þanne T. and thenne R. ⁴ þe om. T.

⁵ And there T. and pere R. ⁶ and to T. ⁷ boþe the T.

⁸ and þe T. ⁹ and so TR. ¹⁰ of om. T. ¹¹ of the T.

¹² hem alle T. ham alle R. ¹³ alle om. T. ¹⁴ of om. R.

¹⁵ for such a roiall T. for such a rial R. ¹⁶ leaf 126, back.

¹⁷ Pikeyses Pavises T. Pikeys Pavis R. ¹⁸ and om. T.

¹⁹ Tonnes Cheftis T. Tonnes Chiftis R. ²⁰ & om. T. ²¹ & om. TR.

²² with Gannes and T. ²³ And whanne R. And whenne T.

²⁴ all this T. ²⁵ vpon þe T. ²⁶ xlvij TR.

- ¶ And panne þe King, hering of mony enymys vpon þe see, þat is to sey, ix grete Carylis, hulkys,¹ Galeyez & schippi3, that were come to² destroye his Nauay, anon³ he commaunded þe Erle of the
 4 March to be chyff Capteyne, and mony worthi lor[d]e3 with hym, with⁴ men of armys and archers, to go to the see, þat non enmyes defouled his Nauay⁵ ne entred his londe yn no maner party for to destrowble his viage ne⁶ corneye. ¶ And anon þe erle toke his
 8 meyne, and went to schyppe, and skimmed the see, and kepte þe see-costez, þat no maner⁷ enymys durste rowte⁸ vpon þe see. ¶ And anon þe Kinge sent his heroudes vnto þe Capten of Towke, & chargyd hym to delyuer is⁹ Castell and his toun, & ellis he
 12 schulde leve neyper¹⁰ man ne child a¹¹lyve. And anon þe Captene & iiij oper burge3 brouzt the keyez vnto þe King, and besouzt hym of grace; and þe Kinge delyuerd¹² to Ser Iohn¹³ Kighley þe keiez, and made hym Capteyn, & commawnded hym to put out¹⁴ alle þe¹⁵
 16 Frenschmen, bothe of þe Castell and of the toun. ¶ And pere besyde was þe Castell of Louers; and þedir þe King sent þe Erle Marchall, with a faire mayne, and sawted þe toun; and anon it was yelded vp vnto¹⁶ þe Erle, & brouzt hym þe keyez,¹⁷ & he
 20 brouzt þe keyez to þe King; & þe King toke to¹⁸ hym þe keyez, and made hym Capteyn of the Castell of Louers & of alle þat longed þerto, and charged him to¹⁹ delyuer oute alle þe F[r]enschenmen.
 ¶ And þan þe King²⁰ hilde forth his way to Cane, þat was a
 24 strong toune and a faire, and a ryalle Castell þerynne. And anon he sent his heroddez vnto þe Capteyn, and Chargyd hym to delyuer þe toun and his Castel, or ellis he wolde hit gete with²¹ streynth of hond.
 28 ¶ And þai answerd and sayd to him, 'non of hym he toke,²² ne non þey²³ wolde delyuer vnto hym.'²⁴ ¶ And panne²⁵ anon he leyde his sege to þe toun, and layde gunnez on euery syde, and bete adoun both walle3 & tourez, and slow myche pepil yn hir²⁶ howse3
 32 & eke yn stretes. ¶ And þe gode Duk of Clarens, he²⁷ layde down²⁸

¹ hulkis and T. ² forto T. ³ And anooun T. ⁴ of R.⁵ his Navie T. his Naveie R. Nauye Kk.⁶ ne his TR. ⁷ maner of TR. ⁸ come T. ⁹ him his TR.¹⁰ neipir leue T. neyther leve R. ¹¹ on T. ¹² dide delyuer T.¹³ Iohn of R. ¹⁴ putte out TR. put Kk. ¹⁵ þe om. TR.¹⁶ yolden to T. yolde to R. ¹⁷ and þe keies brought to him T.¹⁸ to om. TR. ¹⁹ him to T. to RKK. ²⁰ And þe kyng panne T.²¹ with dynt of swerde and T. ²² saide he took him noon R. ²³ he R.²⁴ and seide he took hem noon ne noon he wolde delyuer to him T.²⁵ thanne om. T. ²⁶ hir om. T. ²⁷ he om. R. ²⁸ a downe T.

þe wallis on his syde vnto þe grounde; and so with ynne a while þe King be his counsel assauted þe toun alle aboute; and anon þe Duk of Clarans had entyrð yn-to the toun, and slowȝ down ryȝt til þat he come vnto þe King, and spared neþer man ne childe; and 4 euyr þai cryed "a Clarans, a Clarans, Seint George!" & slouȝ down ryȝt; and þere was ded on þe wallis,¹ on þe Kingis syde, a worthi man þat me callid Sprengheose, þe which þe King commaunded to be beryed yn þe abbey of Cane, fast by William Conqueroure: on 8 whose soule, God haue mercy! amen! ²And thanne³ þe King come yn-to þe toun, with his Broþer þe Duk of Clarens, and mony oþer worthi lordes,⁴ with moche solempnite and myrthe, and þanne þe King commaunded þe⁵ Capteyne to delyuer his⁶ Castell; and he 12 besouȝt þe King þat he wolde yeue⁷ hym xiiij dayes of⁸ respite, yef eny rescu wolde come; and yf non come, to delyuer hym þe keyes and þe Castelle atte his owne commaundement. ¶ And vndir þis composicion was the toun⁹ & þe Castell of Bayons, with 16 oþer tounes, fortalices & villages, yn-to þe noumbre of xiiij tounes. And¹⁰ vpon þe hylle before the castell of Cane, þe¹¹ King pyght alle his tentis, þat semyd a toun as moche as Cane. & by þat come tydyngis þat no rescu¹² wolde come þere; and¹³ so, at þe xiiij 20 dayes ende, þe Capteyne come out, and delyuered þe keyes and þe Castell to our King; And Bayons and þe oþer xiiij tounes weryn delyuerd vnto¹⁴ hym also. and anon þe King delyuerd þe keyes to þe Duk of Clarans, and made hym Capten, both of the toun and of 24 þe Castell, & made hym Capteyn of Bayons, & of al þe oþer tounes also, and so¹⁵ entred þe Castell & þe toun¹⁶ also; and þere he hylde his Seint Georgeȝ feste; and þere he made xv Kniztis of the Bath.¹⁷ And þe King commaunded to¹⁸ put out alle þe Frenschmen, boþe 28 man & womman; and no man so hardy to defoule no womman, ne take no maner gode away from ham, but late hem passe yn pees, vpon¹⁹ deth; and þere passed out of the toun, yn on day, moo þan xvc wymmen.

32

¹ on þe wallis *om.* T. ² leaf 127. ³ thanne T. þanne R. when Kk.⁴ and many oþer lordes T. ⁵ commandid þe kyng vnto the T.⁶ him his TR. ⁷ kyng to yeue T. þe kinge to yeue R. ⁸ of *om.* R.⁹ was the towne T. was þe toun R. the toun *om.* Kk.¹⁰ And *om.* T. ac Kk. ¹¹ oure T. oure R.¹² rescue T. rescu R. ¹³ and TR. ¹⁴ to T. ¹⁵ so *om.*¹⁶ þe toun and þe castell R.¹⁷ Bath there was *ser* lowes Robserd Salyn Cheyne Mongomerie and many oþer were maad knyghtis T. Bath and þere was sir lowis Robessart Salyn Cheyne Moungomery and meny oþer R.¹⁸ hem forto T. ham forto R. ¹⁹ vpon þe T.

¶ And panne þe¹ King lete stuffe þe Toun and þe Castell with Englisch men, and ordeyned ij Capteyne3, on for the toun and a-noþer for the Castell, and chargyd ham, vpon her lyf, to kepe wel 4 the toun and þe Castell. And or he² went penne3, he gat valeys Newelyn, & leyde sege³ to Chierburgh. And þat⁴ sege layde þe Duk of Gloucestre with a strong pouer, and be processe of tyme gat it, and made þere a Capteyne. And þe⁵ same tyme þe Erle of 8 Warwic layde sege⁶ to Dounstount, & gat hit, and put þeryn a capteyne.

¶ And for to speke moore of the Erle of the Marche, þat þe King hadde sette⁷ to scom þe see and þe Coostez of Engelande for 12 enmys, þe wynde aros so vp-on hem, þat þei wende alle for⁸ to haue loste her lyvez; but þrouz þe grace of God, and goode gouern- aunce, þey pat were within the Ile of Wight, ryden al pat storme þere.⁹ ¶ And þere were lost ij Carrekez & ij balyngers with 16 marchaundis godis, and alle þe pepyl þat were þerynne; & anoþer Caryk droff before Hampton, and drew his Mast ouyr the toun wallis; and þis¹⁰ was on¹¹ saynt Barthelemewe3 day. ¶ And whann alle þis storme was cecid, þis worthi Erle of the Marche 20 tooke his schippe with his meyne, and went ayen¹² to þe see, and londid yn Normandy at Hoggez, and so rode forth towarde þe King; and eyr as he cam, þe Frenschmen fledde. ¶ And¹³ there com to hym an Antony pygge, and folowed þe ost al þat way tyl 24 thay come tyll¹⁴ a grete wasch; and þere¹⁵ þay drad to haue be ded, for the water closed ham so þat þay myzt noughere goo¹⁶ out. ¶ But atte þe¹⁷ last, þis pygge¹⁸ and God¹⁹ brouzt hem out alle²⁰ saaf; and þere þay cauzt a gyde that knewe alle the cuntre aboute,²¹ 28 and he brouzt ham prouz quicsonde, and so yn-tille²² an Ile; and þere they toke meny prysoners yn her way²³ toward the King yn her iourney²⁴ towarde²⁵ Cane.

And þere þe King welcomyd hym, and toke his iourney 32 towarde²⁶ Argenton, & anon it was yolde vnto þe King, and pai²⁷

¹ oure T. our R. ² And eer þat oure kyng T. þey R. ³ a sege T.

⁴ at pat T. ⁵ þat T. ⁶ a sege T. ⁷ kyng took T. ⁸ for om. T.

⁹ þei riden withinne the Ile of wight there in att þat storme T. þey that were wight ryden al þat storme þere Kk.

¹⁰ þat T. ¹¹ vpon T.

¹² and wente ayen T. and wente R. went Kk. ¹³ And panne T.

¹⁴ to TR. ¹⁵ þere om. T. ¹⁶ gete T. ¹⁷ þe om.

¹⁸ leaf 127, back. ¹⁹ and god om. T. ²⁰ ham alle out R.

²¹ aboute om. T. ²² to TR. ²³ wey as thei wente T.

²⁴ yn her iourney om. TR. ²⁵ vnto T. ²⁶ to T. vnto R.

²⁷ there thei T.

hadde her lyues, & went hir way. ¶ And þanne þe¹ King remeued to a strong toun² callyd Cessy, and þere was a fayr Mynstre, and þay yelde it anon vnto³ þe King. And⁴ þe King went anon⁵ fro þenne³ to Launson,⁶ and gat⁷ þe toun and⁸ brigge. And⁹ þe King⁴ sent þe Erle of Warwic to a toun me¹⁰ callith Belham, with a strong power; and anon þay yelde ham,¹¹ and put ham yn the Kingis grace¹²: and so dede mony mo stronge toune³ & castellis þat were in þo partee³. ¶ And fro pennes þey went to Vernyl in⁸ Perche; and anon it was yolden to¹³ þe King, bothe toun & castell, bodye³ and godes, at the Kingis grace. And so þe King gat and conquered alle the toune³ and Castelles, Pile³,¹⁴ Streynthis, and Abbeye³,¹⁵ vnto Pountlarge, & fro þenne³ vnto the Cite of Roone. 12

[*The Lollard, Sir John Oldcastle.*]

¶ And yn þe .v. yere of King Henrye³ reing þe v^{the}, Ser Iohn Oldecastell, knight, þat was þe Lorde of¹⁶ Cobbam, was arestyd for Lollardye, and brouzt yn-to¹⁷ the Tour of London. And anon aftir he brak out of þe Tour, and went ynto Walis; and there he¹⁶ kept hym longe tyme. ¶ And at the¹⁸ laste, þe Lorde Powis mette with hym and tooke hym; but he stode at grete defence longe tyme, and was soore wounded or he wolde be take; and so þe Lorde Powys meyne brouzt hym out of Walis to London yn a²⁰ whirlecole; & so he was brouzt to Westmynstre, & there was¹⁹ examyned of certeyn poynte³ þat were put vpon hym. & he sayde not nay; and so he was conuycte be²⁰ þe clergy of²¹ Lollardye, & dampned before þe Iustize vnto²² deth for treson; and so he was²⁴ hadde vnto þe Tour ayen, and þere he was laide on a hurdil, and draw prough þe cite to Saint Gyle³ Felde, & þere was made a new paire of Galows, and a stronge chayne, and a coler of yron for hym, and þere he was hanged and brent on þe galous, & alle for his²⁸ lewdeness &²³ fals opynyons.

¹ oure T. our R. ² towne þat men T. town þat me R.

³ to TR. ⁴ And þanne TR. ⁵ anon om. TR.

⁶ Alaunsonn T. ⁷ wanne T. wan R. ⁸ and þe TR.

⁹ And om. T. ¹⁰ þat men T. þat me R.

¹¹ ham om. T. ¹² hem in his grace and in þe kyngis T.

¹³ vnto TR. ¹⁴ Piles and T.

¹⁵ and abbeies T. & Abbeye³ R. abbeye³ Kk. ¹⁶ of om. R.

¹⁷ vnto T. ¹⁸ the om. T. ¹⁹ he was T. ²⁰ of TR.

²¹ for TR. ²² vnto the T. vnto þe R. ²³ and for his TR.

¹How the King sent his vnclē Syr Beaufort, Duk of Excestre, before the cite of Roon, and there displayed his Baner.¹

And² yn the vi^{the} yere of King Harrieȝ regne þe v^{the}, he sent
 4 his vnclē, Sir Thomas Beauforde, Duk of Excestre, with a fayre
 manye of men of armeȝ and archers, a³fore þe cite of Roone, & þere
 displayed his baner, & sent herodeȝ vnto þe toun, and bade hem
 yelde it⁴ vnto oure King, her lige lorde. ¶ And þai saide he⁵
 8 toke hem non to kepe, ne non he schulde haue þere, but yf it were
 ryȝt dere bouȝt and medid with hir handeȝ; for other answer wolde
 þey non yeue.⁶ ¶ And þere þe⁷ Duk toke gode⁸ avysement of the toun
 and⁹ of the grounde al about; and anon þere yssued out of þe cite
 12 a grete meny of men of armeȝ, bothe on horsbak & eke¹⁰ on fote;
 & anon our mayne mette with ham, ¹¹and ovirthrew an hep of
 hem; and there were slayn and take xxx^{ti} personeȝ of right gode
 menneȝ bodieȝ; and þe rempnaunt fledde vnto¹² the toun. And þe
 16 Duk went ayen¹³ vnto Pountlarge vnto þe King and tolde hym alle
 how he hadde sped, and how hym lykyd þe grounde. ¶ And anon
 as he was go, þey cast adoun al her¹⁴ subbarbez about þe cite, vnto
 þe harde grounde, for þe King schulde haue þere¹⁵ non refreschyng
 20 at his comyng. ¶ And the Fryday before Lammas day þen next,
 our King with his ost come before Roone, and layde¹⁶ his sege
 rounde about þe¹⁷ cite, and anon leet leye his owne¹⁸ ordinaunce
 vnto the toun. ¶ And þe King and his lordeȝ were logged yn the
 24 Charterhous, and gret streynȝth about hym, and þat was yn þe est
 partye of þe cetey. And þe Duk of Clarans loggyd hym at þe
 westende, yn a wast abbeye before þe porte of Caux. ¶ And the
 Duk of Excestre yn the North syde, before þe Port Denys; and
 28 betwene þe Duk of Clarens & þe Duk of Excestre was þe Erle
 Marchal logged, with a strong pouer, before¹⁹ þe castell Gate.
 ¶ And þan was þe Erle of Ormonde, and þe Lorde Haryngton, and
 þe lorde Talbot with his²⁰ retynu, next hym; and þanne Ser Iohn
 32 Cornewayle, and mony oþer noble kniȝtis of name with hir retynu,
 lay with þe Duk of Clarens. And from þe Duk of Excestre

¹⁻¹ om. TR. ² Of the Sege of Roone. And T.

³ to R. ⁴ þat Citee T. yelde þat Cite R.

⁵ þat he T. ⁶ yeue but Gonnes T.

⁷ there the T. þere þe R. þere Duk Kk. ⁸ gode om. T.

⁹ of the toun and om. TR. ¹⁰ eke om. TR. ¹¹ leaf 128.

¹² ayen into TR. ¹³ ayen om. T. ¹⁴ þe T.

¹⁵ there schulde haue T. ¹⁶ and anon he sette T. sette R.

¹⁷ that T. ¹⁸ owne om. TR. ¹⁹ with a strower bifore T.

²⁰ her T. hir R.

towarde þe King weryn logged þe Lorde Roos, þe Lorde¹ Wylughby, þe Lorde Fitzhugh,² and Ser William Porter, kniȝt, with hir retynu, before þe Port Seint Hillary. ¶ And þan was þe Erle of Mortayne, with his retynu, logged yn þe Abbey of Saynt 4 Kateryne; and þe Erle of Sawlesbery with is retynu lay on þat on³ syde of Saynt Katerynes; & Ser Iohn Gray, knight, was logged at þe⁴ Mount Saint Mychell; and Ser Philippe Leiche, knight, þe Kingis tresorer, was logged betwene þe watir of Sayne and þe abbey, 8 and kepte þe warde vndir þe hille. And þe Baron of Carew was loggid⁵ on þe watir syde to kepe þe passage, and Iemco þe skquier lay next hym on þe water syde; & pay⁶ ij Squiers kept manly þe watir of Sayne, and fauȝt with her enymys oft tymeȝ. And on 12 þat oper⁷ syde of Sayne lay þe Erle of Hontyngton and Maistir Nevely, þe Erleȝ sone of Westmerlonde, and Ser Gilbert Homfraule, þe Erle of Kyme, Ser⁸ Richarde of Arundell, and þe Lorde Ferrers with hir retynu, before þe Port de Pount; & eche of these 16 lordeȝ hadde strong ordynaunce. ¶ And þe King dede make at Pountlarge, ouyr þe watir of Sayne, a strong and a myȝty Cheyne⁹ of Iren, & put it þrouȝ grete pileȝ ffast pyght yn the grounde; & þat went ouyr þe Ryver of Sayne, þat no vessell myȝt passe þat way 20 in no kind. And aboue þat chayne þe King leet make a brygge ouyr þe watir of Sayne, þat man & horse & alle othir¹⁰ Carrage myȝt go to and fro, at¹¹ alle tymeȝ whanne þat¹² nede were.

¶ And thanne come þe Erle of Warwic, and hadde gote Douns- 24 rount vnto þe King; and anon þe King sent hym¹³ to Caudebeek, to besege it. And whenne he com before the toun, he sent hys heroudeȝ vnto þe Capteyne, and bade hym yelde vp þe toun¹⁴ on¹⁵ payn of deth. And anon he layde his sege; & þan þe Capteyne 28 besouȝt þe Erle þat he myȝt come vnto¹⁶ his presens & speke with hym; and so þe gode Erle graunted hym. ¶ Thanne¹⁷ he come out, and iiij oper burgeȝ with hym, and Entretyd so with þe Erle þat this toun was vndir composicion to do as þe cite of Roone dede; 32 and þe Erle graunted and consentyd þer-to, vpon þis condicion, þat þe Kyngȝ Nauey, with his ordynaunce, myȝt passe vp by ham in

¹ lord of TR. ² lord Phehew T. ³ oper T.

⁴ þe abbey þat is called T. þe om. R.

⁵ was loggid T. was logged R. was loggid om. Kk.

⁶ and þo T. & pay om. R. & pay and pay Kk. ⁷ one R.

⁸ and sir T. ⁹ Brigge R. ¹⁰ leaf 128, back.

¹¹ at TR. and Kk. ¹² þat om. TR.

¹³ sent the Erle of Warwik T. sente þe erle of Warwik R.

¹⁴ þe towne up T. ¹⁵ in T. ¹⁶ to T. ¹⁷ And þanne T.

saafte, without eny lette or dysturbaunce; and to pis composycion
 pei sette her¹ seele3, and pe Schippe3 passed vp by ham yn saafte,
 & come before pe cite of Roon, into a C.² schippe3, and pere pay
 4 cast her³ anchors, and panne pis citee⁴ was besegid bothe be lond
 & by watir.⁵ ¶ And whanne alle pis was do, and pe schippe3
 come vp, panne come pe Erle of Warwic ayen vnto pe King, and
 loggyd hym betwene pe Abbey of Saint Katerynez & pe King, til
 8 þat pe⁶ abbey intret, and was⁷ yolde vnto pe King; and panne he
 remeved fro pennez, and loggyd hym before pe Poort Martevile.
 ¶ And panne⁸ was pe Erle of Salusberye commawnde be pe King
 to make hym redy for to ryde; but pere come hasti tydynges and
 12 made hym to abyde; & so he retourned ayen and logged hym
 besyde3 pe Erle of Hontyngton til pe sege was endyd. ¶ And
 pann come pe Duk of Gloucestre, pe Kinges broþer, from pe sege of
 Chierborough þat⁹ he hadde wonne & gotoun, & stuffed ayen to¹⁰
 16 pe Kinges behoue & pr[o]fit.¹¹ And whanne he¹² was come to¹³
 the King before Roon, anon he logged hym with grete ordynaunce
 before pe Port Saint Hyllarye, more nygh¹⁴ pe toun and his enmys
 panne eny oper man¹⁵ be xl rode3 of lengthe, withynne schotte
 20 of quarell; & with hym lay pe Erle of Suffolk & pe Lorde of
 Bergeveny with alle hir retynu & strong ordynaunce, & manly &
 proutly fau3t euery day with hir enmys evere whanne pay issued
 out of the Cete. ¶ And panne com pe Pryour of Kylmaynon yn¹⁶
 24 Ireland, ouyr the se vnto pe King, with a fayre mayne of men of
 arme3 of hir owne cuntre gise, vnto¹⁷ the summe of xvc of gode¹⁸
 monnez bodye3. And pe King welcomyd ham, and made ham ry3t
 grete¹⁹ chere.
 28 ¶ And panne come tydynges to²⁰ the King þat pe King of
 Fraunce, and pe Dolfyn and pe Duke of Burgoyne, ²¹wolde come
 doun²² to rescu pe cite of Rone with a strong power of alle maner²³
 nacionez, and²⁴ breke pe sege; and he cast hym to entre on pe
 32 North syde of the oste, because þat pere was pe beste entre, and

¹ to her T. ² ij C T. ³ per T. ⁴ Citee T. cite R. sege Kk.

⁵ bope bi watir and bi londe. T. ⁶ pe om. T. ⁷ and was T. was Kk.

⁸ And panne T. And thanne R. And Kk.

⁹ pe whiche TR. ¹⁰ vnto TR.

¹¹ and profit vnto pe crowne of Englonde and T. profit to pe Croune of englonde R.

¹² whanne he om. T. ¹³ vnto T. ¹⁴ nere T. nerrer R.

¹⁵ lay RT. ¹⁶ of T. ¹⁷ vnto om. R.

¹⁸ gise pe nombre of xv C goode T. ¹⁹ good TR.

²⁰ vnto T. ²¹ leaf 129. ²² a downe T. ²³ of dyuerise T.

²⁴ and forto T.

most playne groun[d]e. And þefore þe King assyngned þe Priour of Kilmaynon with is power, and logged hym on þe northe syde of the oste, to stoppe hir passage, and was be þe forest of Lions; and of his¹ ordinaunce þei were fulle gladde. And þai² went forthe 4 yn haste, and kept the³ grounde, and þe place þat þe King & his counsel hadde assyngned vnto ham; and þai quitte ham as gode warrioures vnto þe⁴ King.

¶ Now wyl y telle you which were þe Chyff Capteyne3 & 8 gouernowres of þis cete of Roone: Mounser Guy Botelere was chyff capteyne, bothe of the cite & of the castell; and Mounser Turmegan, he was capten of þe⁵ Port de Caux; Mounser le Roch was⁶ capteyn de Syne; Mounser Antony, he was lieutenaunt to Mounser 12 Guy⁷ Botelere; Henry Chaunfewe, he was capteyne of the⁸ Port de Pount, Iohn Matribas, he was capteyne of the Port de la Chastell; Mounser de Peneux, he was capteyne of þe Port⁹ Saint Hillary; þe Bastarde of Tyne, he was capteyn of the Port 16 Martivile; and graunt Iake3, a worthi warryour, hē was capteyn of alle¹⁰ warryoures, and¹¹ gouernoure outwarde, bothe on horsbak & on foote, of alle men of arnez: whenne þei issued out of the cite, of alle þe portis, he hem arayed as þey schulde countre with 20 our meyne. ¶ And ech of these capteyne3 hadde¹² v M^t men of arnez, & some mo. And at¹³ þe first comyng of¹⁴ oure King, þere were nombred be heroudes ynto an CCC M^t of men,¹⁵ wymmen, & childryn, what yong & olde. And among alle þese was many a 24 manful man of his hand; and so þay prevyd ham whanne þei issued out of þe cite, bothe on horsbak & on foote, for þay come neuer out at on gate alone, but at iij or iiij; and at euery gate .ij. or iij. M^t of gode men of arnez, and¹⁶ manfully counted with our Englisch- 28 men, & moche pople slayne dyuers tyme3 with Gune3, quarell, & oper¹⁷ ordynaunce3. And þis sege endured xx^{ti} woke3; and euer þai of the toun hopyd¹⁸ for to haue be rescued; but þer come non. ¶ So at þe¹⁹ laste, þei kept so longe þe toun þat þere deied mony 32 thowsandez withynne þe tounne for defaute of mete, of²⁰ men, wymmen and chylidryn; for þay had ete al her hors, doggis and

¹ þis T. ² so þei TR. ³ kepte þe TR. kept Kk. ⁴ her T. hir R.

⁵ þe om. T. ⁶ he was TR. ⁷ Guy de TR. ⁸ de T.

⁹ Port de T. port of R. ¹⁰ alle the T. alle þe R.

¹¹ and he was TR. ¹² ladde T. ¹³ And whenne att T.

¹⁴ was of T. ¹⁵ men and T.

¹⁶ goode mennes bodies y armyd and T. gode menne3 bodiez yarmed and R. ¹⁷ oper om. R.

¹⁸ hopid T. hoped R. hopyp Kk. ¹⁹ þe om. T. ²⁰ bope of T.

catteȝ, þat were yn the toun. And ofte tymeȝ þe men of armeȝ
droff out þe pore pepyl at the gatis of the touneȝ, for spendyng of
vitayle; and anon our Englischmen droff ham yn-to þe toun agayne.
4 So at þe¹ last, þe capteyneȝ of the toun, seying þe myschif þat þay
were nouȝt rescued, and also þe scarcite of vitayle, & þat þe peple
so deied for defaute of mete, euery daye mony thowsandeȝ, and
also saue yonge childryn lye & sowke her modir pappis þat weryn
8 ded, þan anon þey sent vnto² þe ³King, besechinge him ⁴of his grete
mercy & grace,³ and brouȝt þe keyes of⁵ þe toun vnto the Kinge,
and delyuered the toun to⁶ hym; and alle⁷ soudereȝ voyded the
toun, with hir hors & harneȝ; and þe comuneȝ of the toun for⁸ to
12 abyde and dwelle stille yn the toun, yerely to pay hym⁹ and to his
successours, for al maner customeȝ, see¹⁰ seruieȝ & quaterymeȝ
[blank] Marc. ¶ And þanne þe King entred yn-to þe toun, &
restyd hym yn the Castell tylle þe toun were sette yn rewle and
16 gouernawnce.

¹ þe om. T. ² to TR.³⁻³ king bisekyng him of grace and mercy T. king besechinge him of
his grace and mercy R. besechinge him om. Kk.⁴ leaf 129, back. ⁵ of TR. to Kk. ⁶ vnto T. ⁷ alle þe TR⁸ for om. T. ⁹ to him TR. ¹⁰ and fee T. and see R.

APPENDIX C.

FULLER VERSION OF THE TIME FROM 1399-1401.

Compare p. 361, l. 16 ff.

[MS. Rawlinson, B. 173.]

¹And at Oxonford^d were take Sir Thomas Blounte, kni³t, and Benet Cely, knight, & Thomas Wyntershi³H, Squier. ¶ And these were be-hedyd and quarterd; And the knightes hedes were set on poles, and brought to Londoñ, and set on Londoñ Brygge; And ⁴the quarters sent forth to other places and townes. And in the same yere, at Pritewe³H, in a Mille in Essex, there was Sir Iohn Holand, the Duke of Excestre, take with the commons of the Contre. ¶ And they brought him from that Mille vnto Plass³h, ⁸And to the same place pere as King Richard Arested Sir Thomas of Wodestocke, Duke of Gloucestre. ¶ And right there, in the same place, they smote of the Duke of Excestres hede,² and brought hit to Londoñ vpon a pole, And hit was sett on Londoñ Brige. ¹²And in the same yere, at Bristowe, was take the Lorde Spencer þat King Richard hadde made Erle of Gloucestre. ¶ And the commons of the towne of Bristowe toke and brought him into the Market-place of the towne; And there þey smote of his hede, and sent hit ¹⁶to Londoñ, & hit was set on Londoñ Brige. ¶ And in the same yere was Sir Barnard Brokeys, knight, take and Arested, & putte into the Toure of Londoñ, And Sir Iohn Shelley, ³knight, and Sir Iohn Magdaleyn, And William Ferby, persons of King Richard; ²⁰And þey were arested and put into the Toure of Londoñ. And there come the Kinges Iustices, and satte vpon them in the Toure; And pere they were dampned a³ iiij vnto det³l. And þ^e dome yeue to Sir Barnard Brokeis, that he shulde come on fote from the ²⁴Toure, prough Londoñ, vnto Tyborne, And there to be hanged, and his hede smetyn of. And Sir Iohn Shelley, knight, Sir Iohn Magdaleyn & Sir William Ferby, persons, were drawe prough-oute London to Tyborne, And there honged, and her hedes smety³n of, ²⁸& set on Londoñ Brige.

And in the same yere King Henry sent Quene Isabe³H¹ leaf 213.² 16 Jan. 1400.³ leaf 213, back.

home ayene into Fraunce, the which was King Richardes wedid wiffe, And yaff her golde and siluer And many other Iuellys; And so she was discharged of aH her doure in Englonde. And in 4 the ij yere of King Henry the iiijth, was *Sir* Roger of Claryndon, kniȝt, and ij of his meñ, and the Prioure of Launde, and vij freris Minours, and somme maistres of Diuinite, and other, for treson þat þey wrought a-yenst þe King, were drawe and hanged at 8 Tyborne, aH xij persones to-gedyr. And þus was here ende there for her treson.

And in the same yere bigañ a discencioñ and a debate in the Contre of Walys, bitwene þ^e Lorde Grey Riffyñ and Oweñ Glen- 12 dore, ¹Squier of Wales. And this Owen arered a nombre of Walshe-men, And kept aH the Contre Aboute right strong, and did moche harme, & distroyed the Kinges townes and lordshjppis proughoute Wales, and robbed and slewe the Kingys peple, both 16 Englissh-men and Walshe-meñ: And thus he endured xij yere large. ¶ And he toke þ^e Lorde Grey Ryffyñ prisoner, And kept him ffast in holde tyH he was Raunsomed. ¶ And in the iij yere of King Henry, Oweñ brent a towne of the Erles of March in 20 Walys, þat hight Kinghton. ¶ And on the morowe after Seint Albones day, was the batayle bitwene *Sir* Edmond Mortymere and Oweñ; And þis bataile was on the blacke hyH beside Pymareñ. And þer Oweñ toke *Sir* Edmond Mortymer, þ^e Erles brother of the 24 Marche, prisoner, and kepte him long tyme in holde; And at the laste he made him wedde one of his doughters, and kept him there styH with his wiffe; and sone after he died. And þañ the King, hering And knowyng that myscheffe, distruxioñ & treson that þis 28 Oweñ wrought, ¶ Thañ anone he ordeyned him a strong power of meñ of Armes & Archers, And moche other stuffe þat longeth to werre, for-to abate and destroye þ^e malice of these false Walshmeñ. And whañ ²the King come into Wales for-to destroye thys Oweñ 32 and other rebelles, false Walshmen, Anone they fleddeñ into the Mounteyns; And there might no mañ do hem harme In no maner wise; but often-tymes they toke the Kinges Cariage, and euery day destroyed his peple; but Owen and his meñ for the most party 36 scaped harmeles, For the King ne his meyne might not come by him in no maner wise, for the Mounteynes. And so the King come into Englonde a-yene, for lesing of mo of his peple; and þus he sped not there.

¹ leaf 214.² leaf 214, back.

[D]

CONTINUATION OF THE BRUT CONTAINING JOHN PAGE'S
POEM ON THE SIEGE OF ROUEN.

FROM THE SIEGE OF ROUEN [1418] TO A.D. 1430.

[*Galba E. VIII.*]

¹How kyng henry the v. leide sege to the Cite of Rone,
and how he gate the Cite with strengthe and manhode
well and worthily.

And in the vi. yere of Kyng Henrys Regne² the v; the 4
Kynge sent his vncl Sir Thomas Beauford, Duke of Exeter, with
othir lordis and knyghtis, men of armys and archeris,³ to the Cite
of Rone, and there displayid her baneris opynly byfore the cite of
Rone, and sent herodis to hem that were withynne the Cite, and 8
bade hem yolde vp the cite in alle haste,⁴ that was the kyngis
righte, or ellis thei shuld deie an harde and sharpe dethe, and
withoute eny mercy or grace.

And there he be-hild the g[r]ounde aboute⁵ the Cite, how thei 12
myght beste sette her sege to gete that Cite.

¶ And ansuere wold thei none yeue, but meuyd with her
hondis ouyr the wallis, as who seyth 'voydith the grounte and the
place that ye ben on'; and shotte tho many gunnys to hem. And 16
thanne⁶ there Issewid out of the Cite many men of armys, of
Frensshe men on hors bakke, and countrid with oure Engelisshe
men, and ffaughten manlyche. And there were sleyn and take of
the Frensshe men a grete hepe; and the remanent fledden ayen 20
into the Cite.

¶ And thanne the Duke of Exetir turnyd ayen with his pepul,
and come to Pountlarge; and there he met with the Kynge,⁷ and
told hym alle how he had spede and don in his message. 24

¶ And now for to telle how thei that weren withynne the cite
of Rone, had deuowrid and distroyid alle the subarbis rounde aboute
the Cite, into the bare grounde, for the Kynge shuld no refute
haue,⁸ ne non refressynge haue there at his comynge; and how thei 28
had strongly newe dichid, with many othir dispitefful and crueff
ordynauncis that thei coude deuyse and ordeyne, with alle the⁹

¹ leaf 137. ² Regne A. Regnyd G. ³ archeris come A.

⁴ in haste A. ⁵ rovnd aboute A. ⁶ þus A.

⁷ he fonde þe kyng A. ⁸ haue om. A. ⁹ the om. A.

ymaginacionys, congettis and sleythis, rounde aboute the cite, ayens the Kyngis hoste, yn-so-moche thei bite and keste adoun the perisshe-chirchis, abbeyis, and alle maner¹ of housyngis more and
4 lesse, in-so-moche that thei hewe adoune alle maner of treis that weren stondynge, in Gardeynys or yn eny othir placis, neighe the cite, and hewe a doune alle the ² Busshis that weren stondynge, and made³ aH playne vnto the harde erthe.

8 And thanne oure Kyng remouyd him from Pountlerge with alle his pepuH, and come before the cite of Rone the Friday befor Lammesse day. And he made ordynaunce, and leide and set a sege rounde aboute the cite, with moche strengthe and grete ordynauncis,
12 so that the Frensshe-men myght no where in no parties ascape away but if thei weren dede and take. And furste the Kyng loggid hym-self in a Geste howse that is callid an hous of charite, with many lordis and strengthe⁴ of pepuH aboute hym; and that
16 was in the Este partye of that cite. And thanne the Duke of Clarence, his brothir, loggid hym wyth his pepuH at an abbey withoute the cite, in the weste ende by the port Kaux. And thanne was the Duke of Exetur loggid with alle his pepuH at Port
20 Denyse in the northe syde of that cite. ¶ And thanne, betwix the Duke of Clarence and the Duke of Exetur, was the Erle MarchiaH loggid, with alle his retenewe and strengthe, bi the casteH gate. And thanne was the Erle of Vrmonde and the Lord Aring-
24 don and the Lord Talbot, with alle her retenewe and ordynauncis, next hym. ¶ And thanne Sir John Cornewale, and many othir knyghtis of name, with alle her retenewe and ordynauncis, lay with the Duke of Clarence in his strengthe. And ffrom the Duke of
28 Exetur toward the Kyng, weren loggid the Lord Roos, the Lord Wilby, and the Lorde Fytz-Hugh and Sir William Portere, knyght, with alle her retenewe, and loggid hem before thé Porte Seint Hillari. And thanne was the Erle of Mortayne loggid, with alle his
32 retenewe and ordynauncis, in the abbey of Seint Katerynys. ¶ And thanne the Erle of Salusbury, with alle his retenewe and ordynauncis, was loggid on that othir syde of this abbey. ¶ And
36 thanne Sir John Gray, knyght, with aH his retenewe and ordynauncis, was loggid at the abbey that is callid Mount Seint MycheH. And thanne Sir Philip Leche, knyghte, the Kyngis tresorer, with alle his retenewe and ordynauncis, was loggid

¹ all maner A. maner om. G.

³ & made A. made and G.

² leaf 137, back.

⁴ & oþer grete strength A.

betwene the watir of Sayne and the abbey, &¹ kepte that ward vndir the hille. ¶ And thanne the Baron of Carewe, with alle his retenewe and ordynauncis, was loggid with his compeny alone by the watir-side, to kepe the passage there. And Ienycō the Squyere⁴ lay there nexte hym, with his retenewe and ordynauncis, and helpe to kepe the watir syde of Sayne: and manly and worthili he werrid and faught with his enemyes at alle tymes. ¶ And on that othir side of the watir of Sayne, lay the Erle of Huntyngdon, and⁸ the Lorde Neuyle (the Erlis sone of Westmerlond), Sir Gilbert Omffreyule, Sir Richard of ArundeH, and the lord Ferreris, with alle hir retenewe and ordynauncis, at Port de Pount.

¶ And thanne the Kyng lete ordeyne and make at the Pount-12 large, ouyr the watir of Sayne, a stronge and a myghti cheyne of Iron, and put it thorough piles² faste pite in the grounde, ouyr the ryuer of Sayne, that no vesseH myght rowe that wei in no kynde. And thanne, aboue that chayne, the Kyng lete make a brygge¹⁶ ouyr the watir, that man and hors and aH othir cariage myght passe to and fro at alle tyme whanne nede were.

¶ And tho come the Erle of Warwike, and had goten Domfferauncte,³ and come down there the Kyng lay at the sege of 20 Rone; and the Kyng comaundid hym with his pepuH to gon to Cawde-becke⁴ and besege hit. ¶ And whanne he come before the toune, the gouernouris of the toune come oute, and tretid with the Erle of Warwike, and seid that thei wolde don and be²⁴ gouernyd aftur the Cite of Rone; and so thei grauntid in composicion, and asselid it vp, in fuH condicion that thei shuld suffre and lette passe alle oure flete of Shippis by hem, with-oute eny lette or disturburaunce. And so oure Shippis passid alle yn,²⁸ and come be hem, and comen before the Cite of Rone, and there keste ankre as thikke as thei myght stonde; and so they segid the Cite of Rone bothe be watir⁵ and by londe.

¶ And whanne the Erle of Warwike had thus endid and don³² with the toune of Cawdebecke, and alle the Engelysshe shippis were come vp in the watir of Sayne, and set before the cite of Rone, ¶ Thanne the Erle of Warwike turnyd hym ayen with alle his pepuH, and come to the Kyng, and loggid hym with alle his³⁶ pepuH betwyxt Seint Kateryns and the Kyng, tille that an abbey

¹ & A. of G. ² porugh grete piles A.

³ Domfferauncte A [*i. e.* Domfront]. do in ffrance G.

⁴ Caudebeck A. ⁵ leaf 138.

that was in trete there, was yolden to the Kyng; and thanne anon aftur he went thens and loggid hym, with alle his pepuH and ordynauncis at Porte Morteuyle, to kepe that porte of the Cite.

4 ¶ And thanne was the Erle of Salusbury comaundid by the Kyng to make hym redy to ryde. And tho hasty tithyngis come, and returnynge¹ hym ayen, and did hym byde; and there he bode be sidis the Erle of Huntyngdon, till that the sege was endid, and
8 wonne vp in-to the Kyngis hondis.

¶ And thanne come Sir Vmfrey, Duke² of Gloucestre, the Kyngis brothir, from the sege of Cherborough, wiche he had wonne and gotyn he sawte and good fete of werre, and aftur lete hit stuffe
12 with Engelisshe pepuH, and with vitaile, and with othir stronge ordynauncis, as longid to werre and to worship³ and prophite to the Kyng of Engeland. ¶ And whanne he was come doune to fore the Cite of Rone, he loggid hym with his pepuH and ordynauncis
16 at the Porte Seint Hillare, more nere his enemyes to the tounne thanne eny othir man by xl. rodys of lengthe, with-ynne shotte of Gounne and quareH. And with hym lay the Erle of Suffolke and the⁴ Lord Begeyne, with alle⁵ her retenewe and alle her⁶
20 ordynauncis; and manfully euyry day they⁷ flaughten with her enemyes whanne they issewed oute of the Cite.

¶ And thanne come⁸ the Pryore of Kylmayne, oute of Irlond, ourr the see, with a feyre compeny of men of armys on her Guyse,⁹
24 the summe of xv. c., good bodyes and manfuH men to werre, and come with-ynne¹⁰ Sayne Mouth, and aryuyd and landid at Hareflete, and spede hem in alle haste to the Kyng, and come vnto the sege of Rone: and the Kyng tho welcomyd the pryore of Kylmayne
28 and alle his pepuH.

¶ And thanne come tydyngis to the Kyng¹¹ that the Frensshe kyng, with an huge powere of pepuH of dyuerse nacionys, and the Duke of Burgoyne with hym, with an huge compeny of Burgoyneys,
32 of Flemmyngis, and of othir Duche tungis, wold come down to breke the sege, and keste hem to entre on the northe syde of oure hoste, because that there was lefte entre and moste playne grounde.

36 ¶ And thanne the Kyng assyngnyd the Pryoure of Kylmayne,

¹ tidyngis returnyd A. ² vmffray be duke A. ³ unto worship A.

⁴ the om. A. ⁵ alle om. A. ⁶ alle her om. A. ⁷ they om. A.

⁸ panne come A. panne G. ⁹ on her contre quyse A.

¹⁰ with ynne A. with G. ¹¹ kyng of Engeland A.

with alle his pepuH, to logge hem on the northe side, for to stoppe and kepe the weyis and passagis by the foreste of Lyons, that none enemyes might come doune that weyis to the sege, with-out that thei countrid with hem in fight: and of that ordynaunce thei 4 weren fayn and glad; and thei yeden forthe in haste, and kepten the grounde and the ¹ place that the Kynge and his counseile had asingnyd hem to; and as good warriouris and as prowde men of armys they shewid hem at alle tymes vpon her enemyes, wherefore 8 the Kynge had hem in heighe cherite for her grete manhode.

¶ Now wolle y telle you who weren the cheeff capteynys and gouvernouris of the cite Rone.² Furste, Moune-seighnour Guy de Botelere, cheef Capteyne, bothe of the ¹ cite and of the ¹ CasteH; 12 Moune-seighnoure Ternagon, and he was Capteyne of the Porte Caux; Moune-seighnoure le Roche was capteyne of Porte Denysine; Moune-seighnoure Antony, he was leue-tenaunte to Moune-seighnoure Sir Guy the Botelere, Henry Chamfewe was capteyne 16 of Porte de Pount; Iohn Matreuas was captayne of Port de la CasteH; Moune-seighnoure Peneuxe was tho captayne of Port Seint Hillari; the Bastard of Teyne was tho captayne of Port Marteuyle. ¶ And Graunde Iakis, a worthi warrioure, was 20 capteyne of alle the ordynauncis of ³ oute-warde on hors backe, and on ffote of men of armis, and ⁴ Issewid oute of the Cite at alle the portis, to don there ffetes yn the poyntis of werre ayens her enemyes; and euyry ⁵ of these Captaynys led v. M^h. men of armys 24 and moo.

¶ And whanne alle the comenmalte weren with-ynn the Cite, men myght sen many a M^h; for the heraudis nombrid hem that weren with-ynne the Cite at the bygynnyng of the sege, of men, 28 women and childeren, iij C. M^h. and x. M^h. bodyes, yonge and olde. And amonge hem weren many manfuH pepuH and hardy, for ⁶ often tymes they Issewid oute of the Cite, pepuH welle yarmyd, on hors backe and eke on ffote, oute of ⁷ euyry yate an ij or iij M^h. men of 32 armys, welle arayed, and manfully countrid and foughten with oure Engelish pepuH yn dyuerse parties of the sege. And tho that myght ascape, turnyd into the cite home ayen; and thus thei endurid longe tyme; and moche werre come fro the Cite wallis, as 36 shott of Gounnys and quareH, for thei shot euyry day from the wallis ⁸ and touris of the cite, with-ynne the space of an houre, an

¹ the om. A. ² of pis Cite of Rone A. ³ of om. A. ⁴ bat A.
⁵ leaf 138, back. ⁶ for A. for hai G. ⁷ at A. ⁸ wall A.

C of Gonne-stonys and moo, and quarellis with-oute nombre; and so thei sloughe and hurte moche Engelisshe pepuH.

¶ And oure Kynge lete make an¹ dicke aH withoute, Rounde
4 a-boute the cite, and strongly stakid it, and heggid it, for these
prykeris oute on hors backe, and comaundid Syr Robert Babthorp,
knyght and Countroller, to ouyr-se that this werke were don; and
he did it make in alle haste. ¶ And thanne they issewid oute
8 on ffote, and fought manly² as good werriouris; and tho myche
pepuH weren slayn on³ bothe sidis. And they at the wallis and at
the touris of the Cite shotten euer⁴ Gounnys, quarellis, Trepgettis,
Spryngollis⁵; and alwey on⁶ the Duke of Gloucestreis side thei
12 diden moche⁷ harme, for thei weren loggid nexte of alle pepuH to
the Cite. And euyr ther come tydyngis newe that the Burgoyneys
wold come and reskewe the Cite; and for ioye thereof they ronge
alle the bellis in the Cite; and fro the ffirste tyme of shittynge of
16 the yatis of the cite they ronge neuyr bellis but for tho tydyngis
tille the cite was gotten and yolden to the Kynge of Engeland.

¶ And tho the Kynge wende the Frensshe hoste had byn come,
and with good wordis comfortid his pepuH, and bad hem ben of
20 good chere. And anon tydyngis⁸ come ayen that thei were turnyd
to Paris-ward ayen. ¶ And thanne with-ynne ffewe dayes thei
were come to Pounteyse, the nombre of iiij. M⁹ good ffightynge
men, and welle arayed. ¶ And thanne the Kynge made a kry,
24 and comaundid that euyry mane shuld ligge yn his herneys, and
byn at alle tymes redy whanne her enemyes come. And tho the
Kynge lete make a lerge duche, alle withoute his hoste, and pight
it fuH of stakes ymade sharpe, that wold perisshe, and with turne-
28 pykes, and leid there-by Gounnys redy bent in euyry partye rounde
aboute this dicke. And the kynge tho comaundid his countroller
Sir Robert Babthorp, knyght, to spede in alle haste this were don
by his ouyr sight; and so anon this werke was endid.

32 ¶ And anon come tydynges to the Kynge, there as he lay at
seege; and this was on the¹⁰ Thorisday, that the ffrensshe hoste
lay but xx. myle from hym, and wold byn there on the morough
on the Fryday; and the same tydyng¹¹ come to hem that were
36 with-ynne the Cite. ¶ Of these tydyng¹² oure Kynge made
moche¹³ ioye and myrthe, and artely¹³ thankyd God. And so on

¹ a A. ² manfully A. ³ in A. ⁴ euer A. eu G.

⁵ & engynys A. ⁶ vpon A. ⁷ most A. ⁸ tidyng A.

⁹ iiij M¹¹ A. ¹⁰ a A. ¹¹ tidyngis A. ¹² grete A. ¹³ hertily A.

the Frydayoure Kynge rode to the Erle of Huntynghdon, and told to hym a wile and a good ffete of werre, and made hym ordeyne ij. Bateillis of men of armys. ¶ And the ffirste bataill thei and he redenn, and her backes¹ toward the Cite; and that othir bataill⁴ come oute of the wode, with standerdis and baneris of the Duke of Burgoynys armys. And these ij hostis metten, as thei had countrid, and foughten to-gederis; but non did othir harme. And this was ordeynyd and don by the kyngis deuyse and conseile, for 8 thei that weren with-ynne the Cite shuld haue vtterly hopid and trustid that reskewis had ben come,² and that thei that weren with-ynne the Cite of men of armys shuld boldely haue issewid oute, and ffoughten vtterly with the pepu³ of the sege; but thei dorste 12 not come oute of that³ Cite at that tyme, for thei doutid and drad, and supposid to hem but trayne, and wold not issewe oute for drede of dethe, as for that⁴ tyme, but abodyn and lokid aftur helpe, socoure, and reskewis of these Burgoynes, but ther come no com- 16 forte to hem. but yet tho afturward the men of armys issewid oute ayen of the Cite as thei did befor, and ffoughten manfully withoure Engelisshe-men, and myche pepu³ weren slayne on bothe sydis at dyuerse tymes. 20

¶ And tho it drewe nere Cristemesse; and by that tyme her vitailis scarsid sore with-ynne the Cite, for they⁵ hade nothir bred, ale, nor wyne, but watir and vynegur, that was her drynke. And flesshe nor fisshe they had non, but eten hors,⁶ doggis, Mis, Rattis 24 and Cattis; for an quarter of an horse, were he lene or⁸ fatte, was tho sold⁹ in the Cite amonge the pepu³ for an C. s. good payment, and an hors hede¹⁰ for xx. s., and a¹⁰ Ratte for xl. d.;¹¹ and for xiiij. s. iiij. d. thei sold a Catte,¹¹ and a mows for xx. d.; and these 28 wormys weren bought and eten so faste that vnnethe thei fonde eny for¹² to selle¹³ for no money. ¶ And tho¹⁴ was¹⁵ a ferthyngge lof boght in the Cite¹⁶ for a ffranke. And thanne hem failid bothe whete, and mele, and alle othir graynys that thei myght make of 32 eny brede¹⁷; but¹⁸ branne and broken wo[r]tis, and nepe-rotis, and lekis, was to hem mete of grete valewe; for a leke was sold for

¹ redenn & her bakkis A. redenn & her om. G. ² to hem A.

³ be A. ⁴ leaf 139. ⁵ pay A. the G. ⁶ hors flessch A.

⁷ From here to page 402, line 21, to word "trayne," missing in A.

⁸ or were he B. ⁹ sold be B. ¹⁰ a dogge for B.

¹¹⁻¹¹ and . . . Catte om. B. ¹² for om. B.

¹³ to selle B. to slee selle G. ¹⁴ tho om. B. ¹⁵ pas a B.

¹⁶ in the Cite om. B. ¹⁷ make eny brede of B. ¹⁸ but of B.

xij. d., and an¹ Egge for ix. d., and an appuſt for x. d.: ſiche merchaundyſe was there with-ynne the Cite a gret while; and ther was many a carefulle creature, for her² vitailis were alle waſtid and 4 ſpent, and pey³ myght come to no new by⁴ no maner wey; for the ſege that⁵ lay withoute, rounde aboute the Cite, wold⁶ ſuffre no vitaille come in, to hem, neythir by watir neythir⁷ be londe.

¶ And thanne be-ganne the pepuſt with-ynne the Cite to deie 8 faſte, bothe ſmale and grete, for the paſſynge hungur and enfamen that was amonge hem, by⁸ C.C. perſonys and moo day by day; and there as was firſte ioy and pryde, and grete boſte, tho was there amonge hem weyllynge, ſorow and⁹ care, and wepynge, and wryng- 12 ynge with¹⁰ hondis. ¶ And though a child ſhuld deie, the modir wold yeue it no brede ne nought ellis of¹¹ othir fode, ne wold not departe no morselle though ſhe myght ſaue the lif of her¹² child of¹³ hir body borne, but wold ſaue her ſelfe while ſhe myght; for loue 16 and hertly kyndeneſſe was tho from hem paſſid. Nor the child wold not profir the modir; for eche of hem caſte hymſelf to leue; for alle kyndeneſſe and loue tho was¹⁴ ſette beſide¹⁵; for euyr the childe wold hide his mete¹⁶ and his drynke¹⁷ fro his modir and from 20 alle his othir ffryndis, for his mete thei ſhuld not ſee, for thei ete hit alle in pryuete. ¶ And we may preue by that pepuſt there, that hounſir paſſithe kyndeneſſe and eke loue, that made her¹⁸ vnrightweſneſſe and her curſid leuyng and pryde that regnyd 24 amongis hem in tho dayes, wherefore God ſent hem a yerd of chaſtiſement. But yet thei that kept the wallis and¹⁹ touris of the Cite rounde aboute, be-cauſe the pepuſt withoute ſhuld not knowe nor wete of her grete nede and myſchef that thei weren ynne, euyr 28 to²⁰ hold her courte and²¹ contynauce of opyn werre, bothe with ſhot of Gounnys and quarellis.²²

¶ But amonge ther iſſewid ſumme pepuſt of the Cite oute; and they come forth, and weren take of the wacchemen withoute 32 at the²³ ſege Cite. ¶ And they affraynyd hem how it ſtode with the²⁴ pepuſt that weren lefte with-ynne the Cite. ¶ And they anſuerid and told to the Engelisſhe pepuſt of the grete nede,

¹ and an B. and G. ² theyr B. ³ and pey B. and G.

⁴ in B. ⁵ pat per B. ⁶ wold not B. ⁷ nor B. ⁸ by om. B.

⁹ and om. B. ¹⁰ of B. ¹¹ nought ellis of om. B.

¹² her owne B. ¹³ of of G. ¹⁴ was þo B. ¹⁵ a syde B.

¹⁶ hys mete wolde hyde B. ¹⁷ and his drynke om. B.

¹⁸ her grete B. ¹⁹ and the B. ²⁰ to B. to and to G.

²¹ and curſed B. ²² querell and gonnes B. ²³ the om. B. ²⁴ hys B.

scarste, hungir and¹ dethe, that was euery day² amongis hem.
³ But our folke wold not beleue nor truste hem,³ be cause that the
 pepuH with-ynne hilde⁴ alle tymes contynauce like in werre, day
 be day,⁵ as thei did beforne vpon the sege withoute; wherefore thei⁴
 had⁶ hem in⁷ no truste in no degre.

And thanne with-ynne a lituH⁸ while aftur, the worthi men
 that weren with-ynne the Cite, gederid alle the pore pepuH that tho
 weren with-ynne the Cite, man, woman, and child, and brought⁸
 hem to the yatis, and put hem oute at euery porte by an C
 personys on⁹ a rowte, and bad hem helpe hem-self in her beste
 maner that thei myght, for there thei shold no lenger abyde yn no
 wyse with hem. ¶ And thanne thei come forthe toward¹⁰ the¹²
 Engelisshe sege, knelynge on her kneis, and wepynge sore, bothe
 man, and woman with yonge sowkyng children¹¹ in her armys, and
 olde febuH men knelynge besyde hem, makynge there a dilfuH
 crye; for alle they cryed there atonys "haue mercy on vs, ye good¹⁶
 and¹² Cristen and worthy men."¹³ ¶ And thanne oure Kyng
 had¹⁴ rewthe on hem and pite,¹⁵ and yaf hem brede and drynke,
 and made hem turne ayen to the Cite; and there thei kepte hem
 in the diche, that thei shold not knowe nor here the ordynauce²⁰
 nor counseile of the sege, ne of her wacche in no wyse, for trayne
 and treson that myght falle.

¶ And whanne these pore pepuH shuld turne¹⁶ ayen, thei made
 high sorough and grete murmuracion amonge hem-self, and seyden²⁴
 they had leuyr byn sleyn there thanne go ayen into the Cite,
 and dilfully, with high voycis¹⁷ bannyng and cursynge her¹⁸ owne
 nacion, for thei that weren with-ynne the Cite wold not suffre hem
 come in ayen; wherefore y trowe thei diden grete synne and mys-²⁸
 chieff to hem-self; for meny of him deiden there for colde, that,
 and thei had byn with-ynne, her lifs¹⁹ might haue byn sauyd and
 kepte.

¶ And tho was come the tyme of Cristnesse, in whiche oure³²
 Kyng did the grete mercy and relef to his enemyes, at the reuer-
 ence of that Glorious feste of the byrthe of oure Lorde Ihesu
 Criste and of his blessid modir, oure Lady Seynt Marye, that

¹ and *om.* B. ² day new B. ³⁻³ But . . . hem *om.* B.
⁴ hilde at B. ⁵ day by day in werre B. ⁶ had of B. ⁷ in *om.* B.
⁸ litull *om.* B. ⁹ in B. ¹⁰ wolking to B. ¹¹ leaf 139, back.
¹² and *om.* B. ¹³ englyssh man B. ¹⁴ had grete B.
¹⁵ & pytee on hem B. ¹⁶ shuld algetis turne A. ¹⁷ voice A.
¹⁸ her A. he G. ¹⁹ lyuys A.

gracious and mercifull virgyne. For, of high pite, mercy and¹
 grace, and at the reuerence of² that tyme of the holy feste, the
 Kynge, of high compascion that he had in hert, and of his worthi
 4 and excellent manhode, sent oute his heraudis in good araye, bothe
 to hem that weren wyth-yinne the Cite as welle as with-out the
 Cite, on the Cristemesse day self, to hem³ that lackid vitaile, that
 thei shold come and haue mete and drynke ynow, in worship of the
 8 Feste, and sauſ-condite to come and to goo. And thei seiden
 alle 'gramersis' lightly, as thei had no nede there-to, and set no
 pryce by his sonde. And vnnethe thei wold graunte space vnto
 the⁴ pepuſ of her owne nacion to ben releuyd that layn in the dicke
 12 vnder the Cite wallis, that thei had drouen and put oute of grete
 myschieff. But two preestis and iiij seruauſtis for⁵ to brynge hem
 vitailles, mete and drynke; and if ther come eny moo personys,
 thei wold shete to hem and sle hem to dethe. ¶ And thanne
 16 weren alle these pore pepuſ set arowe; and these two preestis with
 her iiij. seruauſtis broughten hem plente of mete and drynke, of
 the Kyngis gracious almys; and so thei weren at⁶ that tyme made
 welle at eese; and replete of mete and drynke. And as thei sete
 20 her mete to fonge, this talkynge thei had amongis hem. ¶ "A,
 almyghty God," thanne thei seide, "the⁷ Engelisshe-men by⁸ of
 good and treue⁹ herte! Lo, how here this excellent Prynce and
 Kynge that we thought neuyr to¹⁰ obey vnto, ne neuyr profre ne
 24 don hym homage, now hathe he on vs more pite and compassion by
 a M^{ti}¹¹ thanne hathe oure owne nacion; therefore, oure Lord God,
 that art full of myght, graunte hym grace to wyne and gete his
 trewe right!" Thus the pore pepuſ for the Kynge prayde; that
 28 God kepe and mayntene hym in alle his nedis. ¶ Whanne thei
 had thus seruyd alle the pore pepuſ with mete and drynke, and
 were welle reffresshid, oure folke turnyd ayen to¹² the Kynge, for
 the trewe lastid no lengur but that same day.

32 ¶ And whanne the nyght be-ganne to apere and shewe, thanne
 thei on the wallis beganne newe werre ayen vpon the seege, and
 wacchidden a ward that¹³ full streyte bothe day and nyght with
 hungir smerte, for that tyme her vitail were alle wastid and
 36 spente. And meny a worthy body for defaute of lyuelod of mete

¹ and A. an G. ² of om. A. ³ peym A. ⁴ the pore A.

⁵ for om. A. ⁶ at om. A. ⁷ pese A. ⁸ ben A.

⁹ treue A. treue of G. ¹⁰ to om. A. ¹¹ M^{ti} parte A. ¹² vnto A.

¹³ þat was A.

and drynke was¹ spent and ded, for euyr grete hounzir brekithe herd stonen waH yn hir grete nede; for euyr the lif is dere and suete.

¶ Thanne alle the Capteynys of that Cite, bothe Baillis, Bur-⁴ geses and comunnalte, toke her counseilH with-ynne hem self to trete with the Kyng; and with the pepulH the cause pryncipalH for the high myschieff that tho was amongis hem² of enfamenynge for hungir; for thei knewe welle thei myght note longe endure so; ⁸ and for the sodeyne and ³multitude dethe that was euyry day amonges hem for lakke of ffode, vpon the New Yeris Euyr at nyght, the pepulH with-ynne come to the wallis at euyry porte to the seege, and clepedyn a knyght to speke with hem; and there ¹² was non man that tyme that hem herd tille thei come to the Porte de Pounte of Sayne. ¶ And that was on that side⁴ as the Erle of Huntynghdon kepte the ward. And there thei weren herd, and answerid tho ayen, and askid what thei wold: and thei ansuerid ¹⁶ and seid, and prayed at the ⁵reuerence of Almyghty God,⁶ if ther were eny gentilH knynght that wold here her complaynte, and bere her erende vnto the Kyng. ¶ And thanne oon ansuerid and seid, he was a knyght; and thei preyd hym to telle hys name. And ²⁰ he seid, "my name ys Vmfreyle;" and thei thankid God and oure Lady that thei had mette with hym, for he was of the old blode of that contre of Normandy; "and we praye you to helpe vs haue an ende betwene youre Kyng and vs." And he seid, "what is youre ²⁴ wille?" and thei seid at fewe wordis: "we haue byn at euyry porte of the ⁷City there these Pryncis loggyn before, and haue callid aftur speche of hem; but we coude haue non ansuere: ffirste at the Duke of Clarence, the excellent prynce; and from thens to ²⁸ the Duke of Gloucestre, his worthi brothir; and ofte we clepid, and longe there stode; and so we come doune to the Duke of Exeture, and there we gate non ansuere.

The starving
Roueners
can't get Lord
Warwick or
the Earl
Marshal to
listen to
them.

"And at Warwike, that Erle so fre,
We callid ofte: it wold not be;
And at the Erle MarchaH we were.
ther was no wight that wold us ansuere.
And we haue clepid at alH these so moche,
But non ansuere we coude gete truliche;

32

36

¹ was pere A.² hem A. om. G.³ leaf 140.⁴ side pere A.⁵ the heigh A.⁶ god almyghty A.⁷ pis A.

therefore we pray these princis, for Mari sake,		The Rouenens want English nobles to beg Henry V to
And for that Lordis loue that did vs make,		
As thei ben dukis of high dyngnyte,		
And cheeftaynys of cheualrye,	4	
Vnto the Kyng to prey for vs,		
And we may fynde hym so gracious ;		be gracious to them,
And we wolle gon with you also		
Vnto the Kyng, and speke hym to,	8	
And beseche hym, for loue of that Kyng		
That made heuen, erthe, and alle thyng,		
With his witte and his good auyse,—		
Aboue alle pryncis he is pryse,—	12	
And for his owne high pryncchode,		
and also for his owne worthy manhode,		for his manhood's sake,
And as he is kyng moste excellent,		
and to God, but to non othir, obedyent,	16	
That regnythe here in erthe by ryght, ¹		
But only to oure ² Ihesu full of myght,		
And with-ynne hym selff Emperoure,		
and also ³ Almyghti kyng and conqueroure,	20	
That he hym-self wold graunte vs space,		
and sauf-condite, and alle his grace,		and grant them safe-conduct for
Nought-withstondyng oure offence,		
That we myght come to his presence,	24	
xij. men of vs by on assent,		12 of em to come to him.
That lordly Kyng to telle fully oure entent.		
May we come hym onys to se,		
With the myght of God so fre,	28	
We shuþ hym shewe, withoute distaunce,		
that shaþ hym turne to grete plesaunce."		
Quod ⁴ Vmfray: "this y [as]sent;"		Umfraville agrees, and asks the Duke of Clarence
and ⁵ toke his leue, and forth he went,	32	
And come to the Duke of Clarence there,		
and told hym ⁶ this mater aþ in ffeere.		
he thankid God and his modir eke,		
that oure enemyes were be-come so meke,	36	
and ⁷ that he wold, with good wille,		
Speke for hem oure Kyng vntille.		to speak to Henry V.

¹ right A. nyght Kk. ² oure lord A. ³ also a A.
⁴ Ox A. ⁵ he A. ⁶ hym om. A. ⁷ & seide A.

lo, so sone this good lord hem vndirtoke,
 and her mekenesse he nought forsoke.
 he is a prynce forto¹ comende;
 but aH to fewe of siche ben founde;
 he is manfuH, whanne werre dothe laste,
 and mercifuH whanne hit is paste;
 Manhode, mekenesse, witte and grace,
 Is conteynyed with hym in a lituH space;
 he wantith nothyng a prynce shold haue;
 Almyghti God mote hym saue!
 Thanne Vmfrey² toke his leue,
 and his message he went to meue.
 To Gloucestre thanne did he goo,
 To Exetur the Duke also,
 and told hem the tydyngis how it was.
 thei thonkyd God of his high grace,
 that her enemyes, ayens her wille,
 ffor nede of socoure wold yold him tille;
 and seid thei wold, for Goddis sake,
 helpe for hem a good ende to make.
 loo these pryncis of high mekenesse,—
 God kepe hem yn hele and from sikenesse!— [lf. 140, bk.]
 Though thei haue suffrid peynys smerte,
 yet haue thei mercy and pite in herte.
 Thanne Vmfreuyle, his leue he tace,
 and passid forthe in his space
 To erlis and to lordis be³ name;
 and thei hym seid aH the same.
 Lo! these cheefenteynys of cheualrie,
 how thei weren come in cherite!
 therefore God, of his grete grace,
 yef hem good spede in euyry place.
 thanne on⁴ Newe Yeris Day in the mornyn[n]g,
 Sir Gilbert Vmfreuyle come to the Kyng,
 and aH this mater to hym he⁵ seid:
 And there of the cite mekely hym prayed.
 oure Kynge seid thanne, be good auyse,
 and also at his owne deuyse,

Umfraville
 goes to the
 Duke of
 Exeter and
 to Gloster,

who promise
 him help.

Then he goes

to other
 nobles,

and then to
 Henry V.

¹ to A. ² vmfreuile A. ³ by A. ⁴ a A.
⁵ he om. A.

to graunte that cite aH her wille :		
"let xij of hem come me tille."		Henry V will see the 12 Roueners.
of aH his lordis euyry-chone.		
ayens it was neuyr oone.	4	
lo! that high ¹ prynce and kynge so felle, ²		
of aH erthely creaturis he is welle ;		
lo! how he hathe prouyd hym self manfuH,		How manful and merciful he is,
and as ³ a prynce right mercifuH ;	8	
thei that had hym so-ofte ⁴ meuyd,		
and also hym had gretely greuyd,		
and also ⁵ put hym yn grete coste,		
and of his pepuH fuH meny loste,	12	
And ⁶ withstonde hym of his right,—		
And now thei byn falle in his myght,		when he has ein in his power!
and at his wille hem to greue,		
yf he wol put hem to myscheue ;	16	
and thanne hym-self to light so lowe,		
of her wille to wete and knowe,		
and also to graunte hem to trete :		
that was heigh mercy and cherite.	20	
Sithe that thei had hym so ⁷ agilte,		
and lithe in hym to don hem ben spilte ;		
he grauntid hem ⁸ grace and merciful mekenes :		
ffor-sothe, a child of God, y wot ⁹ he is ; ¹⁰	24	He is truly a Child of God.
of goodnesse and uertu he wantith no thyng ;		
that his ¹¹ preisyng for a kynge.		
therefore Criste, for his passion,		
kepe hym in ¹² right compassion !	28	
whanne the kynge had grauntid, as y haue told,		
to Vmfreuyle, the knyght so bolde		
The Kynge seid, "sir, whanne shalle this be ?		
If thei wille to-morrowe, let see."	32	
Thanne ¹³ Vmfreuyle of the Kynge leue hent. ¹⁴		Umfraville goes back to Rouen.
And to that ¹⁵ cite anon he went.		
and whanne he kome at that ¹⁶ gate,		

¹ he A. ² principaH B. ³ is B. ⁴ so oft had B.

⁵ also had B. ⁶ and had B. ⁷ so greuously B.

⁸ hem of hys B. ⁹ wot wele B.

¹⁰ is pat doth good ayenst mysse B. ¹¹ is B.

¹² in hys B. ¹³ tho B. ¹⁴ toke leue B. ¹⁵ pe B.

¹⁶ that om. B.

	the statis of the cite he fonde the[r]ate.	
Umfraville says Henry V will see the	he seid : " y haue be with oure Kyng ¹ , and he hathe grauntid youre askyng. to-morowe, be-tymes loke ye be yare,	4
12 Roueners to-morrow.	ffor xij of yow shuþ to hym fare : and syn ye shuþ gon hym to, My counseil y rede that ye do. to-morow y wote that ye shulle se	8
	The rialliste prynce of Cristiante ; To ² syche a prynce neuer ye spake, ne so loue a worde can take.	
They must take care their tongues are not too long, but speak few words.	Theynke with hert byform youre tonge, leste youre tongis ³ byn to longe : speke but fewe, and welle hem sette To that prynce whanne ye byn mette ; ffor a word wronge oute of ward	12 16
	Might make you to ⁴ fare fuþ herd, Therefore, of wordis loke ye ben wise, and sei no thyng withoute good avise."	
	thanne thanked thei hym fuþ curtesly, and of his god lore seid, " gramercy ; that ye wold vs so moche good teche, or that we come to that worthi princis speche."	20
	he seid " adieu ! " and went his wey, the seturday aftur neweyeris day.	24
Next day at prime he meets the	and at ⁵ that houre of day be ⁶ pryme, Sir Gilbert Vmfreyuyle come that ⁷ tyme ; of the Kyngis squyeris weren sent, that tyme wyth ⁸ hym verayment, ⁹ ¹⁰ and yomen of the crowne also, with hym assyngny were to goo, ¹⁰ thei went to Sein Hillariis Gate :	28 32
12 Roueners :	anon the xij men come oute there-ate :	
4 knights, 4 clerks, and 4 burgesses.	iiij knyghtis and ¹¹ iiij clerkes, and ¹¹ iiij burgeys, wise ¹² of werkes : alle ¹³ thei were clothid in ¹⁴ blacke,	36

¹ kyng^e *om.* B. ² with B. ³ wordes B.
⁴ to *om.* B. ⁵ and on B. ⁶ at B. ⁷ by B.
⁸ with B. wyth be G. ⁹ hym assigned were to go B.
¹⁰⁻¹⁰ and yomen . . . goo *om.* B. ¹¹ and *om.* B.
¹² wise B. with wise G. ¹³ & B. ¹⁴ att in B.

comly of chere, and feire thei spake.		
whanne thei were come to the ¹ hous of charite,		
thenne oure Kynge, at messe was he ;		Henry V is at Mass.
with-ynne the chirche thei did lend	4	
the[r]till that the messe was at the ² end.		
tho ³ come forthe the Kynge withoute let,		He comes out.
there as he had knelid in his closet,		
with chere so cheuetayneliche,	8	
with ⁴ so lith light ⁵ a loke, and lordliche, ⁶		
and so right solent senblaunt, and sad :		
⁷ to se that lord men mygh[t] be glad. ⁷		
as sone as the Frensshe-men hym did ⁸ see,	12	The Rouenens kneel to him,
To-forñ hym thei fille on kne.	[leaf 141]	
he blenchid on hem with stately chere ;		
he ⁹ ne wiste what thei were :		
thei enclinyd hem with meke speche,	16	
And a bille to hym thei did reche.		hand him a Petition,
he taught a lord to take her bille,		
and sumwhat he turnyd hem till :		
what it ment, y hard say ;	20	
tretise thei wold, be eny way ;		
Thei be-soght hym, for Goddis sake,—		and pray him to hear them.
that heuen and erthe and alle did make,		
Bothe este, weste, northe and southe,—	24	
‘that ye wold here oure speche be ¹⁰ mouthe.’		
the Kynge bad hem speke and sey her wille ;		
and thei were fayn, and knelid stille.		
Thé seid, “we you beseche ¹¹ and prey,	28	They beg him
ffor His loue that deid on good Friday,		
And for his Modiris loue so fre,		
considre now on ¹² vs now, for charite !		to pity them.
the pore pepuH that byn withoute,	32	Their poor are starving.
In our dichis rounde aboute,		
Thei lien there for faute of breed ;		
and for defaute many byn dede.		Many are dead.
haue ye pite hem vppon,	36	

¹ to be B. to G. ² the om. B. ³ to B. ⁴ And with B.

⁵ hygh B. ⁶ lordshyppe B. ⁷⁻⁷ to . . . glad om. B.

⁸ did om. B. ⁹ As he B. ¹⁰ by B.

¹¹ byseche yow B. ¹² consider & tender B.

	and yeue hem leue ¹ thens to gon."	
Henry V tells the 12 Roueniers	ffuH still the Kyng stode aH ² that while, and nouthir did ³ laugh nor smyle ; but with a countynaunce so clere, and also with a cheuetaynly chere, nothir ⁴ to myld nothir ⁵ to straunge, But ay in oon withoute chaunge, his countenaunce did not abate, but alwey stode in oon astate.	4 8
that he didn't put their poor folk in the city ditch.	And tho hym luste to yeue ansuere, he seide : "y put hem not there, into the diche of that cite ; I put hem not there ; and that wote ye. Thei were not put there at myn ordynaunce, ne non shuH passe at my suffraunce ; Thei abode there while thei mought ;"— and so he seide to hem fuH ryght ; ⁶ — "and as to you, ye knoue welle this : ye haue offendid me with mys, and from me kepte my cite, the whiche that is ⁷ heritage fre, and ⁸ shuld be my liege men."	12 16 20
They have offended him, and kept his city from him.	They ansuerid and seid thanne : "Off this cite that we here kepte, we haue a charge, and that a depe. hit vs bitak ⁹ oure souyrayn liege. ¹⁰ For to deffend hit from saught or ¹¹ sege ; and we ben his liege men born, and also holesy to hym we ben sworn. and also of the Duke of Burgoyne so fre, A grete charge of hym had we ; but wold ye now, of youre highe grace, Graunte vs alle lif and space, that summe of vs myght to hem goo, and warne hem botho of oure woo, and of oure ferthe vs to excuse ;	24 28 32 36
They plead		
that they are the lieges of their king,		
and ask leave to warn him and the Duke of Burgundy of their state.		

¹ hem leue B. heue G. ² stode all B. all G.³ noþer did B. nouthir G. ⁴ not B. ⁵ nor B.⁶ ryght B. sothe G. ⁷ is myn B. ⁸ and ye B.⁹ hit was bytake B. hit vs bite G. ¹⁰ liege B. kyng G.¹¹ & A.

ffor many of vs woſt hem refuse,
and to you yelden oure¹ cite,
and alle youre owne liege men be."

The Rouenens
will yield
Rouen to
Henry V.

The Kynge seid, "y do you oute of doute,
My cite y wolle not gon withoute.

4 He says he
will not go
without
his city.

and as touchynge to² youre Frensshe liege,

ye³ wote welle that y hold this sege ;

and the Duke of Burgoyne also,

8

Their French
King and the
Duke have
known of
the siege.

alle thei wete welle, bothe two ;

ffor alle the⁴ while that y here haue byn,

Messengeris haue go betwene ;

and yf thei like to neigh me nere,

12

thei weten welle to ffynde me here ;

ffor y wolle not hens goo

withoute my right, for frynde nor ffoo,

sith thei so longe beforne it knewe.

16

and nowe to sende hem message newe,

it were to⁵ hem no newelte,

and to us⁶ but superfluite.

Siche message wol y non sende ;

20

it is no nede, so God me amende !"

It's no use
to send em
a message.

and by God
he'll not
send one.

And whanne the Kynge had yeue that ansuere,

of the⁷ mater spake thei no more ;

pay⁸ seiden, "feire it is to wyne

24

Rone, with the men that⁹ ben ther-ynne."

The Kynge seid : "it is myn owne londe ;

I woſt it wyne, though ye it with-sonde,

and ye mowe there-ynne so deserue,

ye shuſt be reward aftur¹⁰ as ye serue !"

with that word thei weren aſlayid.

thanne spake a clerke, and thus he seid :

"souyrayne lord, if¹¹ ye woſt take hede

32

In stori that ye may rede,

how ij sheuetaynys a day had set,

and with ther¹² hostis thei weren met,

bothe arayid in a felde,

36

He'll win
Rouen ;
and if they
oppose him,
they'll suffer.

A clerk tells
him a story :

2 hosts met
to fight.

¹ youre A. ² to om. A. ³ he A. ⁴ pay A.

⁵ to A. to no G. ⁶ us now A. ⁷ pat A.

⁸ pay A. then G. ⁹ that A. that that G.

¹⁰ after om. A. ¹¹ y A. ¹² her A.

	and weren redi batalle to yelde :	
The weaker brought the stronger bread and wine, to make them merciful.	The weyker party of the men thanne brought the biger parti brede and wyn, In tokenyng that thei shold be Grace, mercy, and eke pite :	4
We Roueners bring you the same, and Rouen.	and nowe we brynge you bred and wyn, and Rone that cite feire and fyne." "Rone," he seid, "is my herytage, I wille haue it withoute fage. And fro this tyme y rede ye do, that mercy and grace may come you to. And at the reuerence of god almyght and of Mary his modir, that maiden so ¹ bright, Of treti ² y graunte you space ; And if ye wille ye may haue grace." thanne seid thei, "sir, pur charite, how wille ye to youre pore pepuþ be, ³ that in diches suffryn pyne, and for defaute deie as suyne ?"	[leaf 141, back] 8
Henry grants them time,	The Kynge ansuerid hem with wit fuþ wise : "Thereof woþt y take myn a-vise, as God put hert, mynde, ⁴ and wille, So wiþt y do that pepuþ vntille : as he me redithe, y wille hem rewe." with that he went and seid "adieue !"	12
and will consider how he'll treat the starving outsiders.	The ⁵ ffrensse men, that same while, fforthe thei went with Vmfreuyle ; And toward the cite as thei yode, thei spoken of oure Kynge so goode :	16
The Roueners go home wards,	Thei seiden, "he is, to oure advise, of alle erthely kyngis moste vise, takyng reward to his chere and to his contynaunce in fere, To his person and propurte, to his ffeturis and ⁶ beaute, And to his depe discrecion that is in his possession, and to his passyng pryncehode,	20
and praise Henry V.		24
		28
		32
		36

¹ so om. A. ² tretise A. ³ see A. ⁴ mynde herte A.
⁵ These A. ⁶ & his A.

and to his discrete and worpy ¹ manhode ;		The Rouen delegates praise Henry
ffor he is mercyfuH in sight,		
and askithe nothyng but his right :		
These vertuis byn a passyng thyng,	4	
That byn with-ynne siche a kynge.		
how shuld he do ² but wynne honour ?		
how shuld he be but a conquerour ?		
welle he dothe ³ withoute dene ;	8	
God hym loue, and that is sene."		
Thus the Frensshe men, of the Kynge talkithe,		
Toward the cite as thei walkithe.		
her leue at Vmfreuyle ⁴ thei toke,	12	
Into the Cite, and hym forsoke.		and enter Rouen.
On that othir day nexte, erliche,		
the Kynge made two tentis to picche,—		
On for the ⁵ Englishe, and on ⁶ for the ⁵ Frensshe ;	16	Henry V has 2 tents pitcht for the English and French to treat in.
And bothe thei stode in Gloucestre ⁷ trenche,—		
Though the stormys were neuyr so grete,		
drie-hedid that thei myght trete.		
whanne bothe paulyownys weren pight,	20	
thei went to trete with aH her myght.		
Warwike, that erle so wise,—		Our men are Lords Warwick,
ffor in our partye he bare the pryce ;—		
Salusburi, that erle so treue,	24	Salisbury,
and also the Lord Fithe-hughe,		Fitzhugh, and
and the Kyngis steward, Hungurford,		Hungerford.
By name y can no moo record ;		
and from that cite come hym to mete,	28	They meet 12 Roueners.
xii. of the Frensshe that weren discrete.		
hit was a sight of solempnite		It is a solenu sight.
ffor to behold bothe partē ;		
To see the riche in her araye ;	32	
and on the wallis the pepuH that laye ;		
and on oure pepuH that weren withoute,		
how thike that thei walkid aboute ;		
and the herowdis, semely to sene,	36	
how that thei went ay betwene ;		

¹ & worpy A. and G. ² be A. ³ with A.
⁴ vmfreuyleuyle G. ⁵ the om. A. ⁶ & an oþer A.
⁷ Gloucestre G.

The Herald	the Kyngis horoudis and pursuauantis In cotis of armys amyunauntis ; The Englysshe a beste, the Frensshe a floure, of Portyngale bothe caste and toure, and othir cotis of dyuersite, as lordis beren in her degre. Good-liche with gold thei were be-gon, Right as the sonne on hem shon. this sight was to hem a sory chere ; of sorow and pyne thei weren full nere ; of that pore pepu ^{ll} that weren put oute ; thei had[den] ¹ vnnethe a cloute ; The clothis that weren on her backe, kept hem there from reine and racke ; The wethur was to hem a payne, ffor alle that tyme it stode be ² neyne. There men myght se a ³ grete pite, a child of two yere or thre Goo aboute and begge his brede, ffor ffadir and modir bothe lay dede. and vndir hem the watir stode ; and yet thei lay cryyng aftur foode. Summe storuen to pe ⁴ dethe, and summe stoppid bothe yen and brethe ; And summe crokid in the kneys, and as lene as eny treis ; and women holdyng in her arme a dede child, and nothyng warme ; And childeren soukyng on the pappe Withynne a dede womanys lappe ; There men myght ffynde ffu ^{ll} ryue, x. or xij. deie, ayens on alyue. and thei knewe not of dethe, So preuely thei yolden vpe the brethe, withoute noyse or eny cry ; as thei had slept, so did thei dey. These were sightis of differaunce, that on of ioye, that othir of penaunce,	4 8 12 16 20 24 28 32 36
were drest like lords, adorned with gold.		
The poor French had hardly a clout.		
A child of 2 begd bread,		
its parents lay dead.		
Some had starvd to death.		
Mothers held dead children up.		
10 or 12 dead to 1 living.		
They died noiselessly, as if they slept.		

[leaf 142]

¹ had hem A. ² by A. ³ see a A. se G. ⁴ to be A. to G.

as heuen and erthe had partid on twoo,
that on to wele, that othir to woo.
ther was neuyr¹ kyng so straunge,
To see that sight, but his hert wold chaunge,
and wold conside to that syght,
he shuld be pensiff, and moche light.

4 The sad
sight wold
change any
king's heart.

there men myght lerne in her lif,
what it is, ayens right to strif;
ffor while it lay in her lotte,
thei were ffuH crueH (God it wotte),
and mercy they wold non haue
tille nede come that thei moste craue;
and yet, for alle her wikkid wille,
Mercy thei were take vntiH.
Now of that pepuH let we be,
and of oure tretis speke we.

8 Yet the
Roueners had

12 no mercy on
us till their
nede came.

we hem chalengithe and accusithe,
and thei ansuerithe and excusithe.
we askid mykiH, and thei proferid smaH,
that is yuyH to accord with aH;
tho thei tretid an xiiij nyght,
and yet accordid thei ne nyght.

16 We discus
with em

20 for a fort-
night in vain,

24 and break off
treating.

thanne the tretise thei broken in haste,
and bethe tentis adoun were caste.
thanne the Frensshe men hem be-thought,
her owne bale that thei had wrought.
whanne thei shuld her leue take,
thei preyed oure lordis, and this thei spake:

28 They pray
for delay
till midnight.

"For the loue of God Almyght,
contenew this tretise to mydnyght;
And yf we clepyng, that ye wille speke
with-ynn that tyme, we you be-seke.
that we mowe² haue eudyence
fforto here oure euydence."

32 Our lords
agree,

Quod³ the Englysshe lordis, "that, we assent."
thei toke her leue, and forthe thei⁴ went.
to the Kyng our lordis passid,
and tolde hym aH these materis faste,

36 and report to
Henry V.

¹ neuer pe A. ² may A. ³ Ox A. ⁴ pay A. the G.

	how thei lefte, and in what issewis, and how ¹ thei contynuyd the trewis. yet the Kyng was mercyfuH in mode: That thei had grauntid, he not withstode.	4
Henry V approves his lords' action.	Thei passid forthe with simpuH chere, Into that cite alle in fere.	
In Rouen,	Sone in the toun it was yspoke that the trewis was tho broke.	8
the poor abuse the rich,	the pore pepuH alle aboute, on the riche thei made a showte, and seiden, "ye fals cherlis! and also ye murtherreris and manquelleris!	12
call em 'murderers,'	will ye take no reward to vs tha[t] suffren here so herd, and deiden here euyry day? welle we thanne telle may;	16
and appeal to God against them.	and also rennyth vpon oure coste, and in youre defaute we ben loste. we pray to God that ye ² mote ansuere, be-fore that iuged that suffrid sore on Caluery, vpon the rode, and bought vs with His blessid blode, that ye ben gilty in this case.	20
	we you apele byfore His face! wold ³ ye obeye you to youre liege, thanne wold he come ⁴ lere his ⁵ sege;	24
	but for youre goodis ye abide, and for youre pompe and for youre pryde ye nyH enclyne to oure Kyng, but rathur lese vs for hungerynge.	28
If they won't yield to Henry V	but ye accord with oure wille, right here anon we shuH you kyH; and he shaH come into his right.	32
the poor 'll kill em.	and yf ⁶ ye it withstonde, we shaH fight, leuyr thanne thus to lye here, and be enfamenyd alle in ffere." they seide they dede it for a skylle. alle that we do ys for a wile,	36

¹ how pat A. ² pat ye A. that G.⁴ sone A. ⁵ pis A. ⁶ yf om. A.³ wlod G.

to excuse vs to that fode,

¹ that we pay hym but lituH goode.²

thei semblid thanne aH that cite;

and euery man seid in his degre :

"no nede is to counseilH goo ;

ther is no moo but of two :

ffor to dellyuyre vp this clos,

or to be dede here : this is to ³ chos."

to the Porte of Seynt Hillary thei went,

and clepid oute by on assent.

tho ansuerid hem ⁴ a knyght anon,

that was clepid Robesard, Sir Iohn :

"sirrys," he seid, "what is youre wille?"

thei ansuerid and seid hym tille :

"we you be-seche, pur charite,

And for the honoure of cheualrye, [leaf 142, back] 16

that ye for vs woH speke youre speche

to the Duke of Gloucestre, and hym beseche

So for us to ⁵ the Kynge to prayne,

That we nought mowe ⁶ trete ayayne. 20

we wolte submitt ⁷ to his wille,

and alle that longith hym vntille,

oure prosonys and oure possessionys,

alle to dispose at his discrecionys." 24

whanne that ⁸ Robesard the Duke had told,

ffor hem to speke in haste he wold :

he meuyd hit vnto oure Kynge,

and he hym grauntid newe trefynge

Of Caunturbury the Erchebisshop fre :

at Seynt Katerynys thanne lay he.

whanne he was knowynge of that care,

at his herte he toke it sare ;

to the kynge sone he wente,

and hym be-sought with good entente,

that he myght wende ⁹ to that cite,

and speke with her spryrytuate,

and to be meue of that trete ;

4 The Rousers
say they must
either give up
their city

8 or die.

12 They ask Sir
John Robsart

to get the
Duke of
Gloster to tell
Henry V

that they'll
submit
to him.

The Duke
tells the
King.

The Arch-
bishop of
Canterbury

has leave to
speak to the

Religious
of Rouen.

¹ & pat A. ² litil goode A. lituH G. ³ be A.

⁴ hem answerid A. ⁵ to om. A. ⁶ now A.

⁷ submytte vs A. submittis G. ⁸ pat A. the G.

⁹ myght wende A. myght G.

	and help a fynall pees to be.	
Tents are pitcht.	the Kyng hym grauntid anon right. two paulyonys anon were pight, ¹ with-ynne the trenche that thei had ben. the erchebisshop pight his owne betwene ; So was that state of ² spirituale there for to make an vnity.	4
Negotiations go on for 4 days, and then end.	They tretid day, they tretid nyght, with candiH and torchis bryght ; thei tretid iiij dayes in that place, and tho made an ende, thorough Godis grace.	8
The Roueniers	whanne they knewe a clousion, the Frensshe men made a peticion ; her worship for to saue,	12
ask for 8 days, to send to the French king at Burgundy.	But viij dayes forto haue, That thei myght send to tho ³ Frensshe Kyng and to the Burgoyneys, this tydyng, In what degre they stode, and howe, willynge hem to haue reskowe.	16
Henry V grants them.	it was a poynte of cheualre ; The kyng hem grauntid with hert fre, that thei myght bothe knowe and kenne how that it shuld be, and whanne.	20
The Agree-ment is, that if no rescue comes in 8 days,	Now to my tale wiH ye tende, and y shaH you tell her poyntemente : In viij dayes, as y you tolde, yf no reskowis come to that hold,	24
Rouen is to be given up to Henry V,	They shuld dellyuere that cite, And alle the burgaysis, Englisshe to be, and to oure Kyng, of money sounde,	28
with £50,000, and they are to build Henry a castle on the Seine,	to pay oure Kyng .l. M ^{li} . ti. ; and more, they shuld vndirtake, a castell for oure Kyng to make, withynne in half yeris, withoute let ; and vpon Sayne it shuld be set. and thei to haue her ffraunchisis fre, as it was wonte in olde tyme to be. And no man withynne her cite selle,	32 36

¹ prght G. ² state of A. state G. ³ pe A.

But citezenys that ther-ynne duelle, And he that was a Normaut borne, And an Englishe man sworne ; prysoner and ¹ othir, as hit was skille,	4	
oure Kynge to raunsom at his wille ; and alle the sowdyouris that there were, her goodis to lese, ² and goo bare		The French soldiers in Rouen are to go home bare.
In her dowbelettis oute of the toune ; and yet oure Kynge yaf euyry man a goun.	8	
This was the compasicion, and made be ³ good discrecion.		Henry V gives each a gun.
thanne Graunde Iakis anon present, aftur reskewe he was sent ; and of that message he was full fayne.	12	The Rouen deputy to the French King
to Rone he come nought ageyne ; but a messagere thedur he did sende, and bad hym haue do, and make an ende,	16	sends a message that they'll not be rescued.
and did hem to wete (y telle you trewe,) Ther was no reskewe that he knewe.		
the viij day (the trowthe to telle), in the feste of Seint Wolston, that day befeH,	20	So on the 8th day of the truce
and this was vpon a Thorysday. oure Kynge thanne, in good aray, full rialliche in his astate,		Henry V
as a conquerowe, there he sate, with-ynne a ⁴ hous of cherite, to resseyue the keyis of that cite.	24	
mow sir Guy the botelere, and burgeisis of that cite in fere, to the Kynge the keyis they brought,	28	
and of legaunce hym besought.		receives the keys of Rouen
to Exeter, oure Kynge souerayne, comaund the keyis, and to be capteyne ; and the Duke tho charchid he	32	and hands them to the Duke of Exeter,
to resseyue that cite, and entre in his name that nyght, and assygnyd to hym many a knyght.	36	and bids him enter the city that night.

thanne the Duk of Exeter, withoute bode,

¹ or A. ² goodis to lese A. goodis G.
³ by A. ⁴ an A.

420 *The Duke of Exeter enters Rouen. Its starving folk.*

The Duke of Exeter rides into Rouen	toke his hors and forthe he rode to Benysyn that porte so stronge, That he had lay before so longe.	[leaf 143]	
	To that yate sone he cam,		4
with a brilliant suite.	and with hym many a worthi man ; There was neyinge of many a stede, And shynynge of many a gay wede ; There was many a geton gay, with mychiſt and grete aray.		8
	and whanne the yate was opynnyd there, thei ¹ weren redy, in to fare :		12
He is welcomd by music,	Trompis blewe her bemys of bras, pipis and clarionys, for-sothe ther was ; and as thei entrid, thei yaf a showte with her voyce : thei were ² full stowte.		15
and shouts	"Seint Gregori ! Seint Gregori !" thei cride on hight, and seide "welcome oure kyngis right !" the Frensshe pepuſt of that cite		
from thousands of the French.	were gederid be ³ thousandis hem to se : thei criden alle "welcome" in fere ; "in siche tyme mote ye entre here, plesynge to God that it may be, and to vs, pees and vnyte."		20
	and of that pepuſt, to tell the trewthe,		24
But it is sad to see the	yt was a sight of ffuſt grete rewthe : mykiſt of that folke ther-ynne, thei weren but very bonys and skyn ; with ey-on holow, and nose sharpe, vnnethe thei myght brethe or carpe ; ffor her colour was wan as lede, not like to lyf, but sone byn dede ; disfigurid patrouys and quantite, and as a dede Kynge thei weren paynte.		28
skin-and- bone folk,			
pale as lead, some dying,	there men myght se an exampleyre how foode makithe the pepuſt feyre : In euyry strete, summe lay dede, and hundris cryinge aftur brede ; and aftur longe, meny a day,		32
and hundreds crying for bread.			36

¹ & pay A. ² pat was A. ³ by A.

thei died as faste as thei myght be laid away.

In-to that wey, God hem wisse,
that thei may come to his blisse ! Amen !

Now wille y more telle¹ spelle, 4

and of the Duke of Excestre to telle.

to that casteH firste he rode, The Duke o
Exeter rides
thru Rouen,

and sithen the cite alle abrode, 8

lengthe and brede he it mette, and sets
English
banners on
its gates,

and riche baneris he upsette,

vppon the Porte Seint Hillary,

a banere of the TrynYTE ; 12

and at the Porte Baux² he set euyñ

a banere of the Quene of Heuen ;

and at Porte Martuyle he vp pight

Of Seint George a baner bright.

he set vpon the casteH to stonde, 16

The armys of Fraunce and of Engelande. on its castle
the arms of
France and
England.

And on the Fryday, in the mornynge, Next day,
Henry V
comes,

Into that cite come oure Kynge, 20

And alle the bisshopis in her³ aray, and is met
by bishops,
abbots, etc.,

and vij abbotis with crucchis gay :

xliij crossis there were of religion,

and seculer ; and alle thei went in⁴ prosession

ayens that Prynce withe-oute the toune ; 24

and euyry cros, as thei stode,

he blessid hem with mylde mode ;

and holy watir, with her honde,

They yaf the Prynce of oure lande. 28 and sprinkled
with holy
water.

and at the Porte Cauke⁵ so wide,

he passid yn⁶ withoute pryde ;

withoute pype or bomys blaste ;

oure Kynge, worthili he⁷ paste, 32

and as a conqueoure yn⁸ his right,

thankynge euyr God Almyght. like a
Conqueror,

and alle the pepuH in that cite,

"welcome oure lord !" thei seid so fre, 36 and all the
folk cry
'Welcome !'

"welcome into thyn owne right,

¹ telle om. A. ² kanyer A. ³ her A. he G.

⁴ a A. ⁵ kaux A. tauke G. ⁶ in passid A.

⁷ he in A. ⁸ in A. lyn G.

	as it is the wille of God Almyght!"	
The Rouen folk cheer	with that, thei cryed alle 'nowelle'	
Hen. V on his brown steed.	as high as thei myght yelle.	
	he rode vpon a browne stede ;	4
	of blake damaske was his wede ;	
	a peitreh of ¹ gold fuH bright	
	aboute his necke hyngedoun right.	
	and a pendaunt be-hynde hym did honge	8
	vnto the erthe, it was so longe.	
He alights at the Minster,	and thei that neuyr byforn hym ² did se,	
	thei knewe by chere whiche was he.	
	To the mynstur did he fare,	12
	and of his hors he light thare.	
	his chapeH mette hym at the dore there,	
	and went before hym alle in fere,	
	and songe a responde fuH glorious,	16
	'Quis est magnus dominus.'	
hears Mass,	Messe he hard, and offryd poo, ³	
and goes to the Cistle,	and thanne to the casteH did he goo,	20
	that is a place of rialte,	
	and a paleis of grete beaute.	
and lodges in the city,	there he hym loggid in the toune	
	with riaH and grete renoune.	
	and the cite faste did ⁴ encrease,	24
which is soon plentifully fed.	of bredde and wyn, fisse and flesshe ;	
	and thus oure gracious liege	
So the siege is ended.	Made an ende of his sege.	
	and alle that haue herd this redyng, [leaf 143, back]	28
	To his blisse, Criste you brynge,	
	That for vs deied vpon a tree !	
	Amen ! sey we alle pur charite.	

And in this yere was quene Iohna, that was Kynge Henryis ³² wiff⁵ the iiij^e, arestid be ⁶ John, Duke of Bedfford, thanne Lewtenaunt of Engeland, and sent to the casteH of Ledis in kent, to abide the wille and grace of the Kynge.

¶ And in the same tyme maystur Randolf, the gray ffrere, was ³⁶ taken in the yle of Gernesey, and was brought to the casteH of

¹ gf G. ² hym A. hym hym G. ³ offryd poo A. offryd G.

⁴ dide faste A. ⁵ henreis wiff A. Henryis G. ⁶ by A.

Chirbourne in Normandye, for treson that she¹ wrought ayens the Kyng.

¶ And at Wittesontyde the Kyng lay at Maunt with alle his lordis; and there he hild his rialte and feste at that tyme amonge alle his pepu^h. and tho was maystir Randulf the Grey frere, and his beupere, brought fro the caste^h of Cherborough to Maunte there the kyng lay; and from thens the² frere Randulf was brought to London, and put in-to the Toure in prison, by comaundement of the Kyng. And so by processe longe aftur the persone of the Toure and this frere Randulf fillen in debate and stryffe withynne the Toure ward; and there this persone smote this frere Randulf, and sloue hym; and thus he made his ende of the world.

¶ And at this same feste of Wittesontide, the Kyng made two newe lordis³ in Normandye: that on was the Capdowe of Burdeux, and he was made Erle of Langle;⁴ and Sir John Grey, Erle of Tankryule.

¶ And in the same tyme come the Embassitorys of Fraunce into Maunte, there the Kyng of Engeland lay, to haue a day of trete to the whiche trete the Kyng of Fraunce shuld come hym self and hys Quene, and Dame Katerene his doughtir, and the Duke of Burgoyne, with the othir counseile of Fraunce. And there the day and place was assignyd and take for bothe pertyes besyde this toune of Melange. And there was the feld rially apparaylid of tentis and paulyownys on bothe sidis, bothe for Engelisshe and Frensshe; and this fild was listid and palid alle rounde aboute in bothe sidis. ¶ And in the Frensshe side stode a pale dichid, for mistruste that they had of the Engelisshe pepu^h,⁵ and on bothe sidis serteyne men of armys weren assyngnyd for to kepe the fild, and in the myddis of this felde stode a paulyowne riale, with a large Egu^h gilte, for Kyng Henry of Engeland. ¶ And a tente stode aforne ayens it, for the Frensshe kyng. And in this paulyown and tente, by ordynaunce made, shuld no pepu^h come but tho that werne sworn on bothe sidis to the Counseille, vp peyne of dethe.

¶ And on the Engelisshe partye was ffirste, Henry the King of Engeland, and Thomas his brothir, the Duke of Clarence, and Sir Vmfray, his othir brothir, Duke of Gloucestre, and Sir Thomas Beauford, Duke of Exetir, and the nobu^h Erle of the Marche, and

¹ he A. ² pis A. ³ Erlis A. ⁴ langvile A.

⁵ And þe Englissh side was not but barrid A.

the Bisshop of Wynchestir, Sir Henry Beauford, the Kynges vnclé, and othir Bisshoppis, and erlis, barony and lordis, and othir clergie,¹ knyghtis and squyeris, that weren assyngnyd to the nombre of this trete. 4

¶ And on the Frensshe partye ther shuld be the Frensshe Kyng; but he come not, for his infirmyte was come on hym, that he myght not come there at that tyme. ¶ But the Quene come, and Dame Kateryne hir doughtir, and the Duke of Burgoyne, and 8 xxvj ladyes in good aray, with othir lordis of the counseil of Fraunce. And vij dayes they tretid and they myght not accorde; and tho weren the² paylounys and the tentis taken vp and born awaye, and the ffield broken vp, and euery man went his wey. 12

¶ And tho the Kyng of Engeland, with alle³ his lordis and all his pepuH, turnyd ayen and come to Maunte. ¶ And thanne this Erle of Gascoigne toke his retenewe with othir Engelisshe men, and come be⁴ nyght, and stale the toune of Pounteyse of the 16 Frensshe men, and drof hem oute; and so thei fled; and so the toune was wonne; and there-ynne was myche rychesse. ¶ And whanne the Kyng⁵ herd this, he sent his brothir Thomas, the Duke of Clarence, with his pepuH thidur to Pountese, and made 20 hym captayne there-of. And thanne he toke his pepuH and issewid oute, and come to-fore the Cite of paris with x. M^{ti}. men of armis;⁶ and there they lay two dayes and two nyghtis, and no pepuH proferid oute to hem; and tho they turnyd and went ayen to 24 Pounteyse.

¶ And thanne⁷ the Duke of Burgoyne, seyng⁸ that they myght not accorde with the Engelisshe party; tho the duke of Burgoyne and his counseile come to the Dolfyn, there he lay, to 28 trete with hym, to se and knowe how they myght beste voyde⁹ the Kyng of Engeland with alle his pepuH oute of the Rewme of Fraunce by theyre good counceil. ¶ And thanne the Dolfyn and his counseil tho answerid and seide, "like as he had brought,¹⁰ he 32 shuld bryng hem oute:" and so they fille in altercacion and strif with-ynne hem self; and there they sloue the Duke of Burgoyne and othir lordis that come with hym, in her counseil chambre.

¶ And whanne tydynges come to the Frensshe kyng and to 36 his counseil, and to alle the Burgeysis of Paris, that the Duke of

¹ clergie & A. ² the A. the the G. ³ alle om. A. ⁴ by A.

⁵ leaf 144.

⁶ of armis om. A. ⁷ po A. ⁸ seyng pis A.

⁹ beste voyde A. beste G. ¹⁰ brought hem in A.

Burgoyne was thus slayne and dede, and his othir ffellowship, thanne were they sory and yveH payde, and weren tho redles, and wiste not what to don. ¶ And thanne the Frensshe kyngis counseilH, 4 and the grete and worthiest Burgeysis of Parys token her counseilH with aH the countre aboute Parys, and come and tretid with the Kyng of Englonde and his lordis and grauntid hem her askynge, that Henry the Kyng of Engeland shuld haue dame Kateryne the 8 Frensshe Kynges doughtir to wif, with aH his othir askyngis, and the Kyng of Engeland toke his lordis and othir of his men, and made grete puryaunce and ordynaunce that he wold haue for his maryage.

¶ And so the Kyng wente into¹ Troys in² Champeyne there 12 they shold byn weddid; and thedur was Dame Kateryne brought with grete rialte; and there they were worthiliche welcomed and resseyued of aH the pepuH there. ¶ And there the Erchebissshop of Caunturburi, Sir Henry Chichele, and othir Engelisshe Bisshoppis 16 and Frensshe Bisshoppis diden this solempne seruyce there, and weddid hem togederis there by ordynaunce of God and holy chirche, with honoure and grete ioye. And there he made a rialle and a passynge worthi solempne feste to alle the pepuH that come, 20 the Monday nexte aftur the Trynyte day in the yere of his regne the vij^e.

¶ And aftur this rialle and solempne weddyng, the Kyng and the Quene, with her pepuH, come doune to Rone, and there they 24 dullid a longe tyme, and in the contre aboute Roone, til he sawe his tyme to come in-to Engeland with Dame Kateryne the Quene, his wif; and ordeynyd, or he come oute of Normandy, Thomas his brother, the Duke of Clarence, to be his leef-tenaunte of Nor- 28 mandye, and of alle othir londis that he had in that contre of Fraunce, and lefte hym pepuH and stuffe ynow to maynteyne and kepe his right that he had gotten, vnto his ayencomynge, and byraught hym to God.

¶ And tho aftur the Kyng and the Quene come to Caleys, and so ouyr the see into Engeland, and Dame Katherine his Quene with hym. And they landid at Douyre in Kente; and there come a grete multitude of men of the contre aboute, and in goode aray on hors- 36 backe, and welcomyd hem with alle honoure and reuerence that thei myght, and so brought hem to the cite of Caunturbury; and there were thei³ worthily welcomyd of alle the pepuH of alle the contre of Kent, and yoven vnto hir grete yeftis, and so come

¹ to A.

² in A. and G.

³ þay weren A.

ridyng with hem thorough Kente, and brought the Kyng and the Quene to his maner of Eltham, and there restid hem awhile tyll they wold come to London.

¶ And the meyre and aldremen, with alle the commnalte of the 4 Cite of London, lete ordeyne and make many¹ diuerse shewyngis and sightis thurgh the high stretis in the Cite, with many othir presentis and yeftis, bothe² to Kyng and Quene at the comyng into the Cite. ¶ And that day that the Kyng and the Quene 8 remeuyd from the maner of Eltham, the Meyre and aldremen, and the communis of London, in good araye of white garmentis and rede hodie or rede kappis,—and euery crafte, a dyuersite on her garnement to knowe euery crafte be³ hym-self,—and aH on hors 12 backe, with clarionys and aH maner of⁴ lowde mynstrelsie, in honoure and comforte of the Kyng and of the Quene, and to the glorious and riaH sight of straungeris that come with hem ouyr from the see, and for the grete worship of the worthi Cite of 16 London, the Meyre and his aldremen, with the worthi pepuH of the cite, the nombre of xxx M^{vi}. men and moo, abyden and hound on her hors on the Blake-Hethe in Kente, abydyng the Kyng and the Quenys comyng. ¶ And tho, whanne they were come, they 20 weren reseyuyd reuerently and worthyli, with alle humylite and obeysaunce of alle pepuH and men,⁵ with⁶ alle the melodye that they had, and so brought hem into the cite, and so to the Toure of London; and there the Kyng and the Quene restid hem. 24

And on the morow, aftur Quene Kateryne come fro the Toure to her coronacion to Westminster, and tho the Meyre and the⁷ aldremen and alle the Commnes of the cite,⁸ that is for to seye, euery crafte in her beste clothynge, with alle her melodye and 28 mynstralsie, went alle on ffote tho, and brought the Quene thorough the Cite. And there was don and shewid to hir alle the rialte of sightis that myght be don to her comforte and plesaunce, and euery strete hongid rychely⁹ with riche clothis of gold and silke, 32 and of velewettis and clothis of araas, the beste that myght be gotyn; and so the pepuH brought hir thorough the cite to Westminster, to the Kyngis paleys.

¶ And thanne the nexte day sewynge the Sonday aftur the 36 feeste of Seynt Mathy apostiH in lente, Dame Kateryne the Quene

¹ many riall A. ² leaf 144, back. ³ by A.

⁴ of oþer A. ⁵ and men om. A. ⁶ & A. ⁷ and the om. A.

⁸ of the cite om. A. ⁹ richely hongid A.

was crounyd in the Abbey of Westeminster, with alle the grete and worthi Bisshoppis of this londe, with alle the solempnite and rialte that myght be don and ordeynyd; and the ffeste holden in the
4 paleis opyn to alle pepuH, straungeris and othir that wold come, of alle maner rialteis of metis and drynkys.

¶ And on the efter-euyne nexte sewynge, Thomas, the Duke of Clarence, tho issewid oute from the place there he lay, with a
8 lytuH meyne, to knowe and se the place and grounde where the Dolfynnys pepuH, Armynackis and Scottis, had ordeynyd to mete and to fight with the Engelisshe men, and to yeue bataiH. ¶ And as the Duke of Clarence come with his folke by the watir of Leyre
12 vpon this eftur euyne aforn seide, the Erle of Armynacke with the dolfynys meyne and his and a grete nombre of¹ Scottis mette with the Duke of Clarence and his meyne by this watir of Leyre; and there they foughten to-gederis; and at the laste there
16 was the Duke of Clarence slayne, and othir moo with hym; and there was take prisoner the Erle of Huntynghdon and the Erle of Somersette and his brothir, and the Fytz-Watir, and othir moo.

¶ And aftur, the Bastard of Clarence come and gate his ffaderis
20 body, and did so brynge it into Engeland, and so to the abbey of Criste-chirche of Caunturbury, and was there enterid and buryed besides Kyng [Henry] the iiij^e his ffadir, on whos soule oure Lord God haue mercy! Amen!

¶ And also in the same yere, betwene Cristemesse and Candil-
masse, the toune of Milon was yolden to the Kyng; and all the cheueteynys, with the soudiourys, were taken, and led to the Cite of Paris in the croke of the mone, they myght sey; for of hem ther
28 scapid thens but a fewe on lyue. And sone aftur, Kyng Henry the vj. was born in the casteH of Wyndesore, the day of seynt Nicholas the Bisshop, the yere of oure Lord Ihesu Criste .M^{ti}. cccc. xxj., whos godfaderis and godmodris at the fontstone weren these: sir
32 Henry Beauford, Bisshop of Wynchestir, and Iohn, Duke of Bedford; and the Duchesse of Holond was his godmodir; and at² his confirmacion the Erchebisshop of Caunterbury was his god ffadir.//

How whanne Kyng Henry herd of his brotheris dethe, Thomas,
36 the Duke ³ of Clarence, ordeynyd a newe retenewe, and wente ouyr the see in grete haste, & leid sege to Mewis in Bry, with his pepuH.//

¹ of meyne G. of A.

² and G. and at A.

³ leaf 145.

And in the vj. yere of Kynge Henryes regne the v÷, come tydyngis in-to Engeland how that Thomas his brothir, the Duke of Clarence, was sleyn by the watir of Leyre, wherefore the Kynge was heuy and wrothe; and in aH the haste that he myght, he ordeynyd hym a newe retenewe of men of armys and archeris, with alle maner of othir stuffis that bylongid therto at aH maner nedis, and went ouyr the se with his pepuH, and come into Fraunce, and bysegid Mewis in Bry, a grete toune and a stronge, with a 8 Castelle. And that Towne and the Castelle weren welle vitailid and eke mannyd; and grete strengthe they had with-ynne hem, and manly they defsendid hem, and kep[t]e Towne and CasteH longe tyme.¹ 12

¶ And in this tyme, while the Kynge hild his sege of Mewis yn Bry, ther come goode tydyngis oute of Engeland to the Kynge, how that Dame Kateryne his wif, the Quene, was dellyuyryd of a feyre sone, a lord and prynce, to² the Rewme ese, profite and worship, 16 and gladnesse in hert, whiche with high³ and grete worthynesse⁴ was brought forth, and cristenyd in his colage withynne his Castelle of Wyndesore. And of this worthi tydyngis the Kynge was glad, and thankyd God, and so diden alle his pepuH whanne 20 they herd there-of: and that day of this worthi pryncis birthe was on Seynt Nycholas day in the yere of oure Lord God⁵ .M^{ti}. CCCC. xxj. and the Regne of the Kynge the ix^o. ¶ And aftur these good tydyngis, the Kynge, with alle his pepuH, busied sore 24 to gete this towne and CasteH, bothe by watir and by londe and leid therto his grete Gounnys, Trepgettis and Engenys, and bete adowne the wallis in dyuers placis; and so at the laste they entrid yn with strengthe, and gate the Towne; and there was 28 moche pepuH slayne and dede; and tho was the toune wonne and the casteH eke.// ¶ And there the Kynge toke many riche men prysoneris, and sent hem afturward into Engeland.

¶ And thanne the Kynge sent aftur the Quene, and aftur Iohn 32 his brothir, the Duke of Bedford, and that they shuld brynge with hem more stuffe of pepuH in all haste. And anon as these⁶ tydyngis come to, the Quene Kateryne went to Hampton, and the Duke of Bedford also, with a feyre meyne, and wente to Shippe, and come 36 ouyr the se, and landid at Hareflete in Normandye the vij. day of

¹ tyme for all her enemyes A.² to all A.³ hert whiche and with high G. hert with high A.⁴ worthynesse & solempnyte A.⁵ God om. A.⁶ these om. A.

May in sauftē, and alle her pepuH,—thankyd be God!—and in alle
haste reden forthe vp in the londe tille thei come there as the
Kynge was.// ¶ And sir Vmfrey, the Duke of Gloucestre, his othir
4 brothir, was tho made the Kyngis Lefetenaunte of Engeland in his
absence, to kepe and gouerne the Rewme in alle degreis, in sauft-
ynge of the pepuH and of the lond, that God maynten and kepe
in good pees and reste, with good loue and charite to endure!
8 Amen! //

¶ And in the lettur ende of the monythe of AprieH, in the .x.
yere of Kynge Henry the V. is regne, was the toune and casteH of
Mewis in Biri gotyn and wonne by¹ grete strengthe, by the Kynge
12 and his pepuH, oute of the Frensshe mennys hondis. ¶ And in the
firste day of IuyH the same yere, the Kynge sent ouyr the see his
prisoneris that he had take at Mewis in Bry, the ffuH nombre of
xxviij. personys; and they weren brought in-to Engeland, and
16 londid at Hampton; and aH his prisoneris weren caryed in cartis
to London, and so brought into the Toure of London, to kepe hem
there-ynne saufly.//

¶ And tho anon the Kynge remouyd from Mewis in Bry, and
20 come ayen to Parys. And with ynne awhile aftur, the Kynge
beganne to waxe sore sike, and tho remouyd hym to² haue the betir
Eyre and hele of body; and his sykenesse come to hym so sore pat³
he myght not welle endure it. ¶ And so he sent aftur his lordis
24 that weren there, and his counsaill, and deuysid his wille, and
made his testament fuH, and sette his executoris, and deuysid his
tresoure and his Iewellis to ben solde, and to pay⁴ his dettis, as
well to his sowdyouris as to othir dettouris.//⁵ ¶ And he ordeynyd
28 Iohn, the Duke of Beedford, his brothir, to byn there Regent
Gouernoure of Fraunce and of Normandie, vnto good gouernaunce
and profite vnto Henry his⁶ sone, and good kepyng in reste and
pees of his pepuH there, vnto the tyme the good Counseill of Enge-
32 lond myght dresse it and amende it, to set it in pessabuH poynte
and reste.// ¶ And he comyttid thanne⁷ the kepyng of Henry,
his yonge sone, to Syr Henry Beauford his vnclē, the Bisshop of
Wynchestire, and to Sir Thomas Beauford, his othir vnclē, Duke
36 of Exetre, and⁸ charged hem bothe to his good gouernaunce and

¹ with A. ² forto A. ³ hym sore G. him so sore pat A.

⁴ to ben and to pay G. to ben solde to pais A. ⁵ leaf 145, back.

⁶ his yong A. ⁷ And þane he comyttid A.

⁸ & charged hem bothe to his gouernaunce and kepyng A.

kepyng in his tendir age, for alle the louys that euyr were betwene hem, that no preiudise nor wronge were do to hym thorough noo fals couetous counseil nor nede.// ¶ And tho the Kyng disposid hym to Godwardis, and toke aH his rightis of holy chirche, and toke his leue of aH his ffre[n]dis, and comendid his soule to God, and deid, the xxix¹ of Auguste in the x. yere of his regne: on whos soule God haue mercy! amen! //

¶ And thanne was his body enbawmyd and dight with riche Spicerie and oynementis, and closid in shire clothe, and closid faste in a cheste; and he was cariid doune to Rone, and there he had his dirige and his messes don for hym, with aH the moste solempnite that myght byn ordeynyed and doon in holy chirche; and from thens he was brought doune by londe to Caleis. And with the Erchebisshop of Caunturbury² come the Quene of Engeland his wif, Dame Kateryne, and many othir grete lordis, and knyghtis and Squyeris, and brought the body ouyr the see into Engeland, and come vp at Douir, and so to Caunturbury, and so thorough Kente to London.//

¶ And thanne³ the Meyre and aldremen, with aH the Craftis of London, weren clothid in blacke, abydyng the body of the kyng on the Blacke-Hethe in Kente; and so come down to seint Thomas Waterynge, withoute⁴ Soughwarke, and there met aH the religious pepuH with þe⁵ body, prystis and othir, and brought the cors to London, and so thorough the Cite to Seint Poulis. And there was Dirige don ouyr euyn, and messe of Requyem on the morowe, and whanne the seruyce was down at aftur mete, bothe the lordis and knyghtis and othir, with aH the Commnes of the Cite of London, brought hym from Seint Poulis to Westminster, and there was his Dirige don ouyr euyn, and messe on the moroughe of Requyem,⁶ with aH the Bisshoppis; and there was he burye[d] by Seint Edwardis Shryne, the .viij^c day of the monythe of Nouembre, in the yere of oure Lorde Ihesu criste, Mth. CCCC. xxij.// 32

¶ And yn that same yere it byfeH so that thoroughoute aH Engeland was a grete yere of ffrute. And in that same yere deiden the moste partye of alle the lory treis thorough aH Engeland.//

¹ xxix day A. ² with his herce A. ³ thanne om. A.

⁴ withoute withoute A. ⁵ the þe G.

⁶ messe of Requiem on þe morowe A.

How aftur the dethe of Kynge Henry the v^e, Regnyd his sone
Kynge Henry the vj^e, and was borne at the CasteH of
Wyndesore.//

4 **A** Nd aftur the dethe of Kynge Henry the v ÷, Regnyd Henry
his sone, that was¹ borne in Wyndesore, that men callid
Kynge Henry the vj^e. And for his tendir and yonge age, Henry
his ffadir comyttid hym to the kepynge of Sir Henry Beauford,
8 Bisshop of Wynchestre, and to Sir Thomas Beauford, Duke of
Exetre, bothe his bele vnclys; and the kepynge of Fraunce and
Normandie to Iohn the Duke of Bedford, to ben regent and
gouvernoure of bothe there, till that Henry, his yonge sone, by
12 his good counseile wold set it in bettur gouernaunce.// ¶ And
the kepinge of Engeland to sir Vmfray, the Duke of Gloucestre,
to ben Proptectour and deffendour of the Rewme till that Henry
his yonge sone, by alle the good counseile of Engeland, wold set
16 and put it² into bettur gouernaunce, and to moste profite of³ the
Kynge and of the Rewme.

¶ And in the seconde yere of Kynge Henry the vj ÷ Sir
Iohn Mortymere, knyght, brake pryson oute of the Toure of
20 London, and was take ayen vpon the Toure-wharf; and there he
was foule woundid and bete, and brought on the morow to
Westemⁱnster byforn the Kyngis Iusticis; and there for his treson
Iuggid⁴ to byn brought ayen to the Toure of London, and there
24 leide vpon an⁵ hurduH, and so drawe thoroughe the Cite to
Tibourne, and there⁶ hongid, and his hed smeton of, and sette
on London Brigge; and thus endid he his lif: on whos soule
God haue merci! //

28 ¶ And in the iij^e yere of Kynge Henryis Regne, Sir Edmonde
Mortymere, Erle of the Marche, wente oute of Engeland into
Wallis, and so ouyr into Irlond, to se his londis and lordshippis
there, And anon withynne a lituH processe of tyme there, he deid
32 in Irlond.

And also in the same yere Vmfrey, the Duke of Gloucestre,
the Kyngis vncl, and the Duches of Holond, his wif, went ouer
the see oute of Engeland into Henaud, for to take there possession
36 of his wifis heritage of lordshippis and londis. ¶ Wherefore⁷
thei were worshipfully welcomyd and resseyuyd for chief lorde

¹ that was om. A. ² put G. put it A. ³ to G. of A.

⁴ Iuggid to be deth A. ⁵ and G. ⁶ leaf 146. ⁷ where A.

and lady of the lond. But not longe aftur, hit happid so that he was fayne to retourne ayen into Engeland, and lefte his lady byhynd hym, with all the tresoure that he¹ brought oute of Engeland with hym, in a tounne that me callid Mouns in Heuland, 4 the whiche was sworn to hym to be goode and trewe, and to kepe this lady in sauf ward till he come ayen to here. But at the laste thei weren fals, for thei delyuyryd the lady to the Duke of Burgoyne; and he sent hir² to the cite of Gaunte yn Flaunderis, 8 to be kepte there. ¶ But, as God wold, in a shorte tyme aftur she ascaped thens in mannys clothynge, and come to a tounne of her owne in Selande, that is callid Seryse, and fro thens she went to a tounne of her owne in Holand, that is callid Tragowe, where, 12 with help of her ffryndis that there were, she withstode the Duke of Burgoyne and alle his malice. //

¶ And in the iiij^e yere of Kynge Henryis regne the vj^e, there aros a grete debate³ betwene Sir Vmfrey, the Duke of Gloucestre, 16 and Sir Henry Beauford, Bisshop of Wynchestir; and this Henry⁴ bare tho heuy herte ayens the pepull of the Cite of⁵ London; And pis debate bygan on pe day of pe Meyris tidynge of London,⁵ whanne thei come to Westminster paleis; and the Meyre of London 20 that tyme me callid Iohn Couentre, mercer. And on the nexte morow folowyng, the Bisshop of Wynchestre hadde gaderyd a grete pepull in Soughthewerke, of men of armys and archeris; and they of the Cite kept tho strongly London Brygge-gate with men of 24 armys [&] archeris, that no man myght⁶ in, nothir oute, for to kepe the pees in bothe partyes. ¶ And anon, vpon viij. of the klokke in the mornynge, alle the Cite was vp with her wepyn, and shette in her howsis, and drewe hem downward to Temyse- 28 side, and wold haue apassid ouyr the watir, forto haue taken the Bisshop. ¶ But the Erchebisshop of Caunturbury, Sir Henry Chichele, and the Bisshop of Bathe, Sir Iohn of Stafford, and the Prynce of Portyngale—that in the same tyme were in the Cite of 32 London—went betwene hem and the Cite, that all was cessid and set in reste by none; ⁷ blessid be⁸ God! //

¶ And in the same yere, the .x. day next aftur that Iohn the Duke of Bedford, and his lady, his wiff, that was the Dukis 36

¹ he þo A. ² hir þo A. ³ debate & dissencion A.

⁴ this sir henry A.

⁵⁻⁶ London And pis debate bygan on the day of pe Meyris tidynge of London A. om. G.

⁶ myght nor A. ⁷ noone y A. ⁸ by G. be A.

sustur of Burgoyne, come out of Fraunce ouyr the see into Engeland, to here and to¹ se the welfare of oure Kynge, and to se also the gouernaunce of this Rewme. and whanne he come
4 nygh London, the Meyre and Aldremen, and many crafty men of the Cite, riden ayens the Duke and the Duchesse, and welcomyd hem, and brought hem into the Cite. ¶ And at the Bisshoppis place of Dereham, there thei were herborowid; and with hem
8 tho come the Bisshop of Wynchestre ridynge thorough London, to right grete greuance of the pepul, saue for the displesaunce and presence of the Duke.

¶ And in the .v. yere of Kynge Henry the vj^e, anon aftur
12 the Feste of Seint Hillary, the Kynge held his parlement at the toune of Leycestre. And at that parlement Sir Vmfray, the Duke of Gloucestre, and Sir Henry Beauford, Bisshop of Wynchestre, weren² made at on, and accordid, by the Kynge and the Duke
16 of Bedford, and othir lordis that weren there presente.// ¶ And in that same parlement the kynge made two Dukis: my Lord Sir Richardis³ sone of Caumbrigge, Duke of Yorke, and Sir Iohn
4 of Mombray, Erle Marchaunt, Duke of Northeffolke, and there the
20 kynge made also many knyghtis of the Bathe.

¶ And in this same yere deid Sir Thomas Beauford, Duke of Exetur, the kyngis beff vncl, in a place there he lay in the toune of Grenewiche, iiij. myle oute of London; and thanne he was
24 brought into London to Seint Poulis, and there he had Dirige and messe; and from thens thei caried hym to Seint Edmondisbury; and there he was worthili enterid and buryid in Cristemesse woke in the yere of oure Lord Ihesu criste, M^{ti}. CCCC. xxvj: on whos
28 soule God haue mercy! amen! //

¶ And in the same yere, aboute Shroftide, Iohn, the Duke of Bedford, and his lady the Duchesse, passid ouyr the [see] to Caleis. And a litul byforne [they] passid ouyr the see to Caleis,
32 Henry the Bisshop of Winchestre, and vpon oure lady day⁵ the Anunciacion, the yere of Grace M^{ti}. CCCC. xxvij, the Bisshop of Wynchestre was made Cardynaunt in Seint Marye Chirche in Caleis full solempnely; where weren the same tyme the Duke of
36 Bedford, Regent of Fraunce, and his duchesse.// ¶ And byforne the messe was bygonne, whiche the Bisshop of Wynchestre shold do, tho the Popis cosyn brought the Cardynallis hatte, and with

¹ to om. A. ² wer pen A. ³ Richard pe Erlis A.

⁴ leaf 146, back. ⁵ lady G. lady day A.

grete reuerence he set it vpon the high auter, and there it stode
 aH the messe tyme.// ¶ And whanne the Bisshop had don his¹
 messe and wa[s] onreuersid, thanne was don on the Bisshop an
 abbite in maner of a fferis Cope of fyne Scarlet furrid with purid 4
 werke; and whanne he was thus arayid, he knelid there vpon his
 kneys befor the high auter; and there the Popis bullis weren
 radde to hym.// ¶ And the firste buH was his charge of his
 dyngnyte of Cardynalship; and the seconde buH was that he⁸
 shuld haue the reioysynge of alle the Benefisis SpirituaH and
 TemperaH that he hathe in Engelond. And whanne this was don,
 the Duke of Bedford, Regent of Fraunce, went vp to the high
 auter, and toke the high Cardinallis hatte, and set it vpon the¹²
 Bisshoppis hed of Wynchestre; and he bowid and obeyid the
 Bisshop, and toke hym byfore hym.

¶ And in the vj. yere of Kynge Henryis Regne the vj.^e, went
 the Erle of Salusbury, with a grete retenewe of men of armys and¹⁶
 archeris, by comaundement of the Kynge and of alle the Counseile
 of Engelond, & made hym the Leftenaunt or alle the partyes of
 Fraunce and of Normandy, forto distroye the Kynges enemyes,
 and to chastice the rebbellis in the² pertyes by his strengthe, myght²⁰
 and power.// ¶ And so he depertid, and toke his leue oute of
 London, with aH his pepuH and ordynauncis, the morow aftur
 Mydsomyr Day, in the yere aboue seid, and come ouyr the see
 with alle his pepuH in saufte; thankid be God in aH his yeftis!²⁴
 and anon as he was come into Fraunce, he set sore on the Frensshe
 men that weren the kyngis Enemyes, and slowe and destroyid
 many of hem, and toke vilagis, Tounys and castelles, and made
 hem be suoren to the Kynge of Engelond. And afturward he²⁸
 leid sege to the toune of Orlyaunce; and that sege endurid longe
 tyme, for the toune of Orliaunce was so stronge, and well ymannyd
 and vitailid, that it myght not be goten for no crafte of werre that
 was don therto; where[of] he was wond[er] heuy and wroth, for³²
 he myght note spede of his purpos.// ¶ And tho at the³ laste, as
 he was busi to sete and loke vpon his ordynauncis, forto gete it
 yf he myght, a fals thief, a traitour withynne the toune, shotte a
 Gonne, and the stone smot this good Erle of Salusbury, that he was³⁶
 dede thorough the stroke; wherefore was made grete doole⁴ and
 sorow for his dethe longe tyme afturward, for the grete doughtynesse

¹ pe A.² po A.³ the om. A.⁴ grete G. grete doole A.

and manhode that was founde in hym, and in his gouernaunce at aH tymes. And thanne was his body¹ brought ouyr the see into Engelsond, and his body was caryid and leid amonge his 4 aunseteris there as thei byn buryid of holde tyme: on whos soule oure God² haue mercy! Amen!

¶ And also in this same yere fro the begynnyng of the monythe of AppryeH into the feste of AH-Haloue, was so grete 8 haboundance of Reyne, where-thorough not only heigh was destroyd, but also aH maner of cornys, for it reynyd almoste euery othir day, mo^{re} or lesse, duryng the tyme aforesaid.

¶ And forthirmore, duryng the sege of Orliaunce, at the 12 begynnyng of Lenton nexte ffolowyng, vij. Mth. of Frensshe men and moo, with many othir Scottis, fiH vpon oure men as they went toward the Toune with vitaiH that is callid 'yamuyle,' where Sir John Steward of Scotlond and his brothir, with moo thanne 16 vij. c. Scottis and they weren gouernouris they lighten on ffoote, and they weren, euery modir sone, slayne by Sir John Folstalf and Sir Thomas Rampston, and othir Capitayns of oure side, the whiche had not passyng .v. c. of flightyng men with hem at aH, 20 with Carteris and aH othir.// ¶ But Charlis of Burgoyne and the Bastard of Orliaunce, with aH the Frensshe men sittyng on hors backe and seyng this Gouvernaunce, trussid hir packe and went her wey. Also a lituH before Witsontide nexte folowyng, was 24 the foreshide sege of Orliaunce broken vp by the Duke of Launsom and his power; and alle othir lordis and Capitayns of the same sege weren dissparkelid, that is so seye, the Erle of Suffolke and his brothir, and the Lord Talbot and the Lord Skalis, with many 28 moo of Engelisshe pepuH, the whiche sone afture weren taken euerychone, at grete myschief, prysoneres.

¶ And in the vij. yere of Kynge Henry the vj^e the viij day of Nouembre, the Duke of Norfolke, with many gentiH men of 32 knyghtis and Squyeris and yemen, token a barge at Seint Mari Ouereyis Brygge, bitwene iiij. and .v. of the klokke ayens nyght; and they purposid tho to passe thorough London Brigge, where the foreshide barge, thorough mysgouernaunce of sterage, fiH vpon 36 the pilis thorough mysgouernaunce, and ouyrwelfid, the whiche was cause of distrucion of moche pepuH thereynne, that was the more rowthe.// ¶ But as God wold, the Duke hym-self, and .ij.

¹ body y A.² oure lord A.³ leaf 147.

or .iij. othir gentiH men, tho seyyng that myschief, lept vpon the pilis, and so thei weren sau'd thorough help of hem that weren aboute the brygge, wyth castynge doune of ropis, blessid be God!

¶ And in this same yere, the firste day of the monith of 4
Septembre, Sir Henry Beauford, Bisshop of Wynchestre and beH-
vncle to the Kyng, come to London fro the Pope of Rome.
CardynaHes, and alle the prestis and religious of¹ London, and
ney³ London, went ayens hym yn prosession withoute the Cite, 8
and there they met with hym, and did hym aH the² honour and
reuerence as longith for³ sicke estate to ben don.// ¶ And the
Meyre and Aldremen, with many worthi craftis of London, met
with hym on the Blake-Hethe in Kent; and there thei welcomyd 12
hym, and did hym reuerence and worship, and brought hym
porugh pe Cite,⁴ and so to Charinge Crosse and there the Meyre
and the men of London toke her leue of hym, and he rode forthe
to the casteH of Wyndesore to the Kyng. 16

¶ And in the same yere, at the ffeste of Mydsomyr, Sir Henry
Beauford, CardynaH, and Bisshop of Wynchestir, went⁵ ouyr the
see into Fraunce for the Kyngis nedis; and Sir John Radclif,
knyght, went ouyr the se that same tyme, with a grete compeny of 20
men of armis and archeris, to helpe and to strengthe John, the
Duke of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce and of Normandie, and
the Engelisshe pepuH that weren lefte there in the right of the
Kynge of Engeland. 24

¶ And in the⁶ same yere was Henry Barton, Meyre of
London. And tho was, thoroughoute Engeland, grete scarste of
corne and of othir vitaiH, for oxen and shipe, deiden stronglyche,
and a bussheH whete was at xx d°. longe tyme: blessid be God in 28
alle his yeftis of amendement!

¶ And in the viij yere of Kynge Henryis regne the vj^e; was
hold a grete parlement at Westeminster; and that beganne the
morow aftur Michelmesse-Day, and it endurid tille Shroftid. And 32
on Seint Lethenardis day byforn Cristemesse, and that was on the
Sonday (and Sonday went by lettur A. that yere,) the Kyng was
crown'd at Westeminster, with honoure, of Henry Chichele,
Erchebisshop of Caunturbury, and with moo othir Bisshoppis, with 36
alle the solempnite that myght be made and doon. ¶ And in⁷ the

¹ in A.² the om. A.³ to A.⁴ hym G.⁵ om. G. went A.⁶ hym porugh pe Cite A.⁷ pis A.⁸ in om. A.

same day, come fro byyonde the see to his coronacion and feste,
 Sir Henry Beauford, CardynaH, and Bisshop of Winchestre, ¹ and
 the Prynce of Portyngale with a feyre meyne of pepuH, in reuerence
 4 and worship of the Kyng; and byforne that weren come and
 abedyn at London a bisshop of Fraunce, and serteyn knyghtis and
 squyeris with her meyne, to se that rialte, and the Coronacions of
 the kyng. ² And the even bifore þe coronacion, þe kyng² lete
 8 make xxxvj. Knyghtis of the Bathe, withynne the Toure of
 London. ¶ And in the same [time] in ³ Cristemesse wike, bi
 ordynaunce and comaundement of the Kyng and of his CounseH,
 the Bastard of Clarence and Sir Iohn Kyzelei, knyght, and moo
 12 oper knyghtis and squyeris þat were made peti capteynes, with
 men of armes ande archeris, the nombre of a M^{ti} personys and moo,
 shippiden at dyuerse portes in Kente and in Southesex, and seilid
 ouyr into Normandie forto helpe and strengthe the Duke of
 16 Bedford, Regent of Fraunce and of Normandie, and in releuyng
 and comfortyng of aH the Kynges pepull that haue eny kepyng
 of Ceteis, townys, Castelles, or eny holdis tha[t] bilongen to the
 Kyng in the parties of Fraunce and of ⁴ Normandie: the whiche,
 20 Criste maynteyne and kepe, for his high mercy!

¶ And in this same yere was a ⁵ bataiH doon in Smythffeld, at
 London, the Tewisday the xxiiij. day of Januare, betwene two men
 of the toune of Feuyrisham in Kente: that on me callid maistir
 24 John Vpton, notarye, that was the appellaunte; and that othir,
 John of Downe, JentilHman, the dellandaunte. And thei two
 ffoughten togederis, armyd at aH poyntis, to the vtterist; but the
 Kyng, of his riaH power and grete grace, kryid ‘pees,’ and toke it
 28 vp in his hand, and yaf hem bothe fre grace: and this was the
 cause of her bataiH, for this Maistur John Vpton put-of ⁶ on John
 of ⁷ Downe, that he and othir moo of his compeny ymagenid and
 purposid the Kyngis dethe at the day and tyme of his coronacion:
 32 whom God kept and saue from aH mysauenturis. Amen!

¶ And in the same yere, the xxvij. day of Januare, Sir Henry
 Beauford, CardinaH, and Bisshop of Wynchestre, went ouyr the
 see to Caleis, and so to Bryggis in Flaundris, in embassitrie for
 36 Henry, Kyng of Engelond and of Fraunce, vnto the Duke of
 Burgoyne, and also to se the mariage betwene the Duke of

¹ leaf 147, back.

²⁻³ And the even bifore þe coronacion þe kyng A. om. G. ³ in þe A.

⁴ for G. of A. ⁵ a ki G. a A. ⁶ of om. A. ⁷ o A.

Burgoyne and the Kynge of Portyngalis doughtir, that is cosyn to the Kynge of Engelond.

¶ And in the same yere and day, Thomas of Borough, and Gray, two esquieris, by ordynaunce and comaundement of the Kynge and of his Counseil, had a grete retenewe of pepul, of men of armys and archeris, that weren sent ouyr the see into Fraunce, to the Duke of Bedford, Regent and Gouvernoure of the parties of Fraunce and Normundie, in releuyng and helpyng and strength-
ing of the Kyngis pepul in oure liege lordis right, Kynge¹ of² Engelond and of Fraunce.

¶ How that Kynge Henry the vj^e went ouyr the see into Fraunce, the viij yere of his regne; and of the whiche 12 [of] Fraunce that was callid the 'Pushell': how she was take prysonere.

And in the viij. yere of Kynge³ [Henry the sixt] his Regne, on Seint Mathi day the Apostul, and that was on the Fryday, the 16 xxiiij. day of Feuyrere in the yere aboue seid, Kynge Henry the vj^e, aftur his coronacion at Westminster, and ende of his parlement holden the same tyme at Westminster, that the Kynge, by counseil and ordynaunce of al the lordis and commu[n]es of Engelond, that 20 the Kynge shuld wende ouyr the see into Fraunce, to resseyue⁴ his heritage, and bere the Crowne as rightfuil lord and kynge of the londe.// ¶ And the Kynge, by his good and wise counseil, ordeynyd and made his vncl Sir Vmfrey, the Duke of Gloucestre, 24 Leftenaunte of Engelond aftur his passage ouyr the see, for to gouerne and kepe the londe ayen his enemyes of al partyis, and to se that right and lawe be mayntenyd in alle degreis, in sauacion of his pepul and good kepyng of his Rewme. 28

¶ And on Seint Mathi day the⁵ Appostil, as is aforne seide, the Kynge come fro Westminster to London, with his lordis and his pepul, and come to Seint Poulis, and there offrid, and toke his hors, and rode thourgh the Cite, and toke his leue of al the 32 Commualte of London; and so he rode to his maner of Eltham in Kente, and there he duellid alle the Lenton tiil it was ayens Palme Sondag, and thanne he rode to Caunturbury, and abode there tille estur was passid, tiil his retenewe was made and ordeynyd, that 36 shuld gon and passe ouyr the see with hym into Fraunce.

¹ kynge om. A. ² & A. ³ kynge om. A. ⁴ resseyue & A.
⁵ the om. A. ⁶ leaf 148.

¶ And thann the Kynge come to Douyre, and on Seint Georges
euyne, withynne nyght, the wethur and wynde was feyre and
menabuh, and the Kynge was brought to ship withoute Douyre in
4 the roode.// ¶ And whanne tyde of passage come, thei toke the
see, and passid ouyr, and come to Caleis, and landid there in the
mornynge at vij. of the clocke in Seint Georgis Day; and that was
on the Sondag; and the domynycan lettur went¹ by . A.// ¶ And
8 whanne he was landid, the Kynge went to the Castell of Caleis;
and there he abode tille aH his retenewe and ordynaunce were come
ouyr the see. And withynn iij. wikis aftur Estur aforne seid, aH
his pepuh, with alle his² ordynauncis, weren come ouyr to the
12 Kynge.// ¶ And the Kynge anon aftur, bi his Counseih, sent
dyuerse lordis,³ knyghtis and capitainys, with her men of armys
and archeris and ordynauncis, to dyuers tounnis, Casteles and
Garnysonys of his in Fraunce and in Normandie, for kepyng and
16 strengthynge of his liege pepuh, and kepyng of his tituh and
right.

¶ And in the same yere, the xv. day of May, ther was made a
Journey in Fraunce bisidis the toune of Compyne; and at that
20 Journey were slayn of the Frensshe men, Armynakkis and Scottis
the nombre of .viij. c. of good mennys bodyes; and there were take
also of the⁴ Frensshe⁵ and of her compeny, many Cote armuris.
And at that same Journey was take the wicche of Fraunce that was
24 callid th[e] ‘PussheH’; and she was take alle armyd as a man of
armys; and by her⁶ crafte of sorserie alle the Frensshe men and
her compeny trystid for to haue ouyrcome alle the Engelisshe
pepuh. But God was lord and maistir of that victorie and
28 scomfiture, and so she was take, and brought and kept in hold bi
the Kynge and his counseih aH tymes at his comaundement and
wille.

¶ And at that Journey, of Englisshe men weren Capitaynys, Sir
32 John Monuntegomere and Sir John Steward, knyghtis of the
Kyngis houshold, with her retenewe. ¶ And there was Sir John
Mountegomere smyte his arme vn two; and Sir John Steward was
shotte unto the thye with a quareh, and yet God sent hem good
36 hele and welfare, and Scomfiture of aH her enemyes: blessid be
God!

¹ wente pat tyme A.

² þe A.

³ dyuerse G. diuerse lordis A.

⁴ þese A.

⁵ frensshe men A.

⁶ her & by hire A.

APPENDIX D.

ADDITIONAL MATTER FOR THE PERIOD 1420-23.

[MS. Hh. 6. 9, *University Library, Cambridge.*]

And pis was doon þe Monday next aftir the Trinity Sondag, In the yere of *grace* Mⁱ IIII^e XX^{ti}. And anone aftir this mariage was done, the Kyng hym-self [Henry V], with his English lordes and Retenue, And þe Duke of Burgoigne with many grete lordes ⁴ of Fraunce, with his strength and gouernance of people, leyde sege to dyuers Citees townes & castelles which wer' holden of the Dolphynne, with strength of his meyney, And of the Armenakkis and Scottis. And the Kyng with his people gat theme, and had the ⁸ victorie of his enemyes.

And in this same yere, And in þe yere of *grace* a Mⁱ IIII^e XX^{ti}, by-twene Cristemesse and Candilmasse, the Towne of Milloyne was yolden vp to the Kyng; And all þe Chiftains, with þe Souldeours, ¹² were take and ledde to þe Cite of Parys, 'in þe Croke of þe mone' þei may say for theme; ffor þer escapede fro thens of þeme but a fewe on lyue, for þei of Paris did theme to dethe.

Willelmus Cambrigge, { Johannes Wellis, } vic' VIII^o [A.D. 16
M[ayor] { Johannes Botiller, } 1420-21].
draper

And in pis same yere [1 Hen. VI] þe Wednysday, þe XXI day of Octobre, in þe first yere of Kyng Henry þe VI, at þe houre ²⁰ betwene VI & VII in þe mornyng, died Charles, þe French Kyng, In his Inne of saint Paules with-Inne þe Cite of Paris, And is buried in þe chirche of Saint Denyse withoute þe cite of Paris: On whos soule, God haue mercie! Amen! ²⁴

And in pis same yere, in þe moneth of Februarie, James Stewarde, Kyng of Scottes, spoused Dame Joan, the Duchesse Doughter of Clarence, of hir first housbond, Erl of Somerssette, in þe church of Saint Marie Overey in Suthwerk. ²⁸

And in pis same yere, Maister William Tailour, clerk of Oxenforde, was a-fore the clergie at Saint Paules in London, And þer

he was convicte in heresie; and aftir, by Temporall lawe he was brought into Smythfelde, & there was he brent for his heresie.

And in pis same yere, þe XVII day of Auguste, was done the
 4 bataill of Vernoun in Perche, betwene the Duk of Bedforde, pan
 Regent of Fraunce, & þe Armenakkis *with* Scottes; but, thanked
 be God! the victorie fell to þe Englishmen, for *per* were slain of our
 aduersaries the Erle of Bougham, þe Erle Douglas, þe Erle of Morre,
 8 þe Erle of Tonnare, þe Erle of Vendoun, the Vicounte of Narbone
 (pat traiterously slough the Duke of Burgoine knelyng be-fore the
 Dolphyn of Fraunce at þe towne of Monstrall,) & mony moo, þe
 nombre of X Mⁱ moo. But þe moste vengeance fell vpon þe
 12 proude Scottes, for thei went to Dog-wash the same day, mo than
 XVII^c of cote Armoures of these proude Scottes; So that they
 may say wele "In the croke of þe mone went thei thidre warde,
 And in the wilde wanyende come þei homewarde."

16 William Crownes, M[ayor] Nicholas James A^o II. [A.D.
 Thomas Wandefford 1423-4.]

And in this same tyme the Kynge [Hen. VI], of two Erles
 made two Dukes: þe Erle of Cambrige he made the Duke of
 20 Yorke, & þe Erle Marshall Henaud, þe Duke of Northefolke.

And in pis same yere was Shedeswik draw and hangede &
 quartered at Tiborne, & his hede smyten of & sett vpon London
 Brigge, & his quartires vnto dyuers yatis of London, for his treason.
 24 And whilles þe Duke of Bedforde was here in Englande, þe Erle
 of Warrewik was made Lieutenant of Fraunce & Normandy, for
 to kepe & garde both in werre and peace vn-to þe comyng of þe
 Duke of Bedforde again oute of England in-to Fraunce.

28 Johanne Reynowell, Robertus Arnold A^o V^{to}. [A.D.
 M[ayor] Johanne Hyngham. 1426-7.]

And þe Duke of Bedforde & þe Duchesse his wife went vp to
 Paris, And so to other dyuers partees of Fraunce *per* as hym list
 32 best to abide; And pan þe Erle of Warrewik come In-to Englande
 again.

Off the takyng off Will Wawe; And how he was done to
 dethe.

36 And in this same yere was WiH Wawe take for an [a]rannt
 peef, and was brought to London to þe Kynges Bench, & so
 brought to Westmynster a-fore þe kynges Justices, & *per* Jugede to

pe dethe. And so he was brought again from Westmynster to Suthwerk, & *þen* he was put in a carte, stanndyng, & faste bounde; & so he was cariede thorough pe Cite to Tiborne, that all men myght see hym & knowe hym, And so he was caried the thirde day of 4 Juyll, And there hangede for his trespass.

Johannes Gedney M[ayor] Robertus Oteley vic' A° VI.
Henricus Frowik [A.D. 1427-8.]

**How that there fill grete habundaunce off Rayn; And how 8
dyuers.sowdiourz went ouer the see.**

And in this same yere, & in pe yere of grace Mⁱ IIII^e XXVII, from pe begynnnyng of pe moneth of Aprile vnto the feste of All Halowen, was so abundaunce of Rayn that, not only hay was 12 distroied, but Also all maner of Cornes; for it Raynede all-moste euery day, more or lesse, duryng this terme a-for-said.

And anone aftir, as pe Erle of Warrewik, *ser* Thomas Beauchampe, was sennd oute of Fraunce from pe Duke of Bedforde 16 by all the worthy & discrete counsaill of Englande, he was made maister & gouernoure vn-to the Kynge duryng his non-age, & hym to goueren, teche & norish, as oweth to be done to such a worthy prince, to his lernyng of all maner worthynesse to good gouernance, 20 discretion and reason.

And in pis same yere, an old man, a girdeler of Norwiche, which counterfetede the Kynges grete seale, And escaled charters & protections *with* *pat* counterfeit seall, in disseit & preiudice of pe 24 Kynge & of his liege peple, was iugede to pe deth, to be drawe thorough the Citee of London vnto Tiborne, and *þer* hangede; & *þus* he died for his treason.

**How that A Breton had mordrede a widdow without Algat. 28
Ca II^e LXII.**

And in pe same yere, a fals Breton, between Ester and Witson-tyde, mordrede a good wedowe in hir bedde, the which hadde found hym, for Almesse, *withoute* Algate, In the suburbes of 32 London; & he bar a-way all that sche hadde, And after toke girth of holy churche at Saint Georges in Suthwerk; but at pe last he toke the Crosse, & for-suore pe Kyng land. And as he went his way, it

happid hym to come by the same place wher he did that cursede dede; And women of þe same parish come oute to hym with stones & with canell dong & þere made an ende of hym in þe high streit, so
 4 þat he went no ferþere, not-with-standyng þe Constablis & oper men also, which had hym in gouernaunce, to convey hym forth in his way; for þere was a grete companye of them; & on hym thei had neither mercie nor pite; & thus this fals thefe endede his life in þis
 8 worlde, for his falsnesse.

How that An Erityk was take And convicte; And how Kyng Henry ordeynyd to go in to Fraunce, to resceyue þe crown.
Ca. II^e LXIII^o.

12 And in þis same yer, & in þe yer of *grace* a-foresaid, Richerde Woll-pakker, of Marc Lane, þat was convicte a-for þe clergie, & dampned of heresie, was led to þe Tour-Hill of London; & ther he was brent for his fals & cursed opynions þat he helde & mayntened
 16 in presence of þe Duke of Gloucestre, & of þe Duke of Northfolk, & þe Erl of Warrewik, & þe Erle of Stafforde, & oper lordes & Jentilles, & afore all þe comuners þat were there present of þe roialme a grete multitude.

20 And in this same yere, þe Satirday, þe XXI Day of Februarie, one Fenables, a Jentilman of Chestre, & Thomas Clement a Draper of London was dampnede atte Westmynster for treason & for þift
 24 þat thei had done to þe Kynge & to his liege peple, to be drawe fro þe Toure of London thorough þe Citee to Tiborne, & þere hangede & quartrede, And there hedes sett vpon London Brugge.

And in þis same day & yere, Embassitoures of Spayne, þat is to say, a Bishoppe, with other grete & worthy clerkis, And an Erl
 28 with knyghtes & squyers,—& these people come to þe Kynge in to Westmynstre Hall the day aboue-saide.

And in þis same yere, on Saint Mathie day, Apostill, which was on a Friday, Kyng Henry the Sexte after his coronation & ende of
 32 his parlement holden at Westminster, by the advise of all the lordes & comons of England, was ordeyned in þis parlement a-for-said þat þe Kyng shulde wende ouer the see in to Fraunce for to resceyue the Crowne þere.

[E]

CONTINUATION OF THE BRUT FROM THE CAPTURE OF
ROUEN (1419) TO 1430.

[MS. Egerton 650.]

¹In þat same yere þe Kyng lay at þe sege of Roon; and þe xvij
day of Ianuere it was yoldyn to oure Kyng. on Chyldermesse Day
come tythyng to London þat the vj day of Feueryere the Duke of
Bedford, Leutenant of Englonde, and the Chauncelere, and many 4
oper bysshoppis, and þe Maire and hys aldermen, with all þe
Cetizins, made a generall procession from Paules to Westmynstre,
þonkyng God of the good and gracijs spede þat he had gyff to oure
Kyng. 8

And in þat yere was Ludgate for-do, And all the prisoners
removed from Newgate. And þer died lx and x with-in xv days.
And þis was done for one Olyuer and iij false harlottes, And þer
þai died. 12

And in þat same yere Quene Iahan was a-rested And brought to
Retherhyde; And a gray frere was a-rested in Gernesie and lad to
Chyrburgh; And sone aftre was brought before oure Kyng; and oure
Kyng commaundit hym to the Toure of London, And þer he was 16
do in prisone.

Richard Whyttington Maior.	{ Wylliam Boteler Robertus Whytting- ham	{ Anno Ottauo H. Vti. [A.D. 1419-20.] 20
----------------------------	--	--

In þat yere come þe Duke of Gloucestre in-to Englonde, and
forth so to London; And þer was rescauyed and made Leutenant
of Englonde.

And þe Duke of Bedforth, with a fayr meyne, went to Hampton, 24
And þer he shpyt and sayled ouer in-to Normandy.

And in þat yere our Kyng weddit Dame Kateryne, þe kynges
Doghter of Fraunce, vppon þe Monday next afore þe Trinite Sondag.

And in þat yere was Pount Melayne wone, and oper fortises 28
many moo: þonked be God!

Williamus Cambryge Maior.	{ Iohannes Welles Iohannes Boteller.	{ Anno nono H. quin- tus. [A.D. 1420-1.]
------------------------------	---	---

¹ leaf 111, back.

In þat yere was a womman brent at CotelhyH for sleying of hyr husband.

And in þat yere oure Kyng and Dame Kateryne hys wyfe come
4 from Parise in-to Englonð, and so forth to London; And þer were
þai ressaued wurshyppfully with þe Maire & þe Aldermen, and all þe
Citeizens of London.

And vppon þe xij day of Feueryere, þat feH vppon a Sondag in
8 Lente, Dame Kateryne was crounned Quene at Westmynstre. And
whene þe Solempnite was done in þe chyrche, sho was broght fuH
solemply progh þe Paleis in-to the grete haH, where þe fest was
holdyn Off þe Coronacion of Quene Katerine.

12 Off þe statis at þe Coronacion of Kateryne, þe Quene of Englonð,
And of þe seruyce þat was done in þe same fest.

Fyrst, þe Quene Sate in hyr estate;

The Archbysshop of Cannctbury, The ¹ Bysshop of Wynchestre,
16 vppon þe ryght syde of the Quene; And þai were serued next þe
Quene, couerd at euery course;

The Kyng of Scotland in hys estate, vppon the left syde of þe
Quene, wech at euery course was serued next aftre þat þe Quene
20 and the bysshoppes were serued.

The Duchesse of York, The Countesse of Hunttyngdon, The
Duke of Gloucestre, vppon the same syde;

The Erle of Marche knelyng vppon þe desse on þe ryght syde
24 þe Quene, And held up a sepre of the Quenes;

The Erle of Stafford, knelyng vppon þe left syde of the Quene
vppon þe desse, and held a-noþer Sepre of the Quenes;

The Countesse of Kent was syttyng at the ryght fote vndur the
28 table;

Syr Ritchard Nevyle, keruere before þe Quene;

The Erles broþer of Southfolk, Copp-berrer;

Syr Iohn Steward, sewerer to the Quene;

32 The lord Clyfford, Panter, in the stede of Werwyke;

The Lord Wylloghby botelere, in þe stede of þe Erle of
ArundaH, The Lord Grey Ryffyn, Napperer;

The Lord Audeley, Aumerer, In the stede of þe Erle of Caum-
36 bryge;

The Erle of Warwyke, Steward of Englonð, in þe stede of þe
Duke of Clarence;

The Erle of Worcestre, MarchaH of Englonð, in þe stede of þe Erle MarchaH.

The nounbre and sitting in þe haH fyrst at þe tables :

The Barons of the .v. Pôrtes begone þe table in þe haH on þe 4 ryght hand Of the Quene ; And be-neyth þaim, at þe same table, setten þe Bonchers of þe Chauncery ;

The Maire of London And hys Aldermen begone þe table in þe haH on þe left syde of þe Quene, with oþer commynners of 8 the cete ;

And beneth þaim at the same table, in þe myddyst of the haH, next þe table of þe .v. portys, vppon the ryght hand of the Quene, The Bysshop of London satt withyn þe table, The Bysshopp of 12 Bath, The Bysshop of Excester before hym, The Bysshop of Norwych, The Bysshopp of Salesbury, The Bysshopp of Saynt David, The Bysshopp of Bangore before hym.

The bysshop of Lyncolne, The Abbot of Waltham, The 16 bysshop of Carlyle before þaim.

And þen next þaim, at the same table syttyng, þe Iustices ; And afftre þe Iustices at þe same table Satt WurshyppfuH knyght and Sqwyers ; 20

And þe ladys beyone þe tables in þe myddys of þe haH, ffor agayns þe Maire and þe Aldermen of Londone, The Countesse of Stafforde, Doghtter of Sere Thomas, som tyme Duke of Gloucestre ; The Countesse of Marche, hyre doghtter ; The Countesse of Arun- 24 deH, ¹The Countesse of Westmerland, The Countesse of Northumberland, hyr doghtter ; The Countesse of Oxenford ; The lady NeveH, some tyme þe Lordys wyfe NeveH, doghtter of the Erle of Somersette ; Dame Margarete, þe Dukes doghter of 28 Northfolk ; The Lady Clyfford, Suster of the Erle of Northumberlande ; The lady Burgeyne ; The lady Talbot ; The lady Wylloghby ; The lady Manley ; The wyfe of Syr Richard Nevyle, doghtter of the Erle of Salesbury, and no mo ladys of estate. And 32 þat table was ocupied with ladis and damesels, and a quarter of the bysshoppis table also.

There lordys sewing were assigne to do þe ryaH seruyce to the Quene : 36

The Erle of Northumberland	The Erle of Westmerland.
The Lord Fehughe	The Lord FurnevaH.

¹ leaf 112, back.

The Lord Feris of Groby	The Lord Gray of Wyltton.
The Lord Poynynges	The Lord Haryngton.
The Lord Darcy	The Lord Dacrys.
4 The Lord Delaware.	

The seruyce of þe ffyrst course.

Brawne wyth mustard	Dedelys in Burneux.
ffirment with Baleyne	Pyke.
8 Lamprey Powdered.....	Troute.
Codlyng	Plays.
Merlyng ffryed	Grete Crabys.
Leych lumbard	A bake mete in past.
12 Tartis	A Sodelte.

The seruyce of the secundu course.

Gele	Blaundesore.
Breme.....	Cungre.
16 Soles	Millet.
Chevan	BarbeH.
Roche	ffreche Samon.
Halybut	Gurnard rosted.
20 Roget broyled.....	Smelt ffryed.
Lopsters	Leyche Damask.
Laumpray in past	fflampauz ryah.
	A Sotelte.

24 ¹ A Panter and a damesseH before	The seruyce of þe þryde course.
Dates in Composte.....	Grene motteley.
Carpe dere	Turbutt.
Tenche	Perche.
28 Gogenos [Gudgeons]	Sturgeon frech and powderd.
Welkys	Porpas rosted.
Munse fryde	Crevis douse.
Grete Scrympmys	Elys and lampryns rosted.
32 A leyche called 'whyte leyche'	A bake mete in past, with iiij Angels.

A Sotelte : a tyger, and Saynt George ledyng it.

And in þe Ester weke foloyng, þe Duke of Clarence was slayne
36 in Fraunce, fast by the water of Leyre, wyth Scottes, Frenche men,
Armynakkys, be-cause he wold not be gouerned, and haue take hys

ost *with* hym. And *per* was take þe Erle of Hunttyngton, The Erle of Somerssette and hys broþer. And *per* was lost þat day in-to a ^{xx}iiij good knyghttes: on whos soules God haue mercy! Amen!

And in þe same yere our Kyng, vppon the thred Day of Iune, 4 Schyppit at Douere, And londit at Caleis, and rode forth in-to Fraunce.

And in þat yere was grete queraunce in London for vsures; And some of þaim left money, Iohn Sadeler, Water Chyrchey, and 8 many oþer; And in þat tyme money was skarse.

Robert Chycheley, maior. *Wilhelmus* Weston. Anno decimo h. vi^{ti}
Ricardus Crosby. [A.D. 1421-2.]

In þat tyme, vppone saynt Nicholas evyn, come tythynges from 12 Wyndyssore to þe Maire, þat oure Quene, Dame Kateryne, had borne a prince, a fayre sone. And a-none aH þe belles in London were re[n]gon; 'Te Deum' was songone at Paules; And *per* was the Chauncelere and many bysshoppys, And þe Maire and hys 16 Aldermen, And aH þe craftes of the Cite.

And in þat tyme þe gold of þe realme went by weght; And euery man had a payr ballaunce And weghttes in hys sleve for þe gold. 20

And in þat yere Qwhenne Kateryne went to Hampton, And *per* made hyr redy to go ouer the see vn-to þe Kyng. And *with* hyr went þe Duke of Bedforthe *with* a fayre meyne; And þe viij day of Maij sho landit at Hereflete, And so went forth vn-to oure 24 Kyng.

And in þat same tyme Mewes Embry was gotten in þe last ende of ApryH. And fyrst day of Iule oure kyng sent to the Toure of Londone xvij Cartes chargit *with* Frenche men þat were hys 28 presoners, þat he toke in Mewes ¹Embry: the nombre of þaim into ^{xx}viiij.

And in þat yere *per* come a² wrytte from þe Kyng vn-to the Maire of London, for to a-rest certayne persones þe which were 32 found defectyfe in certayne poyntes of Erysy and Lollardy, And þeis bene paire names: Eston, Mercer, and oþer moo.

And þat yere died Kyng Henry the fyft in Fraunce, vppone þe evyn of þe decollacion of Saynt Iohn Baptyst; And þen was hys 36 sone Henri made Kyng.

¹ leaf 113, back.

² MS. and a

And in þat yere þe Shryves of London went by barche to Westmynstre, And dyuerse craftes of London with þaim; And in þis maner þai come home agayne, all in blak. And þis was done be-
4 cause of our Kynges deth: on whos soule, God haue mercy! Amen!

And on þe Monday before Saynt Symond Day and Iude, The Bysshop of London, Mayster Iohn Kempt, was stalled at Paules.

Thes ben þe names of Maire and Shrevis of London in þe tyme
8 of Kyng Henri þe vj, in þe age of hym not xij monethys fulli:

Wylelmus Walderne, Iohannes Tedershaft. } Anno primo Henrici
Maior. Thomas Estfelde. } vi^{ti} [A.D. 1422-3.]

In þat yere þe Maire and þe Aldermen and aH þe craftes went
12 to Westmynstre by barge, aH in blak, þe v. day of Nouember; And
þer he toke hys oth in þe eschekere, as þe maner is. And whene
he had done, he toke hys barge with aH þe craftis, And come home
agayne.

16 þe vj day of Nouember, The cors of Kyng Henri the .v. was
brought to London; And a-none the Maire and þe Aldermen & aH
þe Citezens resceyved hym, aH in blak, and brought hym to Paules;
And þer he had hys dyryge and masses, and was entered, as it feH
20 for a kyng. And þis was done vpon þe Fryday. And aftre mete
he was brought to Westminster; And vpon þe Setterday he was
beryd before Saynt Edwardys shryne: on whose soule Almyghtti
God haue mercy! Amen!

24 And in þat yere, come Frenche bysshoppys oute of Fraunce;
And oper Frenche lordys and worthy knyghttes of Fraunce come
to þe Kyng to do homage to hym, as for heyre of Englund and
Fraunce: And þis was aftre Crystynmasse foloyng.

28 And þat same yere, þe secund day of Marche, þer was brent in
Northfolk a prest þat was dysgated of hys clergy for hys mys-byleue
and hys heresy. And hys name was Master Wylliam Tayloure.

Also Richard Whyttington, mercer, died þe xiiij day of Marche:
32 on whos saule Almyghtti God haue mercy! Amen!

Wylelmus Crowmere, Thomas Wandeforþ, } Anno ij^{do} H. sexti.
Maire. Nicholas Iames. } [A.D. 1423-4.]

¹at xxli þe parysshesens shuld pay xls; And yf it were of
36 more valewe, þen pay more.

And in þe same yere, on Saynt Gylis day, come þe CardinaH,
þe Bysshop of Wynchestre, to London; And þe maire and þe

Shryves and þe Alderdirmen, *with* aȝ the craftes of the cite, ryddyn agaynst hym, and wurshypfully ressaued hym And Welecommmed hym, and breght hym to Paules, And from Paules to Westmynstre; And *per* he a-bode aȝ þat nyght. And on þe morow he toke hys 4 hors and rode to Wyndysore vn-to our Kyng.

Henricus Barton maior. Iohannes Abbot. Anno vij^{thio} henrici vj^{ti}
Thomas Duffons. [A.D. 1428-9.]

In þis yere was þe good Erle of Salesbury, Sere Thomas Moun- 8 tague, slayn at the sege of Orlyaunce *with* a gonne, wheche was a noble lord and a worthy werreor emong aȝ Crystyn men: On whose saule, God, for hys pete, haue mercy! Amen! And he ys bered at Brysshams. 12

And in þis same yere, at Mydsomertyde, Henry Beauford, Cardinale, And also bysshop of Wynchestre, went ouer þe see in-to Fraunce *with* a fayre meyne of Archers and men of Armes; And þe Lord Wylloghby was made Capten of hys werris. The wheche 16 Cardynale was ordined and purpast for to haue gone in-to Prage, to haue dystroyed and gyf batayle vn-to the fals herytykes and Lollordys. And whene he was rydy, tydynges come þat þe sege of Orlyaunce was brokyn, And þe Lord Talbot takyn, and oper worthy 20 lordys. And a-none, in aȝ þe hast, þe Cardinaȝ *with* hys meyne, And Ser Iohn Ratclyff *with* hys meyne, þat was purposed for to haue gone in-to Gyene, went ouer in-to Fraunce to help and strenghe þe Regente, The Duke of Bedford, in þe Kynges rygt of Englund. 24

And in þe same yere fell sodanly a derth of whete, þat a Bussheȝ of whete was at xx^d; And xxiiij Days, brede was ryght skantt in London, in-so-moch þat vnneth Any myght be gete; bot in short tyme,—ponked be Almyghthti God!—hit was a-mendit; 28 And befe and motun, and Al maner of fleshe, þat same tyme was ryght dere and scarce vn-to Lammasse; And þen sone aftre,—ponked be Ihesu, of hys ȝeftis! ¹—it was a-mendit.

Wilelmus Est- { Wilelmus Rous, } Anno Octauo h. 32
feld, Maior. { Radulphus Holand, schereffyes. } vj^{ti}. [A.D. 1429
-30.]

²The fi[f] day of Nouember, þe Kyng, wyth hys lordys, ryally rode frome Kyngstone ouer London Bryge, And so forth Fenchyrelie strete, evyn vn-to the Toure, to hys mete. And þe 36 Maire and þe Aldermen, aȝ in Scarlete hodys, rode to mete the

¹ MS. pestis.

² leaf 114, back.

Kyng, And so rode forth with hym to þe Toure The Seterday
next afre; wher-of were þe Erle of Denshyre, þe Lord Spencer
sone, the Erle of Warwyk, þe Lord Beamounde. And afre none,
4 þe Kyng, in a riaH araye, with aH hys lordys Ryally a-rayed in
cloth of gold for þe most part, with the said xxiiij newe knyghtes
aH in blew, the prestes rode a-fore þe Kyng ij and ij, from þe
Toure to Westmynstre. And þe Maire and þe Aldermen, aH in
8 Scarlet, rode also, and broght þe Kyng to Westmynstre. And at
London Bryge was made a toure full of Angels And þe grete Con-
dyte and þe lytiH Condite in þe Chepe, rially arayed, rynnynge
bothe rede wyne and whyte. And at the Crosse in þe Chepe was
12 made a riaH casteH, And þerin was grete Wurshyp shewed to þe
Kyng.

On þe morne, þe Sondag, þe vj day of Nouember, þe Kyng was
crowned at Westmynstre full rially. And aH Bysshoppys and
16 Abbotes Copitt and mytred rially; And aH temperaH lordys rode
in paire estate; And aH oper knyghtes (for most perty) aH in cloth
of gold rially. And Henri of Wynchestre, Cardinale, as a Carde-
naH eate in a sete by þe ryght hand of the Kyng. And þer was
20 Quene Kateryne, moder of the Kyng, And a grete nounibre of ladis
and gentiH-wemmen rially arayed. And also þer come sodanly to
þe coronacion one of þe kinges sones of Porttyngale, And he was
Wurshypfully resceyved. And þat day was a fare day and a clere,
24 blessed be God!

Also þat yere þe perlement was eniourned tiH afre Crystyn-
masse. Also þe Fryday, þe xx day of Ianuere, Richard Hunden),
wolpakker, was brent at þe Toure-hyH for hys Lollardy and herysye.

28 The Tuysday next afre, Iohn Vpton, þe appellaunte, and Iohn
Downe of Feueressham, defendaunt, Armed, faght with-yn lystis in
Smythfelde nyghe an oure. And þen þe Kyng toke it in-to hys
awne hand; And þe Seterday afre, at Kenyngton, þe Kyng made
32 an¹ ende be-twene þaim bothe; And so þai rode at large.

The perlement began agayn þe Monday afre, þe xij day. And
in þe meyne tyme The CardinaH went ouer þe see on þe Kynges
message.

36 And also þe same yere, in Estre Weke, þe Kyng went to Caleis,
And so to Roon, with the substance of aH þe lordes and gentyls of
Englond, And left þer þe Duke of Glaucestre, Leuetenante.

Nicholas Watton maior.

(M. cccc. xxxi.)

¹ MS. and

APPENDIX E.

ANOTHER VERSION OF THE TIME FROM 1422-31.

[*MS. Rawlinson, B. 173. Bodleian Library.*]

¹And in that yere [Nov. 1422] come Frenssh Bisshoppes oute of Fraunce, & pis was Cristmas folowyngt.

¶ William Crowmere, Maire

¶ Thomas Sandeford² } ¶ Shreues, anno ij^o.

4

¶ Nicholas Iames } [1 Sept. 1423 to 31 Aug. 1424.]

¶ And in that yere the King was brought fro Windesore in a chare to Londoñ, and his modre the Quene sitting in the same chare, and he in her armes, and so he was brought to Westminster. 8 and on the morue bigañ the parliament. And in that same yere, on the Wednesday bifore Seint Mathewes day, Syr Iohn Mortymere, knight, brake prison, and went oute off the Toure of Londoñ; but sone he was take vpon p^e Toure-wharfe, bitwene the 12 Toure & the Temyse, & there he was euyH wounded. And forth-with-aH he was brought forth bifore the Duke of Gloucestre; And vppon the Saturday he was brought to hys answeare, and there he was dampned to be drawe & honged, And his hede smetyn of at 16 Tyborne. And thañ his hede was take and sett vpon Londoñ Brygge, and his body was beried at Iones, bicause he ³was a knight of the Sepulcre; And hys hede was take downe, & beried with the body: & pat licence gate freier Winchilsey. 20

¶ Iohn MicheH, Maire.

¶ Iohn Bithewater } ¶ Shreues, anno iij^o.

¶ Symkyñ Semañ } [1 Sept. 1424 to 31 Aug. 1425.]

¶ And in that yere was a generall processioñ, And a pardoner ²¹Riding vpon an horse, and his face to the horse taile, and his billes hanging a-bought hys necke by-hynde and bifore. And whañ he

¹ leaf 225.

² i.e. Wandesford.

³ leaf 225, back.

come to þ^e South dore of Poules, there was Made a grete fire, and
aH his billes were brent.

¶ Ioħn Couentre, Maire.

4 ¶ William Mildrede } ¶ Shreues, Anno iiij^{to}.

¶ Ioħn Brockeley } [1 Sept. 1425 to 31 Aug. 1426.]

¶ And in that yere was a grete discencion bitwene the Duke
of Gloucestre and the Bisshop of Wynchestre; And this was on
8 the same day that þ^e Maire rode. And on the Tuesday was mekle
of the bisshoppes retenewe gadered in Southwerke, with bowes and
arowes and other herneys. And thañ the Brige gate was kept
with strength of meñ of armes. And sone after, vppon viij of the
12 clocke, aH the Cite was vp, and drewe hem to the water-side, and
wolde haue passed ouyr Thamyse. But the Prince of Portingale,
the Bisshop of Caunterbury, the Bisshop of Bath, entreted, ponked
be God, aH was cesed, or none. And the x day of Ianyvere next,
16 þ^e Duke ¹of Bedford and his wiffe the Duchesse come to London;
and the Maire and aH the Aldermen, & the craftes, ridde a-yenst
him, and welcomed him vnto the Cite, And the Bisshope of Win-
chestre come with him. And in this same yere was the parliament
20 at Leicester.

¶ Ioħn Reynewe², Maire.

¶ Robert Arnolde } ¶ Shreues, Anno quinto.

¶ Ioħn Higham } [1 Sept. 1426 to 31 Aug. 1427.]

24 And in the same yere, in the latter end of December, died the
goode Duke of Excestre. and in the same yere were founde many
false vessels of Romeney, the whiche were made by gadered
Galgenet, into the nombre of vj buttes, the which the hedes were
28 smyt oute of in diuerse places of the Cite: the falsest gode that
euyr any mañ see.

¶ Ioħn Reynewe³, Maire.

¶ Robert Otele } ¶ Shreues, anno vj^{to}.

32 ¶ Henry Frowyke } [1 Sept. 1427 to 31 Aug. 1428.]

¶ In his tyme there was a lone of iij þousand marke; And it
was for the Erle of Salesbury for-to meyntene the Kinges werres
in Fraunce; And therto payed diuerse peple, asweH þ^e mene as the
36 riche; som more, som lasse; but the leste was xs. ¶ And after
that, was graunted bi the parliament, þat aH the chirches of the
ralme shulde be stent at a somme; and the Chirche were at xx ti,

¹ leaf 226.

² i. e. Raynwell.

³ i. e. John Gedney.

the paressiens shulde paye xls.: and iff it were of more valewe, thañ¹ to paye more.

²¶ Henry Bartoñ, Maire.

¶ Ioñ Abbots } ¶ Shreues, Anno vij^o.

4

¶ Thomas Duffons } [1 Sept. 1428 to 31 Aug. 1429.]

¶ And in this yere was the gode Erle of Salesbury, Sir Thomas Mountague, slayne at the sege of Orliaunce with a Gonne; the whiche was a noble lorde, and a worthi werrioure amonge aH Cristeñ 8 meñ: On whos soule God for his pite haue mercy! amen! And he was beried at Brisham. In this same yere, at Midsomertide, Henry Benford, CardinaH, and also Bisshop of Winchester, went ouyr the see into Fraunce with a faire meyne of Archers and meñ 12 of armes; ¶ And the Lorde Welouby was made Capteñ of his werres; the whiche CardinaH was purposed and ordeyned for-to haue go into Prage, to haue distroyed and yeue bataile vnto the false heretikes and lollars. And whaH he was redy, tidinges come 16 that the sege of Orliaunce was brokeñ, and the Lorde Talbot take, and other worthi lordes. And anone in aH haste, the CardinaH with his meyne, and Sir Ioñ Radclyff with his meyne, pat was purposed to haue go into Gienne, went ouer into Fraunce to helpe 20 and strength p^e Regent, the Duke off Bedford, in the Kingis right of Englund.

¶ William Estfelde, Maire.

¶ William Rouse } ¶ Shreues, anno viij^o.

24

¶ Richard Holand } [1 Sept. 1429 to 31 Aug. 1430.]

¶ The Friday, the iiij^{de} day of Nouember, the King with ³his lordes, Rialli rode fro Kingestoñ ouer Londoñ Brige, And so forth Fanchirch strete, even to the Toure, to his mete. And the Maire 28 and the Aldermeñ, aH in scarlet hodes, Rode to mete the King, and rode forth with him to the Toure. the Saturday next after, the King made xxxij knightes of the Bath, in the Toure of Londoñ; wherof were the Erle of Deuenyssh-shire, the Lorde Spencers sonne, 32 the Erle of Warrewike, the Lorde Beaumont. and after none, the King, in riaH aray, with aH his lordes rialli arayed in clothes of golde for the moste partie, with the saide xxxij knightes aH in blewe like prestes, rode a-fore the King ij and ij fro the Toure to Westminster. 36 And the Maire & p^e Aldermeñ aH in scarlet, rode also, and brought the King to Westminster. And on the Morue, the Sondag, the vj

¹ MS. has pañ thañ with the first pañ underlined for erasure.

² leaf 226, back.

³ leaf 227.

day of Nouembre, the King was crown'd at Westminster rialli;
and Henry of Winchester, CardinaH, as a CardinaH sate in a sete
by, oñ the right honde of the King. And there was Quene Katerin,
4 moder of the King, And a grete nombre of ladies and gentilwemen
rially arayed. And ther come sodenly at þ^e Coronacioñ, one of the
Kinges sonnes of Portingale; and he was worshipfully resceyued.
And that daye was a fayre day, & a clere, blessid be God!

8 ¶ Nicholas Wotton, Maire.

¶ Water Chirtesey } ¶ Shreues, anno ix^o.

¶ Robert Large } [1 Sept. 1430 to 31 Aug. 1431.]

12 ¶ In that yere come the CardinaH oute of Normandy from
Roan; And there was the King, and helde Cristmasse. ¶ and
after Cristmas, after Seint Hillaries day, bigañ the parliament at
Westmynstre. and in that yere come to London the Ambassiatours
of Spayne, to trete of pees.

¹ leaf 227, back.

[F]

CONTINUATION OF THE BRUT FROM 1430-1446.

[MS. O 9. 1. Trinity College, Cambridge.]

¹ Nicholaus Wotton, Maior.	Walterus Chertsey	{ Vicecomites. anno ix ^o . [A.D. 1430-1.]
	Robertus Large	

And in this yere, and in the yere of grace Mⁱ cccc xxx^{ti}, John⁴ Ostillere, at the Crowne in Fanchirchestrete of² London, debadet with the ambassitours of Spayne, and rered blode of oon of theym³ pat was a gentleman; wherfor the hosteler was arested and brought to the Countoure, and his wife bothe, for she beganne the debate; ⁸ and then the Kyng and his consayle remeved hym from the Countoure,⁴ and brought hym in⁵ the Flete prison. And on the Monday next after, the Maire and bothe the Shirreffes of London, by the comaundment of the Kyng⁶ and his consayle, brought hym¹² fro the Flete, fetered, colered, and manaced with yron strongly, thurgh the Cite till⁷ they come to Leden-hall, for he shuld haue goon to the Toure to⁸ abyde his Iugement for the grete offence pat he had doon, brekyng of the Kynges sauf-condite, ayenst his peas¹⁶ and comaundment. And there these ambassiatours of Spayne mette with the Maire and his company in Greschirchstrete, as they were goyng toward⁹ the Toure, and prayed the Maire of grace for the man; and so he was brought ageyne pat same nyght¹⁰ to²⁰ Flete prison.

And in this same yere, on Seint Gregoryes day, a preste of Essex was brought to London afore¹¹ the clergie at Seint Paules, and there he was conuicte in heresy and false Lollardy, pat he²⁴ mayntened and helde ayenst holy chirche; and so he was brent in Smythfeld for his heresy.

And in this same yere, on the Tuesday next after Palme Sunday, all the prisoners pat were in Ludgate were brought into²⁸ Newgate prison by Waltere Chirtesey & Roberte Large, shirreffes of

¹ leaf 207. ² in U. ³ y^e Embassitours, gentilmen U.

⁴ toure of London U. ⁵ in to U. ⁶ kynges counsaill U.

⁷ to the come U. ⁸ for to haue abiden U. ⁹ to the Toure warde U.

¹⁰ leaf 207, back. ¹¹ to fore U.

London; and the Friday, the xiiijth day of Aprell then¹ next folowing, the same shirreffes fette oute of Newgate, by the false suggestion and compleynt of oon² Iohn Kyngescote, Gaolere of 4 Neugate, .xviij. presoners of fremen. And the³ oon half of these xviij. presoners were ledde to the⁴ oon Counter, and þat oþer half to⁵ þat other Compter, by⁶ malice and compleynt of þe seid Iohn Kyngescote. And these⁷ were ledde to the Compters, braced as 8 though⁸ they had be⁹ felons and theves, openly in euery mannys sight.

And in this same yere, vpon þe Whitsonday, a man of the towne of Abyngdon þat is in Oxenfordshire, þat called hym-self 12 Iak Sharp, was take, with oþer mo of his company, for risers and distourbours of þe Kynges peple, and for his false ymaginacion and treson þat he¹⁰ began to make and werk in that Cuntre aboute; and þerfore he was drawe, and hanged and quartered at Abyngdon, 16 and his hede smyten of, and set vpon London Brigge, by the¹¹ comaundment of the Duke of Gloucestre, Lieutenant of England, an[d]¹² by alle the good and worthy lordes of the Kinges Consayle beinge that¹³ tyme in the Reame.

20 And in this same yere, the xvj. day¹⁴ of Iune, the preson of Ludgate was made, and opened ageyn¹⁵ for fremen þat be presoners for dette. And the¹⁶ same day they entred in first¹⁷ ageyn by ordynauce and comaundment of the Maire, alder¹⁸men and 24 comyners. And Herry Dene, Tayloure, was¹⁹ made keper of Ludgate prison, by the Maire and all the communialte in the Guyldhall.

And in pis same yere, the .xiiij. day of Iuyll, John Russell, 28 wollepakkere, was dampned at Westmynstre, and brought to the Kynges Benche, and leyde on a²⁰ hirdell, and drawen thurgh the Cite to Tybourne, and quartered; and his quarters set vpon dyuers gates of London, and his hede²¹ set vpon London Brigge.

32 John Welles, Maior. Stephanus Broun } vicecomites anno x^o. [1 Sept.
John Athirley } 1431 to 31 Aug. 1432.]

And þen Kyng Henry was brought from Caleys, þurgh

¹ then om. U. ² ye said U. ³ yt one U. ⁴ yt U.

⁵ vnto U. ⁶ by ye malice U. ⁷ þese prisoners U.

⁸ though om. U. ⁹ bene for felonie & thefte U. ¹⁰ he he U.

¹¹ the om. U. ¹² and U. ¹³ beyng in the roialme at yt tyme U.

¹⁴ day om. U. ¹⁵ and ageyn Tr. and opened again U. ¹⁶ yt U.

¹⁷ first om. U. ¹⁸ leaf 208. ¹⁹ was om. U. ²⁰ an U.

²¹ hede smytt of and set U.

Normandy, to þe Cite of Roan, with strenght of his lordes, and with men of armes and archers; and there the kyng abode, and rested hym in the Castell and ¹ the Cite of Roan, from Seint Iames tyde the Apostell, ² vnto the secund day of Decembre.² And when ⁴ he come first into Rone, he was receyued and welcomed for their liege lord and Kyng, with all reuerence, solempnite, gladnesse and worship, þat myght be ordeyned and made; and also they presented hym with ryche and roiall giftes, and thanked God of his comyng. ⁸ And in the tyme of his abidyng in þe Cite of Roan, there were many iourneyes done in dyuers partyes of Fraunce and Normandy, which he not tited in this boke; for y haue not full conuasaunce of theym, how, ne in what place nor where they were doon.³ 12

⁴ Here is the begynnyng of Kyng Herries comyng the Sext, from Roan to Parys; and how worthely they of Parys receyued the Kyng in his first comyng thider.⁴

And when Kyng Henry the Sext was goon from the Cite of 16 Roan toward þe Cite of Parys, and first to Seint Denys the .ij. day of Decembre; and þere he was worthely receyued as euer was any kyng to any Cite; and þe village cleped 'Chapell,' betwene Seint Denys and ⁵ Parys, there mette with the Kyng and his lordes, the ²⁰ Provost of Parys, with the Marchauntez, and .iiij. other estates with hem,⁶ clothed in oon sute, in rede fyne saten crymsyn ⁷ furred with Martrons, and with blewe hodes, to a grete⁸ notable nombre. And whan the Kyng was passed the village, þere mette with hym the ²⁴ Provost of Parys aforeseid,⁹ in a blewe gowne of velwet, and ¹⁰ the .iiij. Maisters of the chastlet with theym, alle clothed in blewe with blak hodes; and next after theym¹¹ come ¹² the ix worthy Emperoures, with Kynges and Quenes, and iche of ¹³ them armed, ²⁸ sauf the Quenes, and their horses¹⁴ trapped with their armes, ¹⁵ and the quenes hors trapped with their armes; ¹⁵ and then come the Maister of the Chamber, with the acomptes all clothed in violet, ermyn,¹⁶ scarlet hodes, a notable number; and after come the ³² President, with alle the maysters of þe parlement, all clothed in

¹ and in y^e U. ²⁻² om. U.

³ doon. And y^s for I leue theme vn writynne. U. ⁴⁻⁴ om. U.

⁵ leaf 208, back. ⁶ hym all clothede U. ⁷ and crymsyn U.

⁸ grete om. U. ⁹ aforeseid om. U. ¹⁰ and all the U.

¹¹ hym U. ¹² come ridynge U. ¹³ of Tr. of theme U.

¹⁴ horses U. ¹⁵⁻¹⁵ om. U. ¹⁶ violet Tr. with crymsyn. U.

scarlet, with furred hodes, and round standyng cappes of Trype; and these were the iiij estates with alle the ix worthies.

And at comyng to pe gate of Seint Denys of Parys, there was
 4 afore¹ the fronte of the gate pe armes of the towne in gowles, a
 chieff of asure, with the flourdelyce of gold in asure; and also per
 was a verrey shippe, with alle the appartenaunce² per³to belongyng,
 couered with siluer foyle, and certeyne persones standing perin.
 8 And at the Kynges comyng to the gate, they henge ouer the shippe
 borde iij. bloody hertys like vnto mennys hertys, bot pey were
 gretter. And as the Kyng come to the gate, these thre hertes
 opened; and oute of hem³ flewe white dovys and oper briddes, and
 12 certeyn scriptures made, shewyng vnto the Kyng pat they⁴ receyued
 hym with alle hertys, and for their souereyn Lorde and Kyng.
 And at the comyng in of⁵ the gate was ordeyned a clothe of gold,
 and vj men beryng it⁶ vpon vj. spere-shaftes, and eche of the men
 16 bare heded; and on their hodes,⁷ garlaundes of gode⁸ foyle, and
 they clothed in blewe. And in the⁹ same strete was a condit, and
 iij. meremaydes swymmyng aboue on¹⁰ the water; ¹¹and oute of
 the condite come rennyng ¹²dyu[er]s wyne; oon ypocras; the
 20 second rede wyne, the thridde, with mylke.¹² And euery Englishsh
 man pat wold drynk ypocras, had ynough; and alwey men redy to
 serue theym with cuppes and pecis. And iij wodewoses playing
 vpon the toppe¹³ of pe condyte; and other wodewoses benethe,¹⁴
 24 playing to kepe this¹⁵ condite.

And then in the same strete was made a scaffold; and perupon
 men disgysed after the weddyng of oure Lady, and of the birthe of
 oure Lorde Ihesu Crist, fro the begynnyng to the ende. And pere
 28 was neyder man nor childe pat any wight myght perceyue, pat
 euer chaunged any chere or countenaunce alle the tyme duryng;
 bot held their contaunce, as they had been ymages peynted; so
 pat all peple pat sawe hem, seyde pat they sawe neuer in peire lyves
 32 suche a-noder sight.

And after that, comyng in at¹⁶ pe Inner gate of Seint Denys
 wh[er]e pat he was in Chater, there was made the life of Seint
 Denys, and of many other dyuers persons in grete estate aboue hym,

¹ afore at U. ² appartenaunce U. ³ theme U. ⁴ the U.

⁵ at U. ⁶ it vp vpon U. ⁷ hedes U. ⁸ golde U. ⁹ this U.

¹⁰ vpon U. ¹¹ leaf 209.

¹²⁻¹³ iij strems one of ypocras an oper with rede wyne and ye thrid
 with mylk.

¹³ Cupp U. ¹⁴ playing bynethe U. ¹⁵ the U. ¹⁶ of U.

bothe spirituall and temporall, after¹ Cristen men and hethen, as they were in theyre tyme *pat* is passed. And so comyng to the founteyn of Seint Innocent³, there was made a hegge of grene holme-busshes; and *perout* stert an hert, and houndes rennyng⁴ after hym, couered in *pe* armes of England and² Fraunce. And at *pe* Chastelet, *pere* was made a stately ordynaunce of scaffoldes, hanged *with* clothes of golde and *with* arras, *with* the Kinges armes of England and of Fraunce; and a man lykened to *pe* Kyng⁸ sitting in a sete, kepyng a state in scarled³ *with* a furred hode and *with* .ij. buylhons made *with* the armes of England and of Fraunce; and vpon the right hande, knelyng, my Lord of Bedford,⁴ my⁵ Lord of Gloucestre, my Lord Cardynall,⁶ and many oþer lordes¹² of England, iche man⁸ after his degre, armed with his cote of armes vpon hym;⁹ and then the Duke of Burgoyne, knelyng¹⁰ on the lifte hande, offeryng vp the armes of Fraunce, and alle the other lordes of Fraunce in theire degre, knelyng, and offeryng¹¹ vp¹⁶ their armes; and dyuers scriptures made, *pat* all they requyre the Kyng of rightwisnesse. And after was presented to *pe* Kyng a wyld hert, trapped *with* the armes of the towne.

And so *pe* Kyng rode forth to oure Lady Chirche, and made²⁰ his offryng. Alle¹² the stretes from Seint Denys Gate were hanged *with* cloþes of arras and with clothes of tapisserie werk; and for *pe* most party all the stretes were couered *with* linnen clothes.

And so from thens the Kyng that same tyme¹³ went to Tournay,²⁴ and¹⁴ because it was ill¹⁵ ridyng, for the grete froste *pat* was that tyme in the towne, and the stretes were strawed thurghout for slidyng of their horses vnto þey come to Tournay; and there the¹⁶ Kyng souped *with* my Lorde of Bedford, and lay there all nyght,²⁸ and dynd there on the morowe ere [he] passed any ferther.

And so vpon the morowe the Kyng went to¹⁷ speke *with* his grandmoder, *pe* Quene of Fraunce. And there she made hym¹⁸ chere, and welcomed hym *with* all the dalyaunce, countenaunce,³² and chere *pat* she coude or¹⁹ myght; and seid *pat* 'she was neuer so gladd as she was then, sith she sawe *pe* Kynge of Fraunce in

¹ and aftir U. ² and of U. ³ in a sete of Estate in Scarlet U.

⁴ my Lord of Bedford knelyng U. ⁵ and my U. ⁶ the Cardinall U.

⁷ leaf 209, back. ⁸ man om. U. ⁹ theme U. ¹⁰ sitting U.

¹¹ Fraunce kneling in ther degre and offeryng U. ¹² and all U.

¹³ yt same tyme *pe* Kyng U. ¹⁴ and for U. ¹⁵ parillous U.

¹⁶ there Tr. *pere* the U. ¹⁷ and spak. ¹⁸ hym grete U.

¹⁹ and U.

good plyte.' And so from the Quene he rode streight to Boys in Vyncent; and there he rested hym¹ vnto þe tyme of hys Coronacion, þe which shuld be holden and ²doon on þe Sonday, the .viijth day
4 afore Cristmasse, by the grace of God.

And þen the Saterdag, the xv. day of Decembre, the Kyng come on the after-none from Boys in Vyncent vnto þe palays of Parys; and he rested hym there all þat nyght. And þe next
8 morowe, the Sonday, was he brought worthely from the palyce to the Chirche of oure Lady in Parys; and there he was crowned Kyng of Fraunce by the Cardynall, þe Bisshop ³ of Winchestre and oper Englissh Bisshoppes, and by .vj. of þe worthiest Bisshoppes
12 of Fraunce. And this coronacion was worthely doon, *with* all the solempnite þat myght be doon and ordeyned.

And when the Kyng was crowned, and the *seruice* doon, then the Kyng was brought ageyn to his palyse, and there set to mete
16 *with* all delicacye of metes and drynkes þat myght be ordeyned, and open fest to all men þat wold com, bothe pore and riche. And after his coronacion at Parys, the Kyng come down to þe Cite of Roan. And so, by candelmasse next, the Kyng came to Caleys.
20 And the Marchauntes of the Staple, with the peple of the towne, welcomed hym *with* all reuerence and honoure, and presented hym with giftes.

And *within* .xiiij. dayes after, the Kyng come ouer the see
24 into England, and landed at the towne of Dover in Kent; and there were redy the Burgeys of the .v. Portes, and bare the Kyng on lande. And then come moche peple of Kent and Sussex, of good gentlemen and yomen on horsbak and in good aray, and they
28 welcomed the Kyng, and brought hym to Caunterbury; and þere þe Kyng rested hym a day. And then the peple of all the Cuntre aboute come on horsbak and good aray to þe Kyng, and welcomed the Kyng *with* all theire hertys, and brought the King fro⁴
32 Caunterbury vnto his Maner of Eltham þat is .v. myle oute of London. And there the Kyng rested hym .v. or .vj. dayes, vnto his comyng to the Cite of London.

And in this same yere the xxjth day of Februar, Kyng Henry
36 the .vj. come from his Maner of Eltham toward the Cite of London; and the Maire and aldermen, *with* the comynalte of

¹ hym all nyght U.

² There is a break in U here from *doon* on p. 461 to *foloyng* on p. 462, l. 8.

³ leaf 210. ⁴ for Tr.

London, roode ayenst the Kyng on horsbak, in the best aray *pat* they myght, in the reuerence of the Kyng and in worship and gladnesse of the worthy name of the Cite of London, thurghout the world in worthynesse commended and *praysed*. For the Maire 4 hym-self was clothed in rede Crymsyn velwett, and a grete velwet hatte furred royally, and a girdell of gold aboute his mydell, and a bawdrik of gold aboute his neck, trillyng down behynde hym; and his .iij. gresmen on ¹.iij. grete Coursoures ²foloyng hym, in oon 8 sute of a good aray, in rede,³ all spangled in siluer; and then all the Aldermen in gownes of scarlet,⁴ *with* sangwyn cappes. And all the *communialte* of the Cite were⁵ clothed in white; bot euery crafte *with* dyuers devices enbrowded⁶ vpon the white gownes, *pat* 12 euery craft myght be knowen, oon from a-nother, *with* scarlet hodes or cappes. And all they hoked still on horsbak on ⁷the Blak-Heth in Kent, on both sides, as a strete, vnto the Kynges comyng.

And when they sawe the Kyng come, the Maire *with* the 16 aldermen rode to the Kyng, and welcomed hym *with* all reuerence, honour and obeysaunce.⁸ And the Kyng thanked hem, and ⁹he come ridyng thurgh all the peple; and they obeyed, and seid, “Welcom oure liege¹⁰ and Kyng! welcom!¹¹ and thanked be God 20 in all his giftes, *pat* we se you in good quart!” and so the Kyng rode streight the high way to London.

And when the Kyng had riden thurgh Suthwerk, and come to the stulpes *without*¹² London Brigge, *pere* stode a gyaunt in¹³ a 24 toure, *with* his swerd drawe in his hande, shewed *with* countenaunce, doth manace all foreyn enemys to the death *without* mercy, *pat* seith or doth¹⁴ ayenst the¹⁵ Kynges right. “And y, the Kynges Champyon, in full myght and power.” 28

And then the Kyng come to London Brigge; and there was made a roiall hevenly toure; and therin was shewed .iij. ladyes as Emperice, worthely apparaylled in their aray, which were called by name ‘Nature, Grace, and Fortune.’ And their girdelles were 32 blewe, shynyng like to sapheres, which shewed to the Kyng, in his comyng, all goodnesse and gladnesse in¹⁶ vertuous lyvyng; and *with* oper .vj.¹⁷ virgyne celestial, in tresses of gold, and *with*

¹ leaf 210, back.² U begins again.³ in rede om. U.⁴ scarlet gownes U.⁵ all U.⁶ enbrandrede U.⁷ vpon U.⁸ honour, reuerence and obeisaunce U.⁹ and so U.¹⁰ liege lorde U.¹¹ welcom om. U.¹² porugh U.¹³ *with* Inne U.¹⁴ doth or saith U.¹⁵ his U.¹⁶ and U.¹⁷ vij. U.

coronalles on theire hedes, all clothed in white, as virgines, with sonny¹ of golde on theire garmentes, shewyng as hevenly creatures, mekely salewyng the Kyng, and gaf hym .vij. giftes, *pat* were
4 toknes of oure Lord God of heven, *pat* were² white dowves, betokenyng the giftes of the Holy Gost, a spirite of intelligence, a spirite of sapience, and a spirite of strenght and of connyng, and of consayle, pite, drede, and lowlynesse. And on the lifte side of
8 these .iiij. Emperesses, were .vij. oper virgyns, clothed³ all in white, with sterres of gold on⁴ theire garmentes, with coronalles on theire hedes, which presented the Kyng with⁵ royall giftes: first, they endewed the Kyng with the crowne of glorie, and with the sepre
12 of mekenesse⁶ and of pite; a swerd of myght and victorie, a mantell of prudence, a shelde of feith, a helme of helth, a girdell of love and of parfite peas. And all these ladyes and virgines welcomed the Kyng with all honoure and reuerence.⁷
16 And then the Kyng procedyng forth to the Condyte in Cornhill; and *pere* was made in serkelwyse a Trone; and in the myddes sittyng, a yonge child arayed as a kyng, whom to gouerne were .iiij. ladyes, Mercy, Trouthe and the Lady⁸ Clennesse; and
20 .ij. Iuges of lawe, and .viij. sergeauntes, to shewe the kyngdom lawe and right. And then the Kyng rode forth, and entred into Chepe, and come to the grete Conduit, *pat* ranne plente of good wyne, bothe white and rede, to all peple *pat* wold drynk. And
24 aboue, ouer the Condite, was a royall toure likned to Paradyse, with many dyuers trees⁹ beryng eueryche dyuers frutes. And in this same gardeyn was dyuers welles of dyuers wyne, with bokettes; and .iiij. glorious virgines wounde vp the wyne, pro-
28 feryng the Kyng there full habundaunce, fulsomnesse, and high plente. And the names of these virgines been ‘Mercy, Grace, and Pite.’ And in the ende of this gardeyn *pere* appered to the Kyng .ij. olde men,—*pat* oon, Enok; and *pat* oper, Ely,—*pat* shewed the
32 Kyng chere and grete preysing¹⁰ ministryng his gouernance.

And¹¹ the Kyng passed forth, and come to the Crosse in Chepe;

¹ soñs U. ² were vij U. ³ all clothede U. ⁴ vpon U.

⁵ leaf 211. ⁶ clennesse U.

⁷ with alle melodie & roalte of songe. And than ye Kyng rode forth, comes to redenhall in Cornhill, & *per* was made a roiall thyng like vnto a tabernakle & *pere* in satt *pat* lady dame sapience with the vij sciences euery in *pere* degre shewyng *pere* craftis werkis & konnynges & made grete Ioie melodie & songe vnto ye Kyng & welcomed hym with all honoure & reuerence U.

⁸ lady of U. ⁹ dyuers thynges and trees U. ¹⁰ praisyng and U.

¹¹ and pan U.

and there was made a castell roiall ; and on the Est syde stode .ij. grene treez, which bare the armes of England and of Fraunce, the libardes and the flouredelice, which been the Kinges right and trewe armes be lyne. And vpon this castell, toward Seint Paules, 4 there was the tree of Iesse, with all the braunches, shewyng the kynrede of oure Lorde Ihesu¹ and of our Lady,² Seint Marye, to the comfort of the Kyng, and for the grete solempnite of pe worthy cite of London. 8

And then they³ passed forth from pe⁴ Castell and come toward Seint Paules at the Litell Conduit ; and pere was made an heven indivisible of the Trinite ; and a trone compassed his roiall See with a grete multitude of angellys hym aboute, with dyuers 12 melodyes and songe, to hertly ioye and ⁵comforyng of the Kyng and all his peple. And whan he was come to Seint Paules, there⁶ he alight doun of his hors ; and pere come pe Archebisshop of Caunterbury, and the Archebisshop of York,⁷ and pe Bisshop⁸ of 16 Lincoln, and the Bisshop[es] of Bathe, Salesbury, Norwich, Ely, and Rochestre, and the Dene of Paules with his couent, in procession, in theire best araye of holy Chirche, and met with hym, and did hym obseruaunce as bylongeth⁹ to hym, and censed hym at his 20 comyng in ; and so brought the kyng to the high autere, with roiall songe. And there the kyng offred ; and then he come oute ageyn, and toke his hors, and come to Westminster ; and thider brought hym the Maire, Aldermen, and all the communalte of the 24 Cite of London.

And when the kyng was come to Westminster with all his peple, the Abbot and all the Couent come oute, coped roially, in procession, with high solempnite and gladnesse. And the Abbot 28 brought to the Kyng, Seint Edwardes sepre ; and so he come into the Abbay with all solempnite, ioye and songe, and offred to Seint Edward ; and then come oute ageyne, and went to his palace. And then the Maire and Aldermen, with all the communalte of London, 32 toke theire leve of the Kyng and of the lordes, and thanked God highly of his welfare and comyng.

And on the Seturday next suyng, the Maire and pe Aldermen come ageyn to Westminster to the palays, with a riche hanaper of 36 gold, and presented it to the Kyng, and a M^t .ii. of gold therin, to

¹ Ihesu Criste U.² of his moder U.³ the Kynge U.⁴ that U.⁵ leaf 211, back.⁶ there om. U.⁷ yorke his chaunceler U.⁸ byshoppis of lyncolne Bathe U.⁹ bylongede to theme U.

his bien venewe and welcom boom; and prayed hym of his high myghty grace, lordship and love to his Chambre.

And pen anon after Ester next folowyng,¹ the Kyng held his
4 parlement at Westminster; and it lasted till seint Jametyde þe
Appostell. and at þe begynnyng of the parlement, the Cardynall,
the Bisshop of Wynchestre, come ouer the see into England, and so
to London to þe Kyng, to excuse hym of the offence; and blames
8 þat were put vpon hym for thinges² doon in Fraunce, by the com-
pleynt of certeyn lordes; wherof he hath worthely excused hym to
the Kyng and to his consayle; and so he was³ fully excused, and
the parties at oon.

12 And also to this parlement come Frenssh lordes, bothe spirituall
and temporell and ambassatours of Spayne, and oper diuers lordes
of dyuers⁴ landes, to trete for peas and other certeyn maters. And
the xxvj. day of Juyn come the Dukes son of Bretayn ouer the
16 see into England, and so to London⁶ to the Kyng; and with hym
come a Bisshop of that lande, and certeyn knyghtes and Squyers
and theire meny.

20	Johannes Parneys, Maior.	Johannes Olney	} vicecomites anno xj ^o [A.D. 1432-3.]
		Johannes Paddesley	

And this⁷ same yere, the Lord Camoys,⁸ Sir Waltere Hunger-
ford son, went ouer the see into Normandy, with knyghtes,
24 squyers, men of arme; and archers, to the Nombre of xv^c. peple
and mo, by ordynauce of the Kyng and his Consayle of⁹ the
Reame, in strengthing and helpyng of the Duke of Bedford,
Regent in tho parties, and of all the Kynges liege peple, and for
28 keping of the Kynges title and right.

And in þis same yere the Kynges sonne of Naverne, with oper
dyuers peple with hym, come in ambassiatry to the Kyng and to¹⁰
his Consayle.

32 And in þis same yere the Kyng let intere the Duchesse¹¹ of
Bedford, which deyed in Fraunce, ¹²at Seint Paules in London,¹²
with moche royalte and solempnite as myght be doon in holy Chirche.

And in this same yere, anon after Cristmasse, þe Bisshop of
36 Acres in the land of Navern, come to the Kyng in ambassiatry.

¹ next folowyng om. U. ² thinges Tr. for thinges U. ³ is U.

⁴ and of other dyuers U. ⁵ leaf 212.

⁶ into þis lande ouer the see and so to london U. ⁷ in this U.

⁸ Cannys and U. ⁹ and of U. ¹⁰ to om. U.

¹¹ entre at saint paules in london the duchesse U. ¹²⁻¹² om. U.

And in pis same yere on Seint Wolstans day, Sir Robert Fitzhugh was stalled Bisshop of London in the see¹ of Seint Paules.

And in this same yere, anon after Cristmasse, the grete conuocation and consayle of all the landes² in Cristendom, and also of all 4
oper seculer lordes, and Clerkes,—*pat* is to say, Bisshoppes and other³ consayle began in the Cite of Basyle in Duchelande, for to make vnite and peas emong all Cristen peple, and for to destroye heretikes and erresye *pat* then reigned emong the peple.² 8

And in this same yere, anon after Ester,⁴ *pe* Archebisshop of Caunterbury and *oper*⁵ Bisshoppes *with* othere clergy, and the Duke of Gloucestre *with* *oper* lordez, knyghtes and squyers, went ouer the see to Caleys, for treti, and made *pere* a consayle⁶ *betwene*⁷ *pe* 12
Frenssh and *pe* Englissh. And *pider* come out of Fraunce *pe* Duke of Bedford, Regent, *with* many other Frenssh⁸ lordes, bothe spirituall and temporall; and also *pider* come *pe* Cardynall, *pe* 16
Bisshop of Wynchestre.

And in this same yere, the xxijth day of Aprell, the Erle of Huntynghton, *with* other dyuers lordes, knyghtes and⁹ squyers, *with*¹⁰ men of armes and archers, shipped at Hampton, and went ouer the see into¹¹ Normandy and so¹² to Fraunce, for to mayntene, 20
kepe and gouerne the right of oure Kyng and *pe* parties of Fraunce and Normandy.

And in this same yere, Herry Beauford, Cardynall, Bisshop of Wynchestre, come¹³ ouer the see into England, and so to London, 24
the xth day of Iuyn, to his Maner of Seint Mary Ouerey in Suthwerk.

And¹⁴ in this same yere was the Clipse in *pe* after-None, *pat* Asshewell *pe* white frere, and *oper* clerkes, spake of longe tyme 28
before; which all peple dowted and were sore aferd of, thurgh the speche of *pe* seid frere.¹⁵ And this clipse was the xvij.¹⁶
day of Iuyn.

And in this same yere come Iohn, Duke of Bedford, with his 32

¹ church U.

²⁻² of Cristiance of all ye spiritualte & temporalte and of all secular lordes and clerkis *pat* is to say Bisshoppis & other was holden & begonne in ye Cite of basile in Ducheland for to make peace & vnite betwix all cristen peple & for to destroye heretikes & heresie *pat* now reigneth amonge the peple U.

³ other which Tr. ⁴ Ester *om.* U. ⁵ *oper om.* U. ⁶ *leaf* 212, *back.*

⁷ to trete of peace and made a counsaill at Caleis betwene U.

⁸ grete U. ⁹ and *om.* U. ¹⁰ with *om.* U.

¹¹ to Caleis and so into U. ¹² so *om.* U. ¹³ come frome.

¹⁴ In U the next few lines down to *xix of June* are transposed.

¹⁵ *per* of *porugh* the freres speche. ¹⁶ *xix* U.

newe wedded wife, þe Erles doughter of Seintpoule; and they come from Fraunce ouer the see into England, and so come to London, the xxijth day of Iuyn, þat was Mydsomer Even. And 4 þe Mayre and aldermen, with many worthy comouns of London, brought theym from the Blak-Heth in Kent, and so to London into Fletestrete, vnto þe Bisshoppes Inne of Salesbury, with all honoure and reuerence.

8 John Brokley, Maior. Thomas Charlton } *vicecomites*
John Lynge *vicecomes* } Anno xij^o
[A.D. 1433-4.]

And in this same yere, and in the yere of grace M^t ccccxxxiiij^{ty}, þe viij. day of Iuyn, Iohn, Duke of Bedford, and his lady þe 12 Duchesse,¹ went ageyn² ouer þe see to Caleys, and so into Normandy and Fraunce, with a grete nombre of peple, in³ strengthing and mayntenynge of oure⁴ Kynges right in⁵ Fraunce and Normandy.

And in þis same yere was⁶ a grete pestilence in London, bothe 16 of men, women and childern; and namely of worthy men, as aldermen and oper worthi *communiers*; and also thurgh England þe peple deyed sore, bothe pore and riche,⁷ which was grete hevynesse to all peple.⁸

20 Robertus Otley, Maior. Thomas Bernewell } *vicecomites anno*
Symon Eyre } xiiij^o [A.D. 1434-5.]

And in this yere, and in þe yere of grace M^t. cccc. xxxv^{ty}, þe xxiijth day November, the grete and hard frost bygan; and it 24 endured vnto the fest of Candelmasse next, which distroyed þe olde peple, bothe men and women, and also yong childern. And also in that same tyme deyed many bay trees, and rosemary, Sage, tyme, and many oper herbes.

28 And in this same yere, Sir Herrye Beauford, Cardynall, Bisshop of Wynchestre, and Maister Iohn Kemp, Archebisshop of York, and the Erle of Huntynghon, with oper lordes, knyghtes, and Squyers, and Clergye, went ouer the see into Fraunce, to þe Cite 32 of Reynes, to trete for a fynall peas betwene England and Fraunce. Bot it was sone disquat, for þe grete highnesse, pride, and couetyse of þe Frenssh party. For oure Englissh peple abode there from Midsomer till it was nygh Michelmasse. And so they departed 36 from hem, and come ageyne into England in saufte, thanked be God!

¹ & the Duchesse his wife U. ² ageyn om. U. ³ in the U. ⁴ the U.

⁵ leaf 213. ⁶ þer was U. ⁷ both men women & children U.

⁸ Here closes U [=MS. Un. Libr. Camb. Hh. VI. 9].

And in this same yere, anon after these lordes comyng out of Fraunce from this trefy of peas, Iohn, Duk of Bedford, was seke, and deyed in the Roan in Normandy; and there he is buryed: vpon whos soule, God haue mercy! amen! 4

Henricus Frowyk, Maior. Robertus Clopton } *vicecomites anno*
Thomas Catworth } *xiiiij^o [A.D. 1435-6.]*

And in this same yere, and in the yere of *grace* M^t cccxxxvj^{ti}, Kyng Henre þe vjth held his parlement at Westmynster. And in 8 þis parlement was graunted a ¹disme for holy chirche, and a xvth thurghout the Reame, to mayntene þe Kynges werres and to deffende oure Enemyes. And also they graunted to þe Kyng in this parlement, of all peple, pore and riche, both of spirituall and 12 temporell, to pay of theire landes and rentes, and of all freheld þat they haue within this Reame of England, vj. d. of þe pound; and þis treuly to fecche and geddre, to help in þe Kynges nedes as at this tyme. 16

And anon, in the begynnynge of Lent next folowyng, þe King, with his conseyle, borrowed a somme of gold purghout þe Reame, of temporall peple, þat amounted a c. M^t marc of money, to sende his peple ouer the see; to kepe, mayntene, and gouerne his landes 20 byyonde the See: of which somme, the peple of London lent x M^t marc in olde and in newe, þat is to sey, .iiij. M^t v^c marc of olde, and .iiij. M^t v^c marc of newe prest. So these ij. sommes drawen x M^t marc and more, ouer the good peple of þe Cite of London, þat 24 is to sey, certeyn craftes found both men of armes and archers to Caleys, forto kepe the towne in saufigarde from oure enemys, þat is to say, the Duke of Burgoyne and his strenght. And also the Cite of London sent stuff to Caleys, as Gones, Gonnepouder, with 28 other commoditees for the werre, to kepe þat place sauf, to þe worship of oure Kyng and of þe Reame, and to þe welfare and profite of all England.

And this same yere, deyed .iiij. bisshoppes in England, þat is to 32 say, the Bisshop of Ely, the Bisshop of London, the Bisshop of Lincoln, and the Bisshop of Bangore, and oper mo prelatz of worthynesse and state, in dyuers partyes of the Reame of England.

And in this same yere, the Erle of Morteyner went ouer þe see 36 to Caleys with a grete peple of men of armes and archers, in þe Passion Weke, in the defence of oure Kyng, and to destroye oure enemys.

¹ Leaf 213, back.

And in this same yere, the iijth day of Maye, the Erle of Salesbury, and his broder the Lord Faukonberge, went ouer the see into Normandy with a fayre company of knyghtes and squyers,
4 *with* men of armes and archers, in defence of *þe* Kyng and of *þe* Reame of England, for to destroye oure enemys.

And in this same yere, in *þe* Moneth of Maye, the Duke of York and perle of Suffolk, *with* *oper* lordes, ¹knyghtes and squyers,
8 men of armes and archers, and all *oper* stuff and necessaryes *þat* *per*teyneth to werre, went ouer the see into Normandy and Fraunce, as lieftenaunt vnder the Kyng of England, forto gouerne and kepe *þe* landes of Fraunce and Normandy ageyns the Kynges
12 enemys, and in saluacion of the Kynges peple.

And in this same yere aboute Midsomer, the Duke of Burgoyne, *with* all his pusanee of peple, bothe of Fraunce and of Flaundres, and of *oper* dyuers contreys, come and byseged *þe* towne of Caleys,
16 and *þe* garrysons *þat* belongen *þerto*. And *þere* they destroyed both Mark and Oye, and of *þe* Kynges peple many oon. And *þey* come thider *with* so grete strenght and ordynaunce of werre, *þat* it was impossible any creatures to conquere theym, sauf *þe* grace of
20 God oonly; wherfore *þat* the Kyng of England, with his consayle, let ordeyn and send ouer *þe* see to Caleys, for *þe* Rescues therof, and for his peple lying *þere*, and for his right, his vncle *þe* Duke of Gloucestre, the Duke of Norfolk, *þe* Erle of Warwyk, and *þe* Erle
24 of Stafford, and *þe* Erle of Ewe, his broder, and *þe* Erle of Hunt-yngdon, and *þe* lord Fawnehope, Sir John Cornwayle knyght, and many *oper* lordes, knyghtes and Squyers, and many *oper* men of armes and archers, to *þe* nombre of Lx. M^t peple, *with* many
28 dyuers wepenys *þat* belongeth to batayle. And then come the Navy of Spayne, *with* *oper* dyuers shippes, which were grete vessels, and stronge and well-manned, and byseged *þe* towne of Caleys by water. Then come *þe* Erle of Devenshire *with* his
32 Nave out of the west costes, and *with* *oper* dyuers shippes of England well-manned; and they herd of his commyng, and they voided, and went their wey thens, and wold no lenger abide. And then the Erle of Morteyner and *þe* Lorde Camoys, *with* a certeyn
36 of their peple, issued oute of Caleys, and brake the sege *þat* the Duke of Burgoyne had ordeyned ayenst the towne of Caleys, and come to *þe* Bastyle of strength, and slewe *þe* most party *þat* were *þerin*, and destroyed moche peple, and toke his ordynaunce, and

the remenaunt fledde away. And this was doon ere the Duke of Gloucestre come ouer þe see to Caleys ¹with his Navye and people.

And after this, aboute our Lady Day þe assumption, the Duke of Gloucestre, the Duke of Norffolk, with Erles and lordes, with all ⁴theire oþer people and ordynaunces, come vnto Caleys forto rescue it, and forto destroye the sege; bot it was doon and ended ere they come, thanked be God of his grace! And þen þe Duke of Gloucestre, with all his peple, abode in Caleys till he had take his ⁸consayle what was best to doon. And þen he toke all his peple and went into Flaundres, and slowe and brent all þat they myht, and toke .ij. townes, Poperying and Bell. And anon whan this was doon, he comanded all his peple to turne ageyn to Caleys, vpon ¹²þeyn of deth, in all haste. And so þey taryed not longe there, bot come ageyn in all hast into England.

And in pis same yere, whils all this doying was at Caleys and in Flaundrez, the Kyng of Scottes come with an huge powere of peple ¹⁶and ordynaunce, and biseged þe towne of Berwik, and after, the Castell of Rokesburgh, and did moche harme pere as he come. And þen come þe Erle of Northumberland and þe Erle of Westmerland, with lordes and peple of the Cuntrees, and distroyed and ²⁰brake his seges; and he fledde with his peple, and turned ageyn into Scotland.

Johannes Mychell, Maior.	Thomas Mustum	{ Vicecomites Anno xv ^o 24 [A.D. 1436-7.]
	Willelmus Gregory	

And in this same yere, and the yere of grace M^r CCCC. xxxv^{ti} the grete, hard, bityng frost bygan the vij. day of Decembre, and endured vnto þe xxij. day of Feuerere next, which greved þe peple ²⁸wonder sore; and moche pepel deyed in þat tyme, for colde and for skarcite of wode and cole. And tender herbes were slayne with pis frost, þat is to say, Rosemary, sauge, tyme, and many oþer herbes. 32

And in pis same yere deyed good Quene Kateryn, þat was moder to Kyng Henre the Sext, and wife to Kyng Henre the .vth, the þursday þe .iiij. day of ²Ianuare, in þe Abbey of Bermondesey without Suthwerk, in þe counte of Surre. And the Friday, the ³⁶viiij. day of Feuerere next after, the body of the Quene was brought to Seint Kateryns beside the Toure, and so thurgh London to Seint Paules, with lordes and ladyes, and with the Maire and Aldermen,

¹ leaf 214, back.

² leaf 215.

and the Craftes in London and *with* all the religious peple, as chanons, prestys and freres; and there was a solempne dirige and masse on the morowe. And from thens she was brought to West-
4 mynstre, and pere was hir terement holden and doon rially; and pere buried in the Chapell of oure Lady, on whos soule, God haue mercy! Amen!

And in this same yere, duryng the hard frost, pe Monday the
8 xxiiij. of Ianuare, the gate of pe Cite at London Brigge ouer-threwe and fell down into Tamys to pe hard ground, and drewe the houses after hym, bothe *within* and *without*, to grete harm to pe Cite and to pe brigge.

12 And in this same yere, the walles of chirches, howses, and of Selers, *pat* were made of chalke, broke in many places, and fell in smale pecys to the grounde as dust.

And in this yere pe Kyng held his parlement at Westmynstre;
16 and it byganne at pe Fest of Seint Hillary, and ended at Ester next folowyng. And in pe begynnyng of Lent, tydynges come to pe Kyng and to the Reame, how *pat* pe Kyng of Scottes, Sir Iames Steward, was slayn at Seint Johnes Towne *with* treson, by a Squyer
20 of Scotland. And to this parlement come many *dyuers* straungers, somme of Aragon in Spayne, somme of Spruce, somme of Beam, and somme of Fraunce and Normandy. And pe Bisshop of Tyrwyn, *with* *dyuers* knyghtes and Squyers, come to this same
24 parlement.

And in this same yere, the ixth day of Iuyll, deyed Quene Iohan in the Maner of Haueryng-at-Bour in Essex, which was wife to Kyng Henry the iiijth; and from thens she was brought to
28 Caunterbury, and there is she buried: on whose soule, God haue mercy! Amen!

And in this yere, anon after Midsomer, the Lord Willoughby, and other lordes *with* hym, knyghtes and squyers, men of armes
32 and archers, were sent ouer the see into Fraunce, forto strenght, mayntene, and kepe the Kynges title and right *pat* he hadde in Fraunce and Normandy.

And in this same yere, at pe Natiuite of oure Lady Seint Mary,
36 pe Erle of Warwik was ordeyned ¹ and comaunded ouer the see into Fraunce and Norma[n]dy, forto be lieftenaunt and gouernour in the Kynges name, *with* strenght of all pe partyes and landes *pat* the King hath byyonde the see, as in Fraunce, Normandy, and

¹ leaf 215, back.

Gascoyne. And then the Duke of York come hoom ageyn, pat longe tyme had been there; and so the same tyme he toke his iourney *with* lordes, knyghtes and squyers, men of armes and archers, a royall and a worthy company, and toke *with* hym pe lady his wife, and the yonge Lord Spencer, his sonne and his heire, and shipped in Goddes name, and toke the see. And when they were forth in the see, there arose grete tempestes, stormes and wyndes; and then they stode in perill of deth; and so, as God wold, he was dryven ageyn into England costes, and were saved; and so, at Allhalowentyde next, the good Erle of Warwyk toke his shippyng ageyn, and passed ouer the see, and come *with* his peple to Roan in saufte, thanked be God!

12

Willelmus Estfeld, Maior.	Willelmus Hales	{ vicecomites anno xvj ^o [A.D. 1437-8.]
	Willelmus Chapman	

And in this same yere, and in the yere of grace M^t CCCC 16 xxxviij, a woman of Highgate, pat was a tayllours wife, lete sle hir husbond; and perfore she was Iuged to be brent at the Toure hill, pe Monday pe xxviijth day of Ianuare.

And in this same yere, on Esterday, a gardyner pat wonned at 20 Seint Mary at Nax in London, receued pe glorious sacrament oure Lordes body, and toke it oute of his mouth, and hidde it in a clowte, and wold haue brent it. And the parson took the sacrament, and receyued it reuerently, and brought it to pe high auter ageyn, and 24 sent pe gardyner to prison. And pe Bisshop of London and oper Bisshoppes and clergie sate vpon hym, and Iuged hym, for lollardry and erresye, to be brent in Smythfeld.

And in this same yere, the xiiij. day of Iuyn, .v. men of the 28 Cuntre of Tynderden in Kent, were founden and taken for heresyas and destroyers of the Kinges peple; and so they were brought to ¹ Maidston in Kent, and there Iuged to deth, to be drawe, hanged, quarterd, and theire hedes smytyn of.

32

And in this same yere, the Erle of Morteyn went ouer the see into Fraunce by the Kynges comaundment and consayle, forto strenght and kepe in the Kinges name certeyn partyes in Fraunce and Normandy, *with* knyghtes, squyers, men of armes and archers. 36

And all this yere duryng, was grete scarcite of corn; for a bussell whete was at xx d. and ijs., and in the last ende of the yere at xxvj d. pe bussell; and a bussell of rye was at xvj d. and

xviij d., and barly at x d. and xij d.; and then was right feble brede made for þe comon peple; and a galon of rede wyne at x d., and all oper swete wyne at xvj d., as Romney, Malvesyne, Clarry, Tyre; 4 and flessch and fyssh was longe tyme at an high price, which was grete charge to all the comons purghout þe Reame. And in all þe North Cuntre a busschel of whete was at x d. the most part of þe yere. And moche worthy peple deyed in the yere of pestilence, 8 and of oper *commune* peple of men, women and chilkern, thurghout þe Ream, and principally at York and in the North Cuntre; on whos soules God haue mercy! amen!

And in that same yere, in the Moneth of Iuyll, were made .vij. Sergeauntez of Lawe; and they held theire generall fest the day of the Translacion of Seint Thomas, in the Bisshoppes Inne of Ely in Holbourne.

16	Stephen Broun, Maior.	Hugo Dyke Nicholaus Yoo	}	<i>vicecomites</i> <i>anno xvij^o</i> [A.D. 1438–9].
----	-----------------------	----------------------------	---	--

And in this same yere, and the yere of *grace* M^t CCCC xxxix^{ti}, on Seint Clementes day, betwene .iiij. and .iiij. after None, per 20 fell such wedring of wynde and rayne, thondyr and lighntynge; and a grete smoke of the lighntynge, pat all peple were sore agast perof, for þe hydous noyse pat was herd in the Reame. And perwith an erthquake, pat shoke all the grounde.

24 And in this yere on Seint Georges Even, ¹the holy Martir, from .ij. after mydnyght vnto .v. of the clok in þe mornynge, per was so huge and so grevous wedryng of thundir and lighntynge, hale, wynde and Rayne, pat the peple were hugely agast and dred of it; 28 bot oure Lord God and his blessed Moder, oure Lady Seint Marye, saved and kept all his hande-werk at all tymes,—blessed myght He and she be! amen!

And in this same yere, on the Monday next after Trinite 32 Souday, the Erle of Huntingdon, with oper lordes, knyghtes and Squyers, men of armes and archers, went out of London toward the see for to gouerne and kepe the Cite of Burdeux, and also the Cuntreyes of Gascoyne and Guyan, to the profite of oure liege Lorde 36 the Kyng, and to the welfare of the Reame of England.

And in this same yere deyed Sir Richard Beauchamp, Erle of Warwyk, in Normandy; and his bonys were brought into England,

¹ leaf 216, back.

and buried at the towne of Warwik: on whos soule, God haue mercy! amen!

And in this same yere, the .v. day of Iuyn, the Erle of Stafford, *with* lordes, knyghtes, squyers, men of armes and archers, 4 in good aray, went ouer the see to Caleys, for tretice betwene England and Fraunce. And *within* .ij. dayes after, went ouer the see to Caleys, the Archebisshop of York, *pe* Bisshop of Norwiche, and the Bisshop of Seint Daui, *with* a grete meyne of clerkes, and 8 moche *oper* peple *with* theym, in good arraye, to Caleis, to this same tretice. And the Friday next after that, went the Cardinall, the Bisshop of Wynchestre, *with* a grete multitude of peple, ouer the see to Caleys, to the same tretice. And the Seturday next, 12 went out of the Cite of London toward Caleis, to that same tretice, the Duke of Norfolk, *with* *oper* grete lordes, knyghtes and squyers, and moche *oper* peple *with* hym, in good arraye; And Sir Richard Wodevyle, knyght, and Sir Roger Chamberlayn, knyght; and 16 many *oper* worthy states of knyghtes and Squyers, *with* men of armes and archers, went ouer the see into Normandy, to kepe the Kynges title and right. And pere *pe* Cardynall and these Bisshoppes, and the Duke of Norfolk, abode *pere*, and treted *with* 20 the Frenssh party vnto *pe* terme of Michelmasse ¹ next folowyng.

And in all this yere, all greynes of corne were at an high price; for whete was at xxxij d., barly at xvj d., and rye at ijs., vnto the terme of Michelmasse next; and then was whete at xvij d., barly 24 at xd., and Rye at xiiij d.

Robertus Large, Maior.	Robertus Marchall	{ <i>vicecomites</i> <i>anno</i> xvij ^o [A.D. 1439-40]. 28
	Philippus Malpas	

And in this same yere, and in the yere of *grace* M^t CCCC xl., a *seruaunt* *pat* was with a man of Hakney, .ij. myle from London, come *with* his mayster to London, and bought vitayle and must for deynte, forto sende hoom to his wife, for she was grete *with* childe. 32 And the fals creature, when he come hoom, slewe *pe* wife and the child *within* her, and an *oper* damysell and a *noper* yong felawe *pat* was *within* his hous, and robbed theym of all their Iewels and tresoure *pat* they hadde *within* theym. And so he fledde, and wold 36 haue goon his weye; but God wold not so; for murdour woll com oute; and so he was take and brought to London, and so to Westminster; and pere he had his dome, to be brought to *pe* Toure of

¹ leaf 217.

London, and pere leide on a hirdell, and drawen thurgh the Cite to Tyburn, and pere hanged for his falskede.

And anon after in this same yere, pe Cardynall and oper
4 Bishoppes, and the Duke of Norffolk, with all oper lordes, bothe spirituall and temporall, had ended theire trete, and made a trewes betwene England and Fraunce and Flaundres for iij. yere; and thus was this matere ended.

8 And in this same yere, Pope Eugeny, of the high grace and gifte of God, and of his grete avise and gouernance, conuerted and brought all the land of Grece, and oper provynces and kyngdoms, into Cristen lawe and feith, and to hold the lawe and feith of Rome
12 and of the Pope, as we doon at all tymes.

And in this same yere, on the morne after Seint Martyns Day, Kyng Henry the Sext held his parlement at Westminster, ¹ and it endured there vnto Cristmasse next, and myght not acorde. And
16 the morowe after xij. day, the Kyng and his lordes removed it to pe towne of Redyng; and pere the parlement was holden and ended, to the welfare of the King and of the Reame, as we trust and hope in oure Lord God, in tyme comyng.

20 And in this same yere, aboute Cristmasse, went the Erle of Somersett ouer the see into Fraunce and Normandy, with a roiall peple of lordes, knyghtes, Squyers, men of armes and archers, forto gouerne there pe Kynges peple and landes, and to strenght the
24 lordes and theire peple pat hadde been pere long tyme, sayyng and mayntenynge the Kynges right and title.

And in pis same yere, the Duchesse of Clarence deyed in the Abbey of Bermondesey without Suthwerk in Surre. And sho was
28 caried to Caunterbury, and buried beside the Lord Thomas hir husbond, which was Duke of Clarence, on whos soule, God haue mercy! amen!

And in this same yer deyed the Countesse of Warwik, and is
32 buried beside hir lord, Sir Richard Beauchamp, Erle of Warwik: on whos soules, God haue mercy! amen!

And this same yere, in the tyme of Lent, come .vj. persones with theire shippes from byyonde the see, with dyuers fyssh forto
36 vitayle the Cite of London. And when they were delyuerd, and goyng homward, per come a company of fals men, and pursued theym in a barge, and come vpon theym in the nyght, as pey were aslepe in theire vesseles and rode by anker in Tamys, and slewe all

¹ leaf 217, back.

pat were there in the shippes, and cutte peir throtes and cast theym in the water, and after drowned theire shippes,—and the shippes sank in the water,—for no man shuld espye theire falsnesse. And so, *within* a while after, two of these theves were take and dampned, for theire trespasse, pat they brake the Kynges trewes and peas, to be ledde to Seint Katerins byyonde the Toure of London, and pere a payre of Galowes to be sett vp, and hanged *with* cheynes and colers of Iron, till they be wasted and spent. 8 And this was doon on a Friday, in the mornynge, pe xixth day of Aprell.

And in pis same yere, ¹a fuller of Shordiche apeched of treson many worthy men of Kent, bothe Squiers, and oper worthy men of 12 gentelmen; wherof he was atteint, and proved fals of his fals apechement; And so he was brought afore the lawe, and dampned to be drawe and hanged, and his hede smytyn of, and sett on London Brigge, and his quarters set on .iiij. gates of London: and 16 this was doon the iiijth day of Maye.

And in this same yere, Sir Richard Wyche, vicar of Hermondesworth in *Middlesex*, pat somtyme was vicar of Depford in Kent; and oon Roger Norman, of Normandy born, was take and brought 20 before the Bisshop of London, and tofore the clergie, in the Chapitre hous of Seint Paules; and there they bothe were conuicte in heresy. And then there come a writte from the Chaunceller to the Maire and Shirrefs of London, to do execucion on theym; and 24 so they were brought to the Towre Hill on Seint Botulphes Day, and pere brent, bothe in oon tonne; and thus they ended theire lives in this world. And pe peple pat sawe theym dye, had grete compassion on theym, for the confession and ende pat they made 28 in theire good byleve, and thanked God of his soude.

And in this same yere, the xij. day of August, *per* fell such wederyng of rayn, thunder and lightnyng in pe after None, pat it was hydous, and wonder to se; wherof the peple were sore agast; 32 for the lightnyng fell in Bredstrete, on pe Inne pat is called the Sterre; and there it did moche harme, for it fell in a hey hous where *per* was .L. cartfull of heye, and more; and it was all lost and distroyed, and was caried into Chepe; and had not been the 36 high mercy and grace of God, and the grete Rayn, the peple dred it shuld haue brent moche of the Cite and destroyed moche good in that partye.

Johannes Paddesle, Maior.	Willelmus Whetenhale	{ vicecomites anno xix ^o [A. D. 1440-1.]
	Johannes Sutton	

4 And in this yere, and the yere of grace M^t CCCC xlj, the iiijth
day of Nouembre, the Duke of Orliaunce went out of the Reame of
England to Caleys, and so forth into Fraunce, and was receyued at
Seint Omers of pe Duke ¹ of Burgoyne and of the Duchesse his
8 wife, and of many oper lordes, knyghtes and squyers, and of oper
comons of Fraunce; and so he come into his owne lordship.

And in this yere, the xxvj. day of Nouembre, a knyght of
Spayne chalenged Sir Richard Wodvyle, knyght, in certeyn poyntes
12 and courses of werre, on foote, *within listes, with polaxe, swerd and
dagger.* And thys feet was doon in Smythfeld betwene these two
knyghtes well and worthely, and bothe good men and worthy in
their dedys of armes. And so the Kyng, of his roiall mageste,
16 cryed 'hoo,' and toke their quarell into his *gracious* handes.

And in this same yere, the xvjth day of Maye, the Duke of
York, the Erle of Oxenford, the Erle of Ewe, Sir Richard Wodvyle,
knyght, *with oper* Barons, lordes, knyghtes and squyers, men of
20 armes and archers, went ouer the See *with all good aray, as armoure
and all oper stuff pat* belongeth to werre, to gouerne and kepe the
Kynges right in Fraunce and Normandy, and in all Cuntrees in
those partyes, to the worship and profite of the Kyng and of the
24 Reame of England. And with theym went ouer the see the
Duchesse of York, the Duchesse of Bedford, the Countesse of Oxen-
ford, the Countesse of Ewe, and many oper mo ladyes *with their
lordes, and other gentelwomen and damysels pat* bilonged to theym :
28 Almyghty God gouerne theym all, and kepe in his saufgard !
Amen !

And in this same yere, the xvth day of Iuyll, Kyng Henry the
vjth come oute of Essex to London, in at the port called Algate,
32 and went ouer London Brigge, and so thurgh Suthwerk to his
Maner of Kenyngton. And at his comyng in at Algate, the Maire,
Aldermen and Comons, in their best aray, welcomed the Kyng
into the Cite; and made grete Ioye of his comyng. And godely
36 the Kyng thanked the Maire and his brethern and all the Comons.
And the Kyng was not so sone passed the Cite, bot *pat it* hayled,
rayned and eke lightned, *pat well was hym pat was within house;*
and so ayenst even it fared in the same Maner, wherof the peple

¹ leaf 218, back.

were sore agast, and aferd of the grete tempest. And so it was spoken emonges the peple, *pat per* were som wikked fendes and spirites arered out of helle by coniuracion, forto noy *pe* peple in the Reame, and to put theym to trouble, discencion ¹and vnrest. An 4
pen was it knowen *pat* certeyn clerkes, and women *pat* ar called 'wicches,' had made theire operacion and theire craft to destroy men and women, or whom they list, vnto deth by theire fals craft and worching. Wherof Dame Alianore Cobham, which was *pe* 8
 Duchesse of Gloucestre, was named principally of these actes and fals dedes forto destroy the Kyng, whom God saue and kepe! Bot as God wold saue his hande-werk and *seruaunt*, made it be knowen openly, all theire fals werkys and tresoun *pat* they ymagyned and 12
 wroght, which was openly shewed afore all peple *pat* wold com to Seint Paules Crosse on the Sonday, the xxiiij. day of Iuyll, by Roger *pat* was hir Clerk, a Nigromancier, by the deuels crafte and ymaginacion in his worching, which was shewed openly in *pe* 16
sermon-tyme, the day aboueseyd, to all peple *pat* wold come to se it, of here scriptures, ymages of siluer, of wexe, and of oper metalles, and swerdys, *with* many oper dyuers instrumentes of this fals craft of Nigromancy and the deuels powere. And pere Roger, this 20
 Clerk, stode vpon an high stage, *with* all his Instrumentes about hym, spoyling of his garment; and did vpon hym a surplyce, *with* a crowne of papir vpon his hede, forto forsake all his fals craft of the devell, and for to relapse all *pat* he had doon and wrought by 24
 the devyll and his powere, in presence of the Archebisshop of Canterbury, the Cardynall, *pe* Bisshop of Wynchestre, *pe* Bisshop of London, the Bisshop of Salesbury, and many oper grete clerkys beyng there present; and of oper lordes temporalles, therle of 28
 Huntingdon, therle of Northhumberland, and therle of Stafford, and moo oper lordes of the Kynges Consayl, and the Maire and Aldermen, *with* *pe* Comons of the Cite of London, and many moo people of dyuers partyes, and straungers of the Reame, and aliens 32
 of oper straunge landes beyond the see, beyng in *pe* ²Cite of London *pat* tyme.

And on *pe* Tewesday, which was Seint James Day *pe* Apostell, Dame Alianore Cobham come out of the seintwary at Westminster 36
 into the Kinges Chapell which is within the Kinges paleys, to the high autere of the same Chapell, which is of Seint Stephen, before the principall clergy of the Reame which were pere present, *pat* is

¹ leaf 219.² leaf 219, back.

to sey, the Archebisshop of Caunterbury, *primate* of all England, the Cardynal of Wynchestre, the Cardynal of York, the Bisshops of London, Bathe, and Salesbury, and of other many *principall*
4 Clerkes of the Reame which were there *present*, and examyned Dame Alianore Cobham of xxviij. *dyuers* poyntes, bothe of felony and of treson, which *pey* opened and shewed there to hir. And she ansuered to the Clergye, and sayde ‘not gilty’; and so they let
8 hir go sauth ageyn to the Seintwary vnto the morowe, pat was Seint Anne day. And thider she come ageyn as she was charged of the Bisshops; and there was Roger hir Clerk, present, and vouched all these poyntes vpon hir pat were shewed the day aboueseyd to hir,
12 wherof she knowleched *somme* poyntes at that tyme, the nombre of .v.,—and so she went ageyn into Westmynstre for a certeyn tyme tyll pat the Kyng, with his Consayll, wold do correccion and remedy of all this fals actys and dedys, thus ymagyned and doon
16 to his persone, and his lordes and lieges.

And on *pe* same day the Kyng sent to London to the Maire and Aldermen and Comons of the Cite, and also to therle of Huntingdon, *pe* Erle of Stafford, therle of Northumberland, the
20 Tresorer of England, Sir Rauf Cromwell, the Lord Fawnehop, Sir Iohn Cornwayle, Sir Walter Hungerford, and *oper* knyghtes and Squyers, to fele and see what was to be doon to amende and destroy this fals dede and cursed ymagynacion to the Kyng and to *pe*
24 Reame. And they, of their good discrecion and wysedom, as trewe liege peple ordeyned .iiij. enquestes within the Cite, of substantiall peple; to brynge and shewe trewe inquisicion of all crymes and trespasses pat she was accused of. And they found hir
28 gilty bothe ¹of treson and of felony; and so, thurghout Middelsex, the questes were charged at Westminster of knyghtes and Squyers, to brynge in their *verdite*; and they indited her in the same poyntes, bothe of felony and of treson. And so, the .xj. day of
32 August, Dame Alianore was take into the handes and ward of Sir Iohn Steward and Sir William Wolff, knyghtes, and to *oper* persones as the Kyng and his consayle ordeyned and devised to her, and to *oper* of hir consayle and affinite, as they haue deserued,
36 after his tyme and leyser; and she to be kept in holde strongly in the Castell of Ledes in Kent, vnto *pe* wille of the Kyng and of his Consayle, and all *pe* *oper* persones, bothe men, women wicches, and *oper*, to be kept in the Toure of London to his likyng, leyser, and

¹ leaf 220.

tym to do to theym as they haue deserued. And so, the .xix. day of Octobre next, by the Kynges comaundment, and his Consayl, Sir Iohn Steward, knyght, *with* strenght of peple, brought Dame Alianore Cobham from the Castell of Ledes to Westminster, into 4 the Kynges paleys; and there she was put and kept in warde of pe Constable vnto hir answeere and examynacion. And the Friday next she was brought into Seint Stephens Chapell, called 'the Kynges chapell,' and 'the Kynges college,' afore the Clergye; and 8 pere was examyned of hir sorcery, and wiccheecraft and treson. And so all the poyntes were opened and shewed there to hir by certeyn Bisshops and clerkys, *pat* is to sey: the Bisshop of London, pe Bisshop of Lincoln, the Bisshop of Salesbury, and the Bisshop 12 of Norwiche, *with* moo oper doctours and maysters of diuinite, beyng pere present. And then she *with*neyed and *with*seyd all the poyntes; *pat* were put and shewed to hir *pat* tyme. And than she had respite and day of ansuere till the Monday next. And pere 16 she come ageyn to the same chapell, tofore all the Clergye and Bisshops and doctours, and maystres of diuinite. And then come Roger, hir Clerk, *with* all his Instrumentes *pat* were shewed at Seint Paules Crosse aforetyme, and they were shewed to Dame 20 Alianore Cobham; and she *with*neyed, and seyde 'it was not so; bot *pat* she did it forto haue borne a child ¹ by hir lord, the Duke of Gloucestre,' and pere was Maister Thomas Suthwell, parson of Seint Stephens in Walbroke, and Chanon of pe Kynges Chapell, 24 *pat* was of hir craft and consayle ayenst hir; and the wicche of Eye, beside Westminster, ayenst Dame Alianore Cobham; and seide *pat* she was causer and doer of all this werk and dede; And so they were all put vp ageyn as for that tyme. And the xxvjth day 28 of Octobre next suyng, deyed the seide Maister Thomas Suthwell, in the Toure of London. And the Friday next, the wicche of Eye was brought from the Towre of London into Smythfeld, and there brent for hir fals beleve and wiccheecraft *pat* she had vsed of longe 32 tyme.

Robertus Clopton, Maior.	Willelmus Combes	} vicecomites anno xx ^o [A.D. 1441-42.] 36
	Ricardus Riche	

And in this same yere, and the yere of grace M^cCCCC xliij., the vj. day of Novembre, the Archbisshop of Canterbury and the .ij. Cardynalles of Wynchestre and of York, and pe Bisshops of

¹ leaf 220, back.

London, Lincoln, Salesbury and Norwiche, with dyuers doctors
and maistres of diuinite, deuorsed and departed the Duke of
Gloucestre and Dame Alianore Cobham, as for matrimony made
4 before betwene theym two. And so Dam Alianore Cobham, by
ordynaunce and charge of the Archebisshop of Canterbury and his
brethern, was Joyned to hir penance for þe grete offence and
trespasse þat she had doon ayenst God and holy Chirche, and for
8 the fals sorcery and wiccheecraft þat she vsed and longe tyme had
wrought, þat she shuld go from Westminster to London .iiij.
market dayes in the weke, Monday, Wednesday, and Friday, with
a taper brennyng in her hande: oon to Saint Paules, an other to
12 Cristchirch, and þe thridde to Saint Michelles in Cornhill. And
the Monday, the xiiijth day of Nouembre, Dame Alianore Cobham
come by water from Westminster to the Temple brigge, forto do hir
charge of penance, on fote thurgh Fletestrete ¹ to Saint Paules;
16 and pere she offred hir first taper. And the Wednesday next she
come from Westminster by Water to the Swanne in Tamystrete,
and come on fote with a taper in hir hande, and come vp Tamystrete
to Saint Magnus corner, and vp Briggestrete, and Eschepe and
20 Graschirch, and so to the Corner of Leden-Hall, and so to Crist-
chirch; and there offred the secund taper. And the Friday next,
she come from Westminster by water to the Quene-Hithe, and so
vp purgh Bredstrete into Chepe; and thurgh Chepe into Cornhill,
24 to Saint Michelles chirch, and pere offred a taper of a pound waxe;
And then was she brought ageyn to Westminster, into the Constable
ward.

And the Seturday next, þe xvij. day of Nouembre, Roger
28 Bultynbrok, Dame Alianore Cobhams Clerk of Nigromancy and
sorcery, was brought to the Guyldhall of London, and pere dampned
for his fals treson, and for his fals tresoun, and sorcery and
Nigromancy ayenst all holy Chirch; wherthurgh he was dampned
32 to deth by landes lawe. And he was ledde to the Toure of London,
and leyd vpon a hirdell, and drawen thurgh the Cite to Tybourne
galowes, and pere hanged, and let downe ageyne all quyk, and his
bowelles cutte out of his body, and brent afore hym. And then was
36 his hede smyten of, and his body quartered; and oon sent to
Oxenford, the secund sent to Cambrigge, the thridde to Bristowe,
and the fourth to []²; and his hede was set vpon London
Brigge: and þus he ended his life in pis world.

¹ leaf 221.

² Blank space left in MS.

And Dame Alianore Cobham yet kept in warde in þe Constablers of Westminster, vnto the Wednesday, the xxiiij. day of Ianuare; and then she was brought thens to þe Maner of Neyte, which is the Abbotes of Westminster; and þere she was kept 4 Wednesday, Thursday, and Friday till noon. And when she was brought first out of Westminster, þere was such wedryng of thonder, lightnyng, hayll and rayne, þat the peple were sore adredde and agast of the grete noyse and hydous of þe weder, ¹ þat sodenly was 8 doon and shewed þere at their passage at þat tyme. And on the Friday at after-None, she was had at the Kynges comaundment and wille, forth to the Cite of Chestre, in an hors-bere, with strenght of peple; and fro Chestre into þe Ile of Man, to be kept þere in sauf 12 gard, etc.

And in this same yere was a batell doon, the xxxth of Ianuare, in Smythfeld, betwene .ij. worthy men, and bold in armes and fight: þat oon men called Sir Philipe Beef, a knyght of Cateloyne; 16 and on þat oþer party, a Squyere of þe Kynges of England, þat men called Iohn Astley. And at þe comyng to þe feld, eyþer of theym toke their tent; and then was þe knyghtes son of Cateloyne brought to the Kyng, and the Kyng made hym knyght; and then he was 20 brought ageyn to his faders tent. And then, within a while after, the heraudes of armes called theym bothe oute, to do their fight; and so þey come in bothe armed with all their wepen about theym; bot the knyght come with his swerd drawe, and the Squyere with 24 his spere. And the Squyer cast his spere to þe knyght; and the knyght avoyded it with the swerd, and cast it to the ground; and the Squyer hent his axe, and went to the knyght at onys, and smote many strokes hard and sore vpon his Basenet and on his 28 hande, and made hym lese his axe. And it fell from hym to þe grounde, and brast vp his vmbriere .iiij. tymes, and kaught his daggere, and wold haue smyten hym in the face forto haue slayne hym in the feld. And then the Kyng cryed 'hoo!' and so they 32 were departed; and eyþer of theym went hoom ageyn to his tent. And then the Kyng sent for his squyere Iohn Astley, and made hym to be dubbed knyght, for his worthy and good Iourney þat he did and wrought at þat tyme on his enemy in his noble presence, 36 etc.

And in this same yere, the xviiith day of Maye, began a huge storme of sodeyn wederyng, anon after .iiij. of þe klok at after-None,

¹ leaf 221, back.

vnto .vj. of the klok, of hayle, rayne, thundre and lightnyng, pat the peple wondred *pervpon*. And pe hayle bete down all the blossomes of trees, pat the frute was all goon for this yere, at
4 London and aboute London, for pe multitude of watere ¹ pat come of pe hayle and rayne.

And in this yere, the xxv day of Maye, the Lord Talbot toke his iourney fro London toward Normandy and Fraunce, for to help
8 to gouerne and kepe vnder the Duke of York, the parties byyond the see, *with* knyghtes, Squyers, men of armes and archers, and all maner stuff pat longed to werre : which, Almyghty God gouerne, save, and kepe, and all pe Kynges trewe peple, bothe in that party
12 and in oures ! And er he toke his iourney out of this lande, pe Kyng made the Lord Talbot, Erle of Shrovesbury, and his son and heire Lord Talbot.

16 Johannes Atherley, Maior. Thomas Beaumont { *vicecomites*
Ricardus Nordon { *anno xxj^o*
[A.D. 1442-43.]

And in this same yere, and the yere of grace M^t CCCC xliij., pe Tewesday the xliij. day of Maye, oon Botiler Steynour, and a
20 Baker, and two *oper* men and a preest, which were strong, errant theves, robberyng and quellyng the Kynges peple, were dampned at Westminster to be ledde in a Cart standyng vpright from the Kynges Benche in Suthwerk, and so thurgh the Cite of London,
24 tyll they come to Tyburn, and there to be hanged. And so they deyed, all .v. persones ; and at the comyng of pem into the Cart, pere fell suche wedryng from the skye, pat folke were sore adredde and agast, it was so horrible and grete, what of rayne, thondere and
28 lightnyng and hayll, in their passage to pe deth. And on the Tewesday next suyng, two strong theves, and a woman thefe, were hanged at Tyborn for their fals offences and trespasses, and murtheryng of the Kynges peple.

32 And in this same yere, pe Monday next folowyng, the woman of Kent pat met *with* the Kyng at pe Blak-Heth in Kent, and spake to hym boldly, and reviled hym vngoodly and vnwisely for Dame Alianore Cobham, pat he shuld haue hir hoom ageyn to hir
36 husbond, the Duke of Gloucestre. And *with* these wordes the Kyng waxe wroth, and toke it to hert ; and ² she was arested and brought into prison by the lawe, and so brought to Westminster afore the Iusticez of the Kynges Benche. And pere she was reprevd

¹ leaf 222.

² leaf 222, back.

for hir vngoodly langage, and fole-hardynesse to speke so to hir liege lorde, the Kyng. And she ansuered not, bot asked the Kynges grace. And fro pat day she was put vp ageyn in the Kynges Benche till Wednesday next, and then was brought ageyn 4 to Westminster afore the Iustices. And when she was examyned, she wold not speke ne ansuere; and perfore pe Iustices gafe hir dome, pat she shuld stand in a cart vpright, from the Kynges Benche, and so thurgh London, pat all peple myght se hir, with a 8 paupire about hir hede, of hir proude and lewed langage pat she had spoke and shewed to pe Kyng. And so she was caryed ageyn purgh London and Suthwerk, in pe same Cart, tyll she come to pe Blak-Heth pere as she seide these wordes vnto pe King; and then 12 was caryed ageyn to Suthwerk, and delyuerd ageyn to pe keepers of pe Kynges Benche, for to haue hir Iugement as pe Iuge had ordeyned it for her offence, forto lay as moche yron vpon hir body till she be deed: and thus she ended in this world, for hir proude 16 langage to hir Kyng and souerayn lord.

And in this yere the Kyng made the Erle of Somerset, Markes Dorsett, and ordeyned hym with a grete Navy of peple, of lordes, knyghtes, Squyers, men of armes and archers; with all maner stuff 20 of werre, forto gouerne, kepe and mayntene his landes in Fraunce, Normandy, and Guyan. And he abode longe tyme after in England, vpon the coostes, to abide for shipping and peple pat were not come to hym. And so, the xxj. day of Iuyll, he toke his 24 shipping ouer the see into Fraunce and Normandy, with his Retenew in good aray and in good spede, purgh the grace of God and his Moder, oure Lady Seint Mary, and by the comfort of Seint George. And in this yere, the vj. day of August, Gyles, the Dukes 28 broder of Bretayn, come to London, and so to pe Kyng, as for his souerayn lord and best beloued frende, forto play and sporte hym here in this lande, for a tyme, ¹and bysought pe Kyng of his grace and good lordship at all tymes. And so he and his were loeged at 32 the Crowne in Fanchirch Strete, for the tyme of his abidyng here, and of the Kynges grace and gode wille.

Thomas Catworth, Maior.	Nicholaus Wyfold	{	vicecomites	36
	Johannes Norman		anno xxij ^{do}	
			[A.D. 1443-44.]	

And in this same yere, and the yere of grace M^t CCCC xliij^{ti}, anon after Ester, the Duke of Somerset come out of Fraunce and

¹ leaf 223.

Normandy into England, and deyed at a Maner of his owne in the west cuntre: vpon whos soule, God haue mercy! amen!

And in pis same yere, on the Wednesday in the Whitson weke, 4 þe Kyng made the Erle of Huntynghdon, Duke of Excestre, in the Castell of Wyndesore; and in the fest of the Exaltacion of the Holy Crosse next folowyng, the Kyng made the Erle of Stafford, Duke of Bokyngham, and the Erle of Suffolk, Markeys of Suffolk 8 and of Norffolk.

And in this same yere, the ambassiatours come out of Fraunce, and *oper parties* byyonde the see, vnto the Kyng, for a mariage for hym, which was a worthy Kynges doughter, þat is called 12 Kyng of Cisile and of Ierusalem. And then the Kyng sent his ambassiatours ouer the see, which was þe Markes of Suffolk, with *oper lordes*, Clerkys, knyghtes and Squiers, out of England, to knowe of this worthy mariage, and forto make a finall peas betwene 16 the Reames of England and Fraunce.

And in this yere, the xxijth day of August, Iohn Kerver of Redyng, gentleman, vntruely and vngoodly, and ayenst feith and lawe, depraued the Kyng; wherfore he was take and brought 20 before þe Kynges Consayle, and pere examyned of his vngodely speche and wordes. And he ansuered, and knowleched hym guilty; wherfore the Kynges Consayle Jugeð hym to deth as a traytour. And this was his full dome: þat he shuld be ledde ageyn to the 24 towne of Redyng, and drawen and hanged, and let downe ageyn all quyke, and then brought ageyn to þe Cite of London, to þe Toure, and from ¹thens drawen to Tyborn galowes, and hanged, and let downe ayen all quyke, and then bowayled and quartered, and his 28 bowayls brent, and þen his hede smyt of, and set on London Brigge; and oon *quartere* to be set vp at Redyng, and the *oper* in dyuers townes in þe Reame. And then the Kyng, of his grete grace and mercy, sent in all haste his Charter of pardon of his 32 offence and trespasse þat he had doon ayenst his persone, and so delyuerd hym quyte, and sent hym to Redyng in sauf garde.

And then the xxv. day of Maye next suyng, þe Kyng of Cisyll and of Ierusalem, with the Quene his wife, brought with theym 36 Dame Margaret their doughter, to þe Cite of Toures in Turyn, in Fraunce, and pere met the Kyng of Fraunce and the Quene his wife. And the Kyng of Fraunce toke the Kyng of Cisyll and of Ierusalem by the hande; and so they yede forth togeder; and the

¹ leaf 223, back.

Quene of Fraunce toke the Quene of Cisill and of Ierusalem by the
 hande, and so they yede forth togeder thurgh the Cite till they
 come to the chief Chirch of þe Cite of Tours in Tureyn. And then
 come this Dame Margarete as for Quene of England, and ledde 4
 betwene the Dolphyn of Fraunce and an-*oper* grete Prince of
 Fraunce; and they ledde Dame Margaret to þe chief Chirche,
 which is of Seynt Martyn, *with* .vij. dukes and .xiiij. Erles, *with*
oper grete lordes and ladyes folowing theym, into the same Chirche. 8
 And þen come þe Markeys of Suffolk, and all þe *oper* ambassatours
 of England. And *pere* Dame Margaret made suraunce to þe
 Markeis of Suffolk, and principally to the Kyng of England, and
 to all these ambassatours; and she was made *pere* Quene of England. 12
 And þe Markeis of Suffolk and þe *oper* ambassatours made surance
 to Dame Margaret, in presence of þe kynges and quenes, dukes,
 Erles, lordes and ladyes, and also in presence of a legate of Rome
 there beyng at þat tyme. And then the Dolphyn and the *oper* 16
 prince[s] ledde Dame Margerete, as Quene of England, to þe place
 þat was ordeyned for hyr worship at that tyme, and these kynges,
 and þese .ij. quenes folowyng theym, *with* all the dukes, Erles,
 lordes and ladyes, *with* þe ambassatours of England. And *pere* 20
 Quene Margarete was set in þe ¹ myddes of the halle, as principall
 of this fest, and ryally by hir oone, as Quene of England. And
 these .ij. *oper* quenes were at a table togedir vpon the right side
 of Quene Margarete. And lordes and ladyes were worthely served 24
 thurgh all the Court; and all þe peple of comons þat folowed theym
 had grete chere of mete and drynke; and they made ioye and
 myrth, and song (all with high voyce) Nowell! Nowell! Nowell!
 and peas, peas, peas be to vs! Amen! 28

Henricus Frowyk, Maior.

Stephanus Forster { *vicecomites*
 Hugo Wyche. { *anno xxiiij^{cio}*
 [A.D. 1444-45.]

And in this same yere, and the yere of *grace* M^t.CCCC. xlv., 32
 þe vjth day of Nouembre, whan all maner stuff of ordynaunce was
 made and doon for the Quenes comyng into England, þat is to sey,
 mete, hors, harnesse, chares, *with* all stuff þat belonged to theym,—
 and þen þe Markeis of Suffolk and þe lady his wife, *with* *oper* 36
 ladyes and gentelwomen, lordes, knyghtes and squyers, and all *oper*
seruitours þat bylonged to theym, and to þe ordynaunce, for oure
 Kynges honure and worship went out of London to þe see-costes,

for to shippe theym and all theire ordynaunces, for to mete *with*
Quene Margaret and *with* hir company, beyng in Fraunce, and
condite hir into England in sauf gard to hir lord, Kyng Henry of
4 England and Fraunce, by the gift and grace of oure Lord Ihesu
Crist. Amen!

And in this yere, the first day of Februare, was grete wedryng
of wynde, hayle, snowe, rayne, thunder and lightnyng, at the after-
8 None; and it endured .iiij. oures; and it did grete harme to þe Cite
of London, for it brent Seint Paules grete steeple, bothe on þe west
syde and on þe south syde. And þe peple espied þe fyre, and come
to Seint Paules for to quenche the fyre in þe steeple. And goodly
12 they laboured, and quenched þe fyre as ferre as they kouth serche
and fynde. And it was quenched *with* vyneger. And so the
Maire herd of this grete hurte, and come *with* grete peple to Seint
Paules, to here and se how it stode there, and to help þem, if nede
16 had been. And þen þe peple *withdrowe* theym, and went hoom
ageyn, and trusted to God it had been in rest and peas.

And then anon after, betwene viij. and ix. of þe klok, þe fyre
brast ¹oute ageyn of the steeple, more feruent þen it did before, and
20 did moche harme to the lede and tymber of the steeple. And anon
come þe Mayre and moche peple, and *with* vynyger, and staunched
þe fyre þat was right fervent,—blessed be God of all his giftes!
Amen! And þen after, at the Ledenhall in Cornhill of London, a
24 standard of tre was set in myddys of the pavement fast in the
grounde, nayled *with* holme and Ive, for disport of Cristmasse to þe
peple of the Cite. And it was þat tyme torne vp and cast downe
with þe malign spirite, and the stones of the pavement all about
28 cast in þe strete to dyuers houses, so þat the peple were sore agast
of the grete fervent tempestes þat shewed that tyme.

And in this yere, the xviiijth day of Feuerere, þere was a bataylle
ordeyned in Smythfeld, and set to fight *within* lystes for life and
32 deth, betwene Thomas Fitz-Thomas, Pryoure of Kylmayn in
Ireland, which appeled Sir Iames Botillere, Erle of Ormond, of
treson þat he did in þe Cuntre of Ireland ayenst hym. And this
Prioure *withdrowe* hym, and come not to batayle, where thurgh, as
36 leude, he was convict. And the Erle of Ormond was redy in his
tent to ansuere hym; bot the Prioure come not.

And in this yere, the .xxij. day of Feuerere, the Kyng held
his parlement at Westminster, to Archbisshops, bisshops, abbotes

¹ leaf 224, back.

and Priours, and to dukes, Erles, lordes and Barons, knyghtes, squyers, and to Citezens, Burgeises, and comons. And this parlement endured vnto Palme-Sunday; and then it was adiourned by pe King, and his Consayle of his lordes of the parlement, vnto the fest of Seint George was passed. And then, the .xxixth day of Aprell, pe parlement bygan ageyn at Westminster with archbisshops and oper lordes, as is beforeseid.

And in this same yere, about Midlent, they brought Quene 8 Margaret out of high, douce Fraunce, into the partyes of Normandy by hir frendes; and the Frenssh partye was there as well as pe Englissh lordes, and abode hir with theire peple, with all worship and reuerence pat myght be doon in worship and reuerence of oure 12 Kyng. And so pey brought hir into the Cite of Roan in sauf garde; and pere she abode vnto pe fest of Estere and lenger, by .xiiij. dayes, with these lordes and ladys of England, pat is to say, the Duke of York, the Duchesse his wife, pe Markes of Suffolk, the 16 lady his wife, the Erle of Shrovesbury, pe Countesse his wife, with oper lordes and ladyes pat abode in Fraunce and Normandy, with knyghtes, squyers, men of armes and archers, pat abode pere to kepe 1 the Kynges right in all landes of the partyes in Fraunce and 20 Normandy.

And then, after hir restyng pere in pe Cite, she was conueyed to pe towne of Houndflete by lande, pere to haue shipping to com into England to hir lord pe Kyng, hir husband; and with hir come 24 the Markeys of Suffolk, with lordes and ladys, knyghtes, squyers, and gentelwomen, men of armes and archers, and oper peple, and brought Margarete sauf into the Reame of England. And she landed at pe towne of Hampton; and pere she was worthely 28 receyued of pe peple of Hampton and of pe peple of the Cuntre aboute, with all reuerence and worship pat they couthe do. And after, oure Kyng come, and met with Dame Margarete, the Quene, and brought hir to an abbey in pe newe Forest, pat men calle pe 32 abbey of []²; and there pe Kyng was wedded to Dame Margarete the Quene, with the Bisshop of Salesbury pat men called Maister William Ascu. And then the Kyng and his lordes departed from hir, and then met pe Cardinall of Wynchestre with 36 the Quene, and conueyed hir with all reuerence and honoure pat he kouth do, to a Maner of his; and there she abode all nyght with all hir peple. And there was doon grete chere, with chargeable

¹ leaf 225.² Blank space left in MS.

costes, to hir and to all the peple *pat* come *with* hir *pat* tyme, in reuerence and worship of *pe* Kyng. And so Quene Margaret was conveyed in the Cuntreyes of Sussexe and Surre till she come to *pe* 4 Archbisshop of Canterburyes Maner in Croydon, in Surre; and there she rested hir all nyght *with* grete worship and reuerence, and *with* all the chere *pat* myght be doon to hir persone as for *pat* tyme. And on *pe* morowe after, she went to *pe* Maner of Eltham; and 8 *pere* she restid her after hir grete iournay and *travayle* .viij. dayes, till she wold com to se the Cite of London.

And *pe* Friday, *pe* xxvjth day of Maye, the Mayre of London, *with* the aldermen and Shirrefs and comons of the Cite rode to *pe* 12 Blake-Heth in Kent; and *pere* they abode and hoved on horsbak vnto the Quenes comyng. And so they come *with* hir to London; and she was brought to *pe* Toure of London; and *pere* she rested hir all nyght. And *pere* the Kyng, at the reuerence of *pe* Quene, 16 and the first comyng, made .xlvj. Knyghtes of the Bath. And *pen* on *pe* morowen at after None, the Quene come from the Toure in a hors-bere, *with* .ij. stedes trapped all in white damask poudred *with* gold; and so was the vesture *pat* she had on; and *pe* pylowes 20 and all *pe* bere in oon sute; and hir here combed downe about hir shulders, *with* a coronall of gold, riche perles and precious stones, *with* all lordes on horsbak, and ladyes in chares, *pat* is to sey, xix. chares of ladyes and theire ¹gentelwomen, and all the craftes of the 24 Cite of London goyng on fote in theire best aray vnto Seint Paules. And by *pe* wey, as she come purgh *pe* Cite, there were shewed and made many devises and storyes, *with* angeles and *oper* heavenly thinges, *with* songe and melody in dyuers places; and *pe* 28 condites ran wyne, bothe white and rede, for all peple *pat* wold drynk. And then she was had oute of *pe* bere, and went on fote vp to *pe* high auter of Seint Paules; and *pere* she offred, and come oute ageyn to the bere at the west dore of Seint Paules; and so she 32 passed forth till she come to Westminster, *with* lordes and ladyes, and *with* the Maire and Aldermen and Comons of *pe* Cite of London. And there they toke theire leve, and went hoom ageyn.

And on *pe* morowe, *pat* was Sondag, *pe* .xxx. day of Maye, 36 was *pe* Coronacion and fest rially and worthely holden at Westminster in *pe* Kynges palays; and iij. dayes after, hold open Iustes and revell within *pe* seintwary, of lordes, knyghtes, and *oper* *pat* wold com at *pe* reuerence of this fest royal.

¹ leaf 225, back.

And in this yere, þe .xviij. day of Iuyll, come þe ambassatours of Fraunce to London, forto trete for peas betwene England and Fraunce, þat is to say, the Archbisshop of Reynes, þe Erle of Gudoam,¹ with oþer lordes, knyghtes, squyers and clerkes of 4 Fraunce, by the grace of God for a fynal peas.

Simon Eyre, Maior.

Johannes Derby { *vicecomites*
Galfrid Feldyng { anno xxiiij^{to}
[A.D. 1445-46.] 8

¹ ? MS. Gudoam, Eudoam, Endoam.

[G]

FROM THE CAPTURE OF ROUEN (1419) TO THE ACCESSION
OF EDWARD IV (1461).

[*Addit. MS., Brit. Mus. 10,099, leaf 181.*]

**How þe king of Englonð, Henry þe v^{te},¹ was made heritier
& Regent of Fraunce, & how he weddid Quene Katerine.
ca. ccxlv.²**

4 Anone³ after þat Rone was goten, Depe, & many other townes
in baas Normandie yafe þeme ouer *with-out* stroke or siege, when
þei vnderstode þat þe Kyng had goten Rone. Also þis same yere
had bene A pees made & sworn bitwen þe Duke of Burgoyne &
8 þe Dolphyn, which wer sworne vpon⁴ our Lordes body þat þei⁵
shold love & Assist eche other ayenst *per* enmyse. ⁶And after þis,
contrary to þis othe, þe Duke Iohn of Burgoyne was slayn &
pitously murthred in⁷ presence of þe Dolphyn; wherfor þe Frensh
12 men wer gretly devided, & of veray necessite labored to haue A
traitie *with* þe King of Englonð, ffor þe King of Englonð wan
dayly of þame, townes, casteles & fortresses. Also þis same yere
was Quene Iane Arested & brought to þe Castel of Ledys in Kent,
16 and one, frere Randolf, A doctour of Divinitie, hir confessor, which
afterward was slayn by þe person of þe Tour falling at wardes &
debate. And after Quene Iane was delyuered, In⁸ þe vij^{te} yeer,
bothe þe⁹ kinges of Englonð & of Fraunce¹⁰ wer Accorded; &
20 Kynge Henry was made Heir & Regent of France, & wedded
dame Kateryn, þe Kyng of Fraunce Doughter,¹¹ at Troyes in
Champayn, on Trinite Sondag. And þis was made bi þe meand
of Philipp, newly made Duke of Burgoyne, which was sworn to
24 King Henry for tavenge his fadre deth, & was become Englissh.
And þan þe King, *with* his new wife, went to Paris, wher he was
rially receyved. And fro thens he, *with* his lordes & þe Duke of
Burgoyne, & many other lordes of Fraunce, laid seige to diuerse

¹ Henry þe v^{te} om. HC. ² ca. ccxlv. om. H.

³ And A non H. and anone C. ⁴ of H. ⁵ þe H.

⁶ leaf 181, back. ⁷ in þe H. in the C. ⁸ Also H. ⁹ þe om. C.

¹⁰ kynges of fraunce & of Englonð C.

¹¹ þe kinges Doughter of fraunce H. the kynges doughter of fraunce C.

townes & Castels pat held of pe Dolphyn's part, & wand pam); bot pe town¹ of Melun held long, for per-in was gode defenders.

In pe viij yere of his regn,² pe King & Quene came ouer pe³ see, & landed on Candelmasse day in pe morow, at Dover; and [the]⁴ xiiij⁴ day of Feueryere, pe King com to London; & pe xxi day of pe same moneth pe Quene come thider⁵; And pe⁶ xxiiij day of the same,⁷ she was crowned at Westmynster. Also pe same yeer¹, Anon after Ester, pe King held a parlement at Westmynster,⁸ at which⁸ it was ordeyned pat pe gold in Englissh coygne shuld be weyed, & none receyved but by weght. And Anone after Wittsontyde, pe King sayled to⁹ Caleys, & so forth passed¹⁰ in-to Fraunce. And in Marche, pe xxij day, before pe King come ouer,¹² pe Duke of Clarence was slayn in Fraunce, diuerse¹¹ other lordes take prisoners, as perl of Huntyngdon, perle of Somersett, with diuerse other: & al was because pei wold not take Archers with pam),¹² bot thought to haue do¹³ with pe Frenshimen per¹⁴ self,¹⁶ without¹⁵ thame. And¹⁶ yett, when he was slayn, pe Archiers come & rescued pe body of pe Duke, which pei wold have caried with pame: God haue mercy of¹⁷ his soul; for¹⁸ he was A valiant man! And¹⁹ pe same yeer, bitwene Cristemas & Candemas,²⁰ pe town of Melun was yholden to pe Kyng.

In²⁰ pe ix yere of his regn,²¹ vpon²² saynt Nicholas Day in December, was borne Henry, pe Kynges first begoten son²³ at Windesore, whose god-fadres at fount-stone was Henry, Bisshop²⁴ of Wynchestre, & Iohn, Duke of Bedford; & pe Duches of Holande was²⁴ god-moder; And Henry Chicheley,²⁵ Erchebisshop of Canterbury, was²⁶ god-fader at confirmyng. And in pe x yere of his regn,²¹ pe Cite of Mewes, in Brie,²⁷ was goten, which hadd²⁸ bene longe besegied. And pis same yeer pe Queen shipped at Hampton, and sayled ouer to pe King in Fraunce, wher she was worsshypfully receyved of pe King, & also of pe Kyng of Fraunce, hir fadir, & of hir modir. And thus Kinge Henry wan³²

¹ tour H. ² of his regn om. HC. ³ pe om. HC.

⁴ xiiij Ad. the xiiij C. ⁵ thider om. HC. ⁶ pe om. H.

⁷ same moneth H. ⁸ which parlement H. which perlement C.

⁹ sayld in to H. ¹⁰ & passed so forth HC.

¹¹ & many H. and diuerse C.

¹² take with pame Archers H. take with hem Archers C. ¹³ do om. H.

¹⁴ them HC. ¹⁵ leaf 182. ¹⁶ Bot H. ¹⁷ on C. ¹⁸ for om. HC.

¹⁹ in An) And H. ²⁰ And in H. ²¹ of his regn om. HC.

²² on HC. ²³ henry the kinges fyrst begoten son was born H.

²⁴ hys H. ²⁵ Chicheley the H. ²⁶ was hys H.

²⁷ in Brie om. H.

fast in Fraunce, & held gret Astate, & satte at Dyners at A gret feste in Parys, crowned, & pe Queen also, which had nat ben seen to¹ fore; And al² peple resorted vnto his court. But as 4 for³ pe Kyng of Fraunce, he held none Astate ne reule, but was left almoste Allone.

Also pis yeer pe weder-cokk was sett vpon Poules staple at London.⁴ And pis yeer, in⁵ pe moneth of Auguste, pe Kyng 8 wex sike at Boys de Vincent. And when he saw he shold dye, he made his testament, and ordeyned many thinges nobley for his soul, And Devoutly receyved al pe rightes of holy church, in so fer-forth, pat⁶ whan he⁷ was enoynted, he said pe *seruice with* 12 pe preste; And at pe verse of pe psalme 'Miserere mei deus' pat was "Benigne fac dunc in bona voluntate tua, Syon, ut edificentur muri Ierusalem," he bad tarie per, and said *pus*: "O good Lorde, pou knowest pat⁸ myne entent hath bene, & yet is,⁹ if I might 16 lyve, to reedify pe walles of Ierusalem." & pen pe preest proceded forth, & made An end; & Anone aftr, pis moste noble prince & victoriouse kyng, flour in his tym of Cristen chivalrie, whom al pe¹⁰ world dovpted, gaf his soul in-to pe handes of God, & died, 20 & made An end of his naturel lif, at pe said Bois de Vincent beside¹¹ Parys, pe xxxvj yere of his Age: on whose soul, God haue mercy!¹² þan was pe body enbawmed & cered, & laid in A rial chare, & an ymage like unto him was leyd vpon pe corps, 24 open, *with* diuerse baners & horse couered rychely *with*¹³ Armes¹⁴ of Englond & Fraunce,¹⁵ and also¹⁶ tholde Armes of seynt Edwardes, seynt Edmond, & oper, And *with* gret multitude of torches; *with* whome went pe Kyng¹⁷ of Scotland, & many oper lordes,¹⁸ which 28 accompayned pe body til it come to¹⁹ Westmynster, bi London, in Englond. And in euery town by pe way he had solempny his Dirige on pe evyn, & masse on pe morne²⁰; & moche Almesse was giffen to²¹ pe²² pore peple bi pe way. And pe vij^{te} day of Nouembre after, 32 pe corps was brought to²³ London *with*²⁴ gret reuerence & solempnice,²⁵ & had²⁶ to Westmynster, wher he²⁷ now lieth: it was

¹ A H. ² at the H. ³ to C.

⁴ was sett up a poulys steeple at london the wethercock H.

⁵ in om. H. ⁶ þai Ad. that C. ⁷ pat whan he om. H. ⁸ wel H.

⁹ is yett H. ¹⁰ this H. ¹¹ leaf 182, back.

¹² mercy Amen HC. ¹³ with the H. ¹⁴ tharmes C.

¹⁵ & Fraunce om. H. ¹⁶ also om. H.

¹⁷ kyng HC. ñyng Ad. (scribe's blunder). ¹⁸ lordes the H.

¹⁹ vu to C. ²⁰ morow H. ²¹ vnto H. ²² pe om. C.

²³ thurgh H. through C. ²⁴ was H. ²⁵ for solempnite?

²⁶ & had om. HC. ²⁷ he om. H.

worshipfully¹ buried; & after, was² leyd on his tumber A rial ymage like to him-self, of siluer & gylt, which was made at pe³ cost of Quene Katherine. And thus ended, & was⁴ enteiored & buried, pe noble King Henry pe Fyft: on whose soul,⁵ God have A mercy!⁶

Of pe lawds of King Henry pe Fyft, & what he ordeyned for Kyng Richard & for him self after his deth. *Capitulum* CC xlvj.⁷ 8

HEre is to be noted pat pis King Henry pe Fyft, was A noble prince after he was King & crowned. how-be-it, tofore⁸ in his youth he had bene wilde &⁹ recheles, & spared nothing of his lustes &¹⁰ desires, but Accomplished þam after his lykyns; but as sone as he¹² was crowned, enoynted & sacred,¹¹ Anon sodenly he was chaunged into A new man, & sett al his entent to lyve vertuously, in mayntenyng of holy church, destroyng of heretikes, keping Iustice, & defending of his Reame and¹² subgetes. And for-as-muche as his¹⁶ fader had deposed by his labour¹³ pe¹⁴ gode King Richard, & pitously made him to dye, & for pe offense done to hym Ayens his leageance, he had sent to Rome to be Assoiled per-of, for which offense, our holy fader [the] Pope¹⁵ enioned hym to²⁰ make him be prayed-for perpetuelly, &, like as he gert¹⁶ be taken from him his¹⁷ naturel lyfe, perfor he shold do fynd iiij tapers to bren perpetuelly Aboute his body, pat, for pe extineccion of his bodely life, his soul may¹⁸ be remembred and lyve in heven²⁴ in spirituel lufe; & also pat he¹⁹ sholde, euery weke, on pe day as it cometh About of his deth, have A solempn masse of Requiem on pe Eveyng, tofore A dirige with ix lessons, and A dole to poure peple²⁰ al-wey on pat day, of²¹ xj^s viij^d, to be delyd penny²⁸ mele. At²² ones in pe yere, at his Anniuersarie, his entierment to be holden in pe moste honest wise; & to be delyd pat day²³ xx^{ti}²⁴ in pens to poure peple; And to²⁵ euery monk to haue xxs.: which al this thinges performed²⁶ pis noble Kynge, for his³²

¹ Rially H. ² ward H. ³ pe om. C. ⁴ & was om. H.

⁵ soule And all cristen soules HC. ⁶ mercy Amen HC.

⁷ CC xlvj om. H. ⁸ Afore H. ⁹ & om. HC. ¹⁰ ne HC.

¹¹ sacred and anoynted H. ¹² A H.

¹³ by hys labour has deposyd H. ¹⁴ pe om. H.

¹⁵ the pope our holy fadyr H. the pope our holy fadre C.

¹⁶ had don to H. had done to C. ¹⁷ his his Ad. ¹⁸ may euer HC.

¹⁹ leaf 183. ²⁰ poure Ad. pore peple H. poure peple C.

²¹ of om. H. ²² And HC. ²³ pat day om. H. ²⁴ xx pounce C.

²⁵ toke Ad. to HC. ²⁶ with all performyd thes thinges H.

fader¹ King Henry þe Fowrt, seth he² performed it³ nat during his life, whom, as it is seyde, God towched, & was A lepre er he died.

- 4 Also þen þis noble prince lete do caH al þabbottes & poures of Seynt Benett ordre in Englonde, & had þame in þe chapter house of⁴ Westmynster, for þe reformation of þe ordre, wherein he had communicacion; And also with bisshoppes & men of þe spirituelte, 8 in so fer⁵ forth þat þei doubted sore þat⁵ he wold haue had þe Temperalties out of þe handes; wherfor, by pauis, labour, & procuring of þe spirituelte, [þei] Encoragied þe King to chalenge Normandy & his right in Fraunce, to pend to sett hym A werk þer, þat he 12 shold nat seke occasion to entre in-to⁶ such matere; And þerfor⁷ al his life⁸ after, he labored in þe Werres,⁹ in conquering gret part of þe Reame of Fraunce, þat bi þe¹⁰ Agrement of þe¹⁰ King Charles had all¹¹ þe gouernaunce of þe Reame of Fraunce, And was proclaimed 16 Regent & heir of Fraunce. And so, nat-with-standing al þis gret Werre þat he had, yett he remembred his soul, & also þat he was mortal, & must dye; for¹² which he ordeyned by his life, þe place of his sepulture, wher he is now buried; & euery day iij 20 masses perpetuelly to be songen in A fair chapel ouer his sepulture, of¹³ which þe middel masse,¹⁴ þe fyrst & þe last,¹⁵ shall be as is Assigned by him. As it Appereth by þise verse¹⁶ folowyng:—

- | | |
|--|--|
| | Henrei misse quinti sunt hic tabulate, |
| 24 | Que successiue sunt per monachos celebrate. |
| Die dominica. ¹⁷ | Prima sit ¹⁸ Assumpte de festo Virginis alme; |
| | Poscit <i>Christus</i> postremam ¹⁹ de morte resurgens. |
| Feria iij ^a . ²⁰ | Prima salutate in ²¹ festo Virginis extat; |
| 28 | Nunciat Angelicis laudem postrema choris, |
| ²² Feria iij ^a . ²³ | Esse Deum natum de Virgine, prima facetur, |
| | Commemorat natam, sic vltima missa Mariam. |
| Feria iiij ^a . ²⁴ | Prima celebretur ad honorem neupmatis Almi; |
| 32 | Vltima conceptam denunciat esse Mariam; |
| Feria v ^{ta} . ²⁵ | Semper prima coli debet de corpore <i>Christi</i> . |
| | Vltima sit facta de Virgine purificata; |

¹ fader for H. fadre for C. ² hys fader H. his fadre C.

³ it om. H. ⁴ at H. ⁵ lest H. þat om. C. ⁶ to om. H.

⁷ þerfor om. HC. ⁸ life om. H. ⁹ in þe Warres om. H.

¹⁰ þe om. H. ¹¹ at Ad. att HC. ¹² for the H. ¹³ of the H.

¹⁴ masse & HC. ¹⁵ last messe HC. ¹⁶ these verses H.

¹⁷ Die dominica om. H. ¹⁸ sit affinite H. ¹⁹ xpc' postremā Ad.

²⁰ feria iij^a om. H. ²¹ in om. C. ²² leaf 183, back.

²³ feria iij^a om. H. ²⁴ feria iiij^a om. H. ²⁵ feria v^{ta} om. H.

Feria vj ^{ta} . ¹	Condecet ut prima celebretur de cruce sancta, Atque salutata fiet postrema Marie.	4
Sabbato ²	Omnes alii sanctos est prima colenda supernos : Ultima de Requite pro defunctis petit esse ; Semper erit media de proprietate diei.	

And yet þe Noble King Henry þe Fyft founded ij houses of Religion: one called Syon, beside Braynford³ of þe ordre of Seynt Brigitt, both of men &⁴ women; And on pat⁵ oþer side of þe 8 ryver of Tamyse, an house of monkes of⁶ Chartrehouse: In which ij places he is continually prayed for, night & day; for euer, when they of Syon rest,⁷ þei of þe Chartrehouse done þe⁸ seruice; And in⁹ like wise, whan þei of þe Chartrehouse rest, þe oþer gon to. 12 And bi þe ryngyng of þe¹⁰ belles of eyther place,¹¹ ayther¹² knoweth when þai¹³ haue ended þe seruice, which be nobly endowed, & done dayly þe great Almesse dedes; As in þe Charetrehouse certeyn childre be found to¹⁴ scole; & at Sion, certeyn Almesse 16 gyuen dayly.

And yet beside al this, he had founded A recluse, which shal be alway A preste, to pray for him, by þe said¹⁵ Chartrehouse, which¹⁶ preste is wel & sufficiently endowed for him & A seruaunt. 20 Loo! here may al princes take ensample bi þis noble prince pat regned so lytel tyme, nat fully x yere, pat¹⁷ did so many noble Actes, as wel for his soul to be perpetuelly remembred & prayd fore, as in hys worldly conquestes. And he, beyng in his moste 24 lusty Age, despised & eschewed synn, & was vertuose, & A gret Iustysyer, in so mych pat al þe princes of Cristendome, & also of hethenes, dradd him,¹⁸ & had¹⁹ determyned in þe²⁰ self—if God wold haue spared him—pat he wold haue werred Ayenst þe 28 Sarazenes. And for to know þe Ayed of other princes, & al þe passage in pat Iorney, he sent a knight²¹ of Henaude, named Ser Hugh Delanoy, vnto Ierusalem; but er he returned, he died at Boys du Vincent, in þe xxxvj^{te} yere of his Age, vn²² whose soul, 32 God haue mercy! Amen!²³

¹ Feria vj^{ta} om. H. ² Sabbato om. H. ³ Brayford Ad. Braynford C.

⁴ & of H. ⁵ the H. ⁶ of the H. ⁷ rest then H.

⁸ their C. ⁹ in om. H. ¹⁰ there H. ¹¹ of eyther place om. H.

¹² ech H. ¹³ oþer H. ¹⁴ to the H.

¹⁵ syde the H. ¹⁶ the which H. ¹⁷ pat om. HC.

¹⁸ Cristendome drad hym An also of heythenes H. Cristendome dradde him & also of hethenes C.

¹⁹ had om. H. ²⁰ hym HC. ²¹ knyght H. ²² of H. on C.

²³ Amen om. HC.

¹ ² How King Henry þe Sixt regned, beyng A childe, nat
one yere of age; And of þe batail of Vernoyl in Perche.
Capitulum CC xlvij.³

4 After King Henry þe Fyft, regned Henry þe Sixt⁴ his son,⁵
A childe, & nat fully A yere olde; whose regn⁶ began⁷ þe first
day of Septembre, the yeer⁸ of our Lord God⁷ M^l iiij^c xxij.⁸
This King, beyng in his⁹ Cradel, was moche doubted & dradd,
8 bicause of þe gret conquest of his fadre, & also of¹⁰ þe wisdom
& guyding of his vncles, þe Duke of Bedford & þe Duke of
Gloucestre. This yeer, þe xxj day of Octobre, died Charles,¹¹ King
of Fraunce, and was¹² buried at seynt Dionise¹³; And þan was
12 þe Duke of Bedford¹⁴ made Regent of Fraunce, & þe Duke of
Gloucestre was made protectour & defendour of Englon¹⁵. And
the first day of Marche after,¹⁴ was Ser William Taillour, preste,
degraded of his prestede; and on þe morne after he was brent
16 in Smythfeld for heresie. þis yere Sir James Styward, King of
Scottes, married Dame Iane þe Duches, Doughter of Clarence,
of hir first housbond, þerle of Somerset, at seynt Mary Ouerays.
Also þis yere, þe xvij day of August, was þe batail of Vernai¹⁶ in
20 Perche, bitwene þe Duke of Bedford, Regent of Fraunce & the
Duke of Alanson; which was A gret batai¹⁷. þe Duke of Bedford
had on his side with him þerle of Salesbury, Montagu, & þe
Lorde Talbot, & al þe power pat þei couthe make in Normandie—
24 þe garnisons kept,—And also many Capitaynes, with moche peple
of þe Duke of Burgoyns. And on pat other side was þe Duke of
Alaunson, þe Duke of Tournon, pat was þerle Douglas, þerle of
Boughan, with many lordes of Fraunce, & gret company of Scottes
28 & Arminakes. And þan þerle Douglas¹⁵ called þe Duke of
Bedford¹⁶ “Iohn with þe¹⁶ leden swerd.” And he sent hym worde
Ageyn¹⁷ pat he shuld fynd pat day pat hys swerd shold be¹⁷ off
steel; And so þe batail Ioynd on both sides, & þei¹⁸ fought long,
32 so¹⁹ pat þer wist no man who shold haue þe better A gret while;
but at þe last, as God wold, þe victorie fil vnto þenglish partie,
for þer was slayn²⁰ þerle Douglas, which A litel before²⁰ was made²¹

¹ leaf 184. ² Cap. iiij. H. ³ Ca. cexlvij om. H.

⁴ þe sixt om. HC. ⁵ son) but H. sone but C.

⁶ yere Ad. the yere H. the yere C. ⁷ A H. God om. C.

⁸ Ml cccc And xxij H. ⁹ in to Ad. in his HC. ¹⁰ of om. C.

¹¹ Charles the H. ¹² lyeth H. lieth C.

¹³ Denys in fraunce H. denys C. ¹⁴ after om. H.

¹⁵ Douglas om. H. ¹⁶ þe om. H. ¹⁷ swerd was H. ¹⁸ þei om. HC.

¹⁹ so om. HC. ²⁰ leaf 184, back. ²¹ made the H.

Duke of Tounar, perle of Bewghare, perle of Almarre, perle of Tounar, perle of Vaundore, & þe Vycount of Nerbornne,—which was one of þame þat slew Duke Iohn of Burgoyne, knelyng tofore¹ þe Dolphyn,—& many moo,² to³ þe nombre of xM^t & mo.⁴ And þer was taken prisoner þe Duke of Alaunson, & many oper lordes & gentiles of Fraunce; but Scottes þat day wer slaynd down right the⁴ s[u]bstaunce of þame all.

In þe iij yere of King Henry þe vj^{te}, þe Duke of Gloucestre⁸ married þe Duches of Holand, & went ouer þe⁵ See with hir to⁶ Henaude, for to take possession of his wife enherytaunce; wher he was honorably taken & receyved⁷ for⁸ lorle of þat⁹ land. But sone after, he was faynd to returne home Ageyn, & left his wife,¹² & his tresour þat he brought, with¹⁰ in a town þat¹¹ is called Mounse in Henaude, which promised for¹² to be¹³ trew to him; nat-with-standing, þei deliuered þe lady to þe Duke of Burgoyne, which sent hir to Gaunt; And fro þens she Ascaped in A mannes¹⁶ Aray, & come in to Zeland, to A town of his¹⁴ Awun called Zierixee. And fro þens she went to A town in Holand called þe Ghowde, & þer she was strong enough, & withstode þe said Duke of Burgoyne. And sone after, þe Duke of Gloucestre sent ouer²⁰ vnto¹⁵ Zeland þe lorle Fitz-Water, with certeyn men of Werre & Archiers, for to help & socour þe fore-said Duchesse of Holand, which loded at a place in Seland called¹⁶ Brewers-haven, wher þe¹⁷ lordes of þe contre come down & fought with him; & in²⁴ conclusion, he was faynd to withdraw him & his meyney to þe see Ageyn. But yett he slew and hurt diuerse lordes & moche peple of þat same contre, And so returned home Ageyn with his meyney, & preualed nothing.

28

Also þis same yere þerl of Salisbury, perle of Suthfolk, the Lorde¹⁸ Willeby & Lorde¹⁹ Scalys, with þer retenu, leid seige to þe Cite of Mauns, which²⁰ Cite was yholden to þem in short tym, with many oper strong townes & castels, to þe nombre of xxxvj. Thys³² tyme al Normandy & A gret part of Fraunce vnto Orliance, was vnder thobeiansee of the King²¹ of Englund; And al þe remanent of Fraunce was in gret²² tribulacion & mischief.

¹ A fore H. ² & many moo om. H. ³ vnto C.

⁴ right Ad. rygt the H. right the C. ⁵ þe om. C. ⁶ in to C.

⁷ receyued and takyn H. honourably receyued and taken C. ⁸ of for H.

⁹ the HC. ¹⁰ with hym H. with hym C. ¹¹ þat om. CH. ¹² for om. H.

¹³ to haue ben H. ¹⁴ hir C. ¹⁵ into C. ¹⁶ called the H.

¹⁷ fore H. ¹⁸ Lorde Ad. the lorle H. the lord C. ¹⁹ the lord HC.

²⁰ the which HC. ²¹ king Ad. the kyng C. ²² gret om. H.

¹How per was A gret Affray like to haue bene² bituene the Cardinal & pe Duke of Gloucestre; And of pe Coronacion of King Henry pe vith, both in England & in Fraunce.

4 Capitulum CCxlvij.³

IN pe iiijth yere, pe same night pat pe Mair of London,⁴ Iohn Coventre, had taken his charge, was A gret watche in London for Affray pat was⁵ bituene pe Bisshop of Wynchestre & pe Duke of Gloucestre, Protectour &c'. ffor pe Mair, with pe peple of pe Cite, wold Abide by pe Duke of Gloucestre as Protector of pe Reame, but bi⁶ labour of lordes pat went bitwen, & in especial bi pe labour of pe Prince of Portyngale, per was Apoyntment taken so pat per⁷ was no harme done. And after pe batail of Verneil in Perche, pe Duke of Bedford come ouer into Englonð; & on Witsonday pe⁸ same yere, at Leycestre, he dubbed King Henry knight; And forth-with pe said King Henry dubbed al thise⁹ knightes whose names folowes, pat is to say¹⁰: Richard, Duke of York, Also pe sone & heir of pe Duke of Northfolk, perle of Oxenforth, perle of Westmerland, pe sone and heir of perle of Northumbreland, pe sone & heir of perle Wormond,¹¹ pe lorde Rose, Sir Iames Botler, pe Lord Natrauas,¹² Sir Henry Gray of Tankerville, Sir William Nevile, Lorde Fawconbrigge, Sir George Nevyl, Lorde Latimer, Lord¹³ Welles, Lord¹³ Berkley, pe sone & heir of Lord¹³ Talbot, Sir Rauf Grey of Werk, Sir Robert Ver, Sir Richard Gray, Sir Edmond Hungerforde, Sir Robert Wynkford, Sir Iohn Botler, Sir Reynold Cobham, Sir Iohn Passheley, Sir Thomas Tunstal, Sir Iohn Chydiok, Sir Rauf Langeford, Sir William Drury, Sir William Ap-Thomas, Sir Richard Carbonel, Sir Richard Wydeuiff, Sir Iohn Shirdelowe, Sir Nichol Blonket, Sir Rauf Ratclyff, Sir Edmond Trafford, Sir William Cheyne, Sir William Babyngton, Sir Iohn Iune, &¹⁴ Sir Gillebert Beauchampe. þan in pe vth¹⁵ yere pe Duke of Bedford, with pe Duchesse his wife, went ouer pe¹⁶ see to Caleys, & A litel tofore went¹⁷ ouer Henry,¹⁸ Bisshop of Wynchestre. & on our Lady day Annunciacion, in our Lady churchē at Caleys, pe Bisshop of Winchestre, when¹⁹ he had songen masse, ²⁰was made

¹ leaf 182. ² bene A grete Affraye H. ³ Cap. iiij. H.

⁴ pe mair of London om. H. ⁵ pat was om. H. ⁶ bi the H.

⁷ pat Ad. pat per H. that ther C. ⁸ this C. ⁹ þes H.

¹⁰ pat is to say om. H. Wite C. ¹¹ Ormond C.

¹² matrauas C. ¹³ the lord HC. ¹⁴ & om. HC.

¹⁵ Item my vth H. ¹⁶ pe om. C. ¹⁷ where H. ¹⁸ henry the H.

¹⁹ quen H. ²⁰ leaf 185, back.

Cardinal; & he knelyng tofore¹ þe high Altare, þe Duke of Bedford sett þe hatt on his hede; & þer wer his bulles red, as wele of his charge As þe reioysing of his benefices spiritueH & tempereH.

And þis same yere was gret habondance of Rayn, þat þe sub-
 stance of hey & of² corne was destroyed, for it rayned almoste
 euery other day. þis same yere þe gode Erle of Salesbury, Sir
 Thomas Mountagu, leyde Seiege vnto³ Orlyauce; at which sieg
 he was slayn with A gvn þat⁴ come out [of] þe town.⁵ And⁶ sith 8
 forth þat⁷ he was slayn, English men neuer gat ne preuailed in
 Fraunce, bot euer after⁸ began to lefe, bi⁹ litel and lytel, til al was
 lost. ¹⁰Also þis same yere A Breton murdered A gode wedow¹¹ with-
 out Al-gate, which wedow fond him for almesse; & he bare away 12
 al þat she had; And after þis he toke grith of holy church at Seynt
 Georges in Suthwerk, & þer toke þe crosse, & forswore þis land.
 And as he went, it happend þat he came bi þe place where he did
 þis cursed dede in þe subbarbis of London; & þe women of þe same 16
 parissH come out with stones and¹² CaneH dunge, & slew & made
 an ende of him, nat-withstonding þe constable & many other men
 beyng present to kepe him; for þer wer many women, & had no
 pite.¹⁰ Also [t]his same yere þe Duke of Northfolk, with many 20
 gentil men & yomen, toke his barge, þe viij day of Nouembre, at
 Seynt Mary Oueryes, for to haue go thurgh London Brigg; & thurgh
 misgudyng of þe barge, it ouer-threw on þe Pyles, & many men
 drowned; but þe Duke him-self, with ij or iij, lepe vpon the piles, 24
 and so wer saued with¹³ help of men þat wer Aboue þe brigge,
 which cast down Roopes, by¹⁴ which þei saved þam-self.

This same yere, on Seynt Leonarde day, King Henre, beyng
 vij yere old¹⁵ of Age, was crowned at Westmynster: at whose cora- 28
 nacion wer made xxxvj knightes. þis yere, on Seynt George day,
 he passed ouer þe see to¹⁶ Caleys, toward Fraunce. Aboute þis
 tyme & Afore, þe Reame beyng in gret ¹⁷misery & tribulacion, þe
 Dolphin, with his partie, began to make Werr, & gett certeyn 32

¹ Afore H. ² of om. H. ³ to H. ⁴ which HC.

⁵ town on whos saule god haue mercy H. oute of the toune, on whos soule god haue mercy C.

⁶ flor H. ⁷ þat om. H. sith that C.

⁸ after om. H. ⁹ bi om. HC.

¹⁰⁻¹⁰ Also þis same yere breton murdered . . . many women & had no pite om. H.

¹¹ Wedowe in her bedde C. ¹² stones Ad. stones and C.

¹³ through H. ¹⁴ by the H. ¹⁵ old om. HC. ¹⁶ in to H.

¹⁷ leaf 186.

places, & make destres vpon Engliſſh men by þe meane of his
 Capytayns, *pat* is to wete, La Heer and Potonde, Sayntralles, and
 especial A maid, which¹ they named “*la PuceHe² de Dieu.*” This
 4 maid rode like A man, & was A valyant Capitayn Among þame, &
 take vpon hir many gret³ enterpryses, in so myche *pat* þei had A⁴
 byleve to haue recouered al þer losses by hir; nat-with-standing, at
 þe last, after many gret feates, by þe help & prowesse of Sir Iohn
 8 Luxemburgh, which was A noble capitayn of þe Dukes of Burgoyn,
 & many English men, Pykerdes and Burgones, which wer of our
 partie, before þe town of Compyne, þe xxij day of May, þe forsaid
 PuceH was taken in þe felde, Armed like A man, & many oper
 12 Capitaynes with hir, & wer al brought to Roan; & þer she was put
 in prison, & þer she was Iuged by þe law to be brent. And þen
 she said *pat* she was with childe, wherby she was respited A
 while; but in conclusion it was found *pat* she was not with child,
 16 & þen she was brent in Roane, & þe other Capitaynes wer put to
 raunson, & entreted as men of werre bene Acustomed &c⁷.

This same yere, About Candelmesse,⁵ Richard Hunder, A wolle-
 packer,⁶ was dampned for an heretike, & brent at Tour-HiH. And
 20 About midlente, Sir Thomas Baggely, preest, & vicar of Mauen in
 Est-sexe, beside Walden, was disgraded & dampned for an hery-
 tike, & brent in Smythfeld. Also⁷ þis⁸ same yere, whiles þe King
 was in Fraunce, þer wer many heretikes & lollardes, *pat* had pur-
 24 posed to haue made A rysing; & þei⁹ casten billes in many place; ;
 but,—blessed be God almighty!—þer Capitayn¹⁰ was takyn, which
 was called¹¹ William Maundeuil, A wever of Abyndon, & also¹²
 bayly of þe same town, which named him-self ‘Iack Sharp of
 28 Wigmoresland in Walis’; & after-ward¹³ he was beheded at Aben-
 don in þe Wittsone weke, on þe Twesday.

This same yere, þe vj^{te} day of Decembre, ¹⁴ Kyng Henry þe
 Sext was crowned King of Fraunce at Paris, in þe chirch of our
 32 Lady, with gret solempnite, þer beyng present þe Cardinal of
 Englund, þe Duke of Bedford & many oper lordes of Englund & of
 Fraunce.¹⁵ And after þis coronacion, a¹⁶ gret fest holden at Paris,

¹ the which H. ² Puce Ad. pucelle H. pucelle C.

³ gret om. H. ⁴ had a om. H. ⁵ About Candelmess om. H.

⁶ packer about candelmasse H. ⁷ And also HC. ⁸ in this C.

⁹ þei om. HC. ¹⁰ þe Capteyn of theme H. the Capitayn of hem C.

¹¹ whos name was H. whos name was C. ¹² also om. HC.

¹³ ward om. H. ¹⁴ leaf 186, back.

¹⁵ of fraunce and of England H. of fraunce & of englund C.

¹⁶ & C.

the King returned from thens to Roan, & so toward Caley. And¹ þe ix day of Feueryer, he² landed at Dover, whom al þe comones of Kent met at Beramdon, bitwen Canterbury & Dover, al in rede hoodes; & so come forth til he come to þe Blak-Hethe, wher he³ was mett with þe Mayre of London,³ Iohn Wellis, with al þe craftes of London clad al in white; & so þei brought him to London þe xxj day of þe same moneth. This same yere⁴ was A restreynt of þe wolles of Caley made by þe soudiours, by cause þei were nat⁵ payed of *per* waagies; wherfor þe Duke of Bedforth, Regent of Fraunce, beyng þan Capytain, come to⁵ Caley þe Twesday in þe Ester weke; And on þe morne after, many⁶ soudiours of þe town wer Arested & put in warde. And in⁷ þe same weke he rode to⁸ Terewyne; & bi þe mean⁸ of⁸ Bisshop of Terewyn, he wedded þerles doughter of Seynt Poul, & came ageyn to Caley. And þe x⁹ day of Iune, on Seynt Barnabe day, *per* wer four¹⁰ soudiours of Caley, þat wer chief Causers of þe restreynt, beheded, þat is to¹⁶ say: Iohn Maddesley, Iohn Lunday, Thomas Palmer, & Thomas Talbot, & C & x¹¹ bannished þe town þat same¹² tyme: & before wer bannished C xx¹³ soudiours. And on¹⁴ Mydsommer evyn after,¹⁵ come þe Lorde Regent & his wife to London. 20

¹⁶ Of þe heresie of Praghe, & of [þe] Counsel of Aras. &c.¹⁶
Capitulum CC xlix.¹⁷

Aboute þis tyme Pope Martyn died; & After him, Eugeny þe Fourt was Pope, þat¹⁸ was pesably chosen in Rome by þe Cardinales, 24 and was very & vndoubted Pope; but shortly after, he was put out¹⁹ & expulsed fro²⁰ Rome,²¹ in suche wise þat he was fayn to flee naked. In þis same tyme was þe Counsel of Basile, to which Counsel he was cited²² to come; And because he come nat, they²⁸ deposed hym; but he forsed²³ nat, ner sett²⁴ þerby, but²⁵ gat þe Cite of Rome, & Abode Pope stil²⁶ xvij yere.

This yere, About Witsontide,²⁷ þe heretikes of Praghe wer destroyed; for at two Iourneys wer destroyed of pame mo þan²⁸ 32

¹ And *per* H. ² he *om.* HC. ³ of London *om.* HC.
⁴ yere *per* H. ⁵ into H. ⁶ many of the H. ⁷ in *om.* H.
⁸ of the HC. ⁹ xi HC. ¹⁰ four principall H.
¹¹ Talbot and other H. Talbot And an Cx C. ¹² same *om.* H.
¹³ An C & xx H. and xx C. ¹⁴ of H. ¹⁵ after *om.* H.
¹⁶—¹⁶ *om.* HC. ¹⁷ Cap iij H. ¹⁸ þis H. This C. ¹⁹ out *om.* C.
²⁰ out of C. ²¹ he was expulsed out of Rome H. ²² leaf 187.
²³ rought HC. ²⁴ sett nought H. sette not C. ²⁵ but he H.
²⁶ styl pope H. still Pope C. ²⁷ about Witsontide *om.* H.
²⁸ mo þan *om.* H.

xxij M^t, with per¹ Capitayns, þat is to say,² Procapius, Saplico, & Lupus presbiter. Also per was taken on³ lyve, maister Piers, clerk, an Englyssman &⁴ heretike. Also þis same yere was A gret 4 frost & A strong, during xj wekes; for it began on⁵ seynt Katerines evyn, & lasted vnto⁶ Seynt Scolastica Day in Februare: In which tyme þe vyntage þat come fro Burdeux come over Shotters Hill.

This yere was þe counsel of Aras, & A gret treaty bitwen þe 8 King of Englonð & þe King of Fraunce, wher was⁷ Assembled many gret lordes of bothe parties: At which counsel was offred to þe Kyng of Englonð, many gret thinges by þe meane of A legate þat come fro Rome, which was Cardinal of Seynt Crosse, which 12 offres wer refused by þe Cardinal of Englonð, & other lordes þat wer per for þe Kinge. Wherefore þe Duke of Burgoyñ, which had bene long Englysh sworne, forsoke oure partie, & retourned Frensh, by meane of þe said⁸ legate, & made A pees with þe Frensh kyng, 16 receyving of þe King, for recompense of his fader deth, the counte⁹ Pontien, þe lordeshipp of Macon, with mych other þat was¹⁰ specified in þe said⁸ treety; And so our Embassatoures come home Ayen in wers case þan¹¹ þei¹² went forth,¹³ ffor þei lost per¹⁴ þe 20 Duke of Burgoyñ, which had bene, with his Burgoyñons & Pycardes, A singler help in al þe Conquest of Normandy & of Fraunce.

This same yere was A gret batail on þe See, bitwen þe 24 Ienewensez & þe King of Aragon; of which batail þe Ianeuenses had þe victori, for þei toke þe Kinge of Aragon, þe King of Naverne, & þe gret Maister of Seynt Iames in Galise, with iij^c knyghtes & squyers & moche other peple: & this was of¹⁵ seynt 28 Dominices day.

This same¹⁶ yeer wer seen thre¹⁷ Sonnes at ones, & Anone folowed þe threfolde gouernance¹⁸ in þe chirch, þat is to wete, of Eugeny þe Pope,¹⁹ of the Counsel, & of þe nevtalitie. Also þis same 32 yere M^t iij^c xxxiiij, was A passing gret wynd, by²⁰ which steples, houses &²¹ trees wer ouerthrowen. About þis tyme was an holy maid in Holand, called Lydwith, which lyued onely bi miracle, not etynge any mete. This yere þe Duke of Burgoyñ began his

¹ hir C.

² wete C.

³ of H. a C.

⁴ And an H.

⁵ of H.

⁶ tytt H.

⁷ was om. H.

⁸ same H.

⁹ counte of H.

¹⁰ as is HC.

¹¹ þan om. H.

¹² the H.

¹³ forth om. HC.

¹⁴ ffor per þei lost H.

¹⁵ on HC.

¹⁶ same om. H.

¹⁷ leaf 187, back.

¹⁸ rule and gouernance H.

¹⁹ þe Pope om. HC.

²⁰ by the H.

²¹ & om. H.

ordre at Lyle of 'pe golden Flyes' & ordeyned certeyn knightes of pe ordre, & made statutes & ordinances moche Acordinge vnto¹ pe ordre of pe Garter. Also pis same yere pe Frenshe men had enterprised to have stolen Caleys in pe fysshing tyme, for many 4 botes of Fraunce held² saufe conduyt to come to Caleys for to take hering; And pe Sowdioures of pe town had A custome to come to³ chirch, & leve per staves standing at pe⁴ chirch dore, which staves⁵ pe Frenshemen, which wer Araied like fissheres, had purposed to⁶ 8 haue taken so⁷ pere wepon, & wynn pe town. But one of pame lay with A comon woman⁸ pe night to⁹-fore, & he¹⁰ tolde to hir pare counsel; And she on pe morne told pe lieutenante, which forth¹¹-with commaunded pat euery man shold kepe his¹² wepon in his¹² hand, sacryng tyme and other. And when pei Aperceyved pis, pat¹³ pei wer myspointed, they sayled streght to¹⁴ Depe, & stale & toke pat town. And on¹⁵ Newyeres even after, pei toke Harflete; And thus Englishe men began to losse A litel¹⁶ and¹⁶ liteH in Normandy.

17 How Caleys and Guyhenes wer beseged by pe duke of Burgoyne, & how pei wer rescued by pe duke of Gloucester.¹⁷
Capitulum CCL^{mo}.¹⁸

20

This yere was A gret noyse thugh aH Englonde, how pe Duke of Burgoyne wolde come & besegie Caleys. Wherefore perle of Mortayne, with his Army pat he had for to haue gone with¹⁹ in-to Fraunce, was contermawnded, & charged pat he shold go to Caleys, 24 which was at pat tyme wel vitailed & manned; ffor Sir Iohn²⁰ Ratcliff was lieutenante of pe King in pat town, And pe Baron of Dudlay, lieutenant of pe Castel. And pe ix day of IuyH, pe Duke of Burgoyne, ²¹with al pe power of Flaundres & moche other peple, 28 come before Caleys, & sett his²² siege About pe town; & euery town of Flaundres had per tenttes bi pame self. And pis Siege endured thre wekes. In pe mean while pe Duke of [Gloucestre, beyng Protector of England, toke pe moste parte of pe lordes of England, 32 & went ouer pe See to Caleys, for to rescu pe town, or for²³ to feght

¹ on to H. ² had HC. ³ to the H. ⁴ pe om. C.

⁵ which staves H. which stauis C. om. Ad.

⁶ so to H. ⁷ so om. H. ⁸ woman om. H. ⁹ be H.

¹⁰ he om. HC. ¹¹ for H. ¹² his om. H. ¹³ pat om. H.

¹⁴ forth H. ¹⁵ of H. ¹⁶ and a C. ¹⁷⁻¹⁷ om. H.

¹⁸ Cap. iij vice iij H. ¹⁹ on H. ²⁰ Iohn of H. ²¹ leaf 188.

²² sette his C. ²³ for om. HC.

with þe Duke & his hoste, if they wold haue bidden. This tyme,
 London & euery gode towun of Englonð sent ouer þe¹ See to þis
 rescuse certeyn peple wel Arayed, of þe best & chose men for þe
 4 Werre. And þe ij day of August, the said Duke of Gloucestre
 Arriued at Caleys with al his Army & v^c shippes & moo. And þe
 Duke of Burgoyne² & al his ooste þat lay in þe³ Siegie, As sone as
 þei espyed þe Sayles in þe See, before þei⁴ Approched Caleys
 8 haven, sodenly in A mornynge departed fro þe Siege, levyng behind
 þame moche stuffe & vitales, & fled in-to Flaundres & Pycardy.
 And in likewise did þe Siege þat lay tofore Guynes, wher-as they
 of Guynes toke þe gret gonnes of brasse⁵ called Gedcon,⁶ & many
 12 other gret gonnes & serpentines. And þen when þe Duke of
 Gloucestre was Arryved with all his oost, he went into Flaundres,
 & was þerin xi dayes, & did but litel harme; except þat⁷ he brent
 ij fair villagies, Popering & Belle, & oper houses þat⁸ wer of no⁹
 16 strenght, & so he¹⁰ returned home Ageyn. Also þis same yere þe
 King of Scotland beseged Rokesburgh¹¹ with myche peple; but Sir
 Rauf Gray departed fro þe CasteH, & ordeyned for rescouse; but
 as sone as þe Kyng vnderstode his departyng, he sodenly brak his
 20 siege & went his way,¹² levyng moche ordynnance¹³ behinde him;
 wher he gat no worsshipe.

This same yeer, þe ij Day of Ianiuer, Quene Katerine, þat¹⁴ was
 þe Kinges moder, & wife to Kyng Henry þe Fyft, dyed, & departed
 24 out of þis world, & was brought rialy thrughe London to¹⁵ West-
 mynster; & þer she lyeth worsshippfully buryed¹⁶ in oure Lady
 Chapel. Also¹⁷ þis same yere, þe xiiij day of Ianiver, fiH down þe
 yate with þe¹⁸ towr on it,¹⁹ on London Brigg²⁰ toward Southwerk,
 28 with two Arches, & al þat stode þerin. This same²¹ yere was A
 gret treaty holden bitweene Grauenyng & Caleys, bitwen þe King
²² & Duke of Burgoyne, In which was þe Cardinal of Englonð & þe
 Duke of Northfolk, for þe King, with²² many othir lordes. And
 32 for þe Duke, was²³ þe Duchesse, having ful power of hir lorde as

¹ þe om. HC.

² of Burgoyne om. HC.

³ þat H.

⁴ the H.

⁵ brasse which was H. ⁶ Dygeon H. digeon C. digeo (in margin) Ad.

⁷ þat om. C.

⁸ which HC.

⁹ of Add. of no HC.

¹⁰ he om. H.

¹¹ Rokesbrught H. burgh Ad.

¹² way and C.

¹³ stoff H.

¹⁴ which HC.

¹⁵ And so to HC.

¹⁶ And þer lieth buryed worschippfully H.

¹⁷ And H. And also C.

¹⁸ A H.

¹⁹ on it om. H.

²⁰ leaf 188, back.

²¹ same om. H.

²²⁻²² And the Duke of Burgoyne where for the king was displeysd And sent
 for þe CardinaH of Englonð þe Duke of Norfolk And H. Bourgoyne where
 for the king was the CardinaH of englonð the duke of norfolk and C.

²³ was duble H.

Regent & lady of his landis, wher¹ was taken, by trewes² of both parties, An Abstinence of Werre for A certeyn tyme in þe name of þe Duchesse, & nat of þe Duke, because he had gone from his othe & legeance pat he had made to King Henry; þerfor King Henre⁴ neuer wold³ write, ne Apoynt, ne⁴ haue to do with him after, but al in þe Duchesse name.

Also þis same⁵ yere, Quene Iane died, þe ij day of Iuyl, which had ben King Henry þe iiij^{te} wife; & was caried fro Carmondsey 8 vnto Caunterbury, wher she lieth buried by⁶ King Henry þe iiij^{te}, hir houseband. This same⁵ yere died al þe lions in þe Toure of London, which⁷ had nat ben seen many⁸ yeeris before out of mynde.

12

⁹ How Owayne, a squyer of Wales pat had wedded Quene Kateryne, was Arested; And of þe Scisme bitwene Eugeny & Felix.⁹ *Capitulum celj.*¹⁰

IN þe xvj yere of King Henry, died Sigismond, pemperoure of 16 Almaign, & Knight of þe Garter; whos entierment þe Kyng kept at Seynt¹¹ Poules in London ryally, wher was made a ryall hercie; and¹² þe King in his Astate, clad in blew, was at even at dirige. & on¹³ þe morne at masse, &c.¹⁴ And after hym was elect &¹⁵ chosen 20 Albert,¹⁶ Duke of Ostrych, which had wedded Sigismond's doughter, forto be Emperour; &¹⁷ also was Albert¹⁸ taken & receyved to be Kinge of Beme & of¹⁹ Hungarie bi reson²⁰ of his wyfe; for he left²¹ after him none other heir. þis Albert was Emperour bot 24 one yere, for he was poysond, ²²& died perof.²² Some say he dyed of A flixx: but he was A vertuose man & A²³ piteful, so moche pat al þe peple pat knew him²⁴ said pat²⁵ þe world²⁶ was nat worthy to haue his presence.²⁷

28

¹ which H. ² sadenes H.

³ the kyng neuer wold C. the king wold neuer H.

⁴ with hym bot ne H. ⁵ same om. H. ⁶ with H.

⁷ the wich H. the which C. ⁸ in many H.

⁹⁻⁹ How Owayn . . . Eugeny & Felix om. H. ¹⁰ Cap iij 21 H.

¹¹ Seynt om. H. ¹² in Ad. ¹³ in H. ¹⁴ &c. om. H. ¹⁵ An H.

¹⁶ Albert om. H. ¹⁷ & om. C. & also om. H.

¹⁸ also was Ad. Albert was H. This was C.

¹⁹ of om. HC. ²⁰ because H. because C.

²¹ his wyfe pat was Sygysmonds doughter which lefte H. his wife that was Sigismundis doughter whiche lefte C.

²²⁻²² and so he died HC. ²³ A om. HC.

²⁴ him om. H. ²⁵ pat om. H. ²⁶ worde H.

²⁷ hys presence. In þis yere was þe Kynge of Scottes murdered in his chamber by night pytously which king had ben prisson xv yere in England And thei pat slew hym were takyn afterward and hade cruel Iustice H.

This same¹ yere, one Owayn, A squyer of Walez, A man of low byrth, which had many A day² to-fore secretly wedded Quene Katerine, & had by hir iij sonnes & a doughter, was taken & 4 commaunded to Newgate, to prison, bi pe³ lorde of Glowcestre, Protectour of pe Reame. And pe same yere⁴ he brake prison by pe mean of A preest pat was his Chapelayn. And after, he was⁵ taken ageyn bi pe³ Lorde Bemond, & brought Ageyn to Newgate, 8 which afterward was delyuered at large; & one of his sonnes afterward was made Erle⁶ of Richemount, Another,⁷ Erle of Penbroke, & pe third, A monk of Westmynster, which monk died sone after. This same¹ yere also, on New-yere day, at Baynard CasteH, fih 12 down A stakk of wod sodenly at afternone, & slew iij men⁸ mescieuously, & foul hurt othir. Also at Bedford, on Ash-tuesday,⁹ wer iij men¹⁰ murthred without strok, by falling doun of a steir, as pei come out of per¹¹ comon haH, & many foul hurt. In 16 pe xviij yere, Sir Richard Beauchamp, pe gode Erle of Warwick, died at Rone, he beyng pat tyme lieutenaut¹² of pe King in Normandie; and fro pens his body was brought to Warthewick, where he lieth worsshipfully in a new chapel on pe South side of 20 pe Queer. Also pis¹³ yere was A gret derth of Corne in al¹⁴ England; for I¹⁵ busshel of whet was worth iij¹⁶ iij¹⁷ in many places of England,¹⁶ & yet men might nat haue ynoghe¹⁷; wherfore Stephen Brown, pat tyme Mair of London, sent vnto¹⁸ Pruse, & 24 brought to¹⁹ London certeyn shippes laden with Rye, which eased, & did myche gode to pe peple; for korne was so skarce in England pat in some placez²⁰ pore peple made pame brede of braken ferne²¹ rotes.

28 This yere pe general Counsel of Basile deposed Pope Eugeny; & pei chese Felix, which was Duke of Sauoy; & pan began pe Scisme which²² endured vnto pe yere of oure Lord Ihesu Crist²³ M¹ iij^c xlvij.²⁴ This Felix was A devout prince, & saw pe sonnes of his 32 sonnes, & after, lyued An holy &²⁵ deuoute lyfe, & was chosen Pope

¹ same om. H. ² A day om. H. ³ my HC. ⁴ And pis yere H. ⁵ leaf 189. ⁶ the Erle H.
⁷ And on ower the H. & anothir C. ⁸ m¹ Ad. men HC.
⁹ schyrday H. ¹⁰ a shireday C. ¹¹ m¹ Ad. xviij men HC.
¹² the H. ¹³ leutenannt pat tyme H. ¹⁴ pis same H.
¹⁵ al om. H. ¹⁶ a C. ¹⁷ for 1 busshel . . . of England om. H.
¹⁸ thought H. ¹⁹ in to C. ²⁰ in H.
²¹ pat in some placez om. H. ²² places of England C.
²³ braken om. HC. ²⁴ interlined as a gloss Ad. ²⁵ the which H.
²⁶ Ihu crist om. H. ²⁷ M¹ CCCC & xlvij H.
²⁸ holy & om. H.

by¹ þe Counsel of Basile. Eugeny [was] deposed; & so þe Scisme was long tyme. And þis Felix had no² moche³ obedience, bi-cause of þe Nevtralite for þe moste parte; & wel nygh al Cristendome obeid & repute Eugeny for verey Pope:—God knoweth who was 4 þe⁴ verey Poper of þame both; for both occupied, during þe lyfe of Eugeny. This same⁵ yere, Sir Richard, which was⁶ vicare of Hermesworth, was degraded of his prestehode at Poules, & brent at Tour⁷ Hill, as for an heretike, vpon⁸ Seynt Botulphe day; 8 how-be-it,⁹ at his deth he died A gode Cristen man; wherfor, after his deth moche peple come to þe place wher he was¹⁰ brent, & offred, & made an hepe of stones, & sett vp A crosse of tree, & held him for A Seynt, til þe Mair &¹¹ shereves, by þe commaundment of þe 12 Kyng & of¹² bisshopes, destroyed it, & made þer A dong-hiH. Also þis same yere þe shyreves of London sett out of Seynt Martyns þe Grannt, þe sanctuarey, fyve persones, which afterward wer restored Ageyn to þe⁴ same¹³ sanctuarey by þe Kinges Iusticez. After 16 Albert þe iij, Frederike was chosen Emperoure. This Frederike, Duke of Osterike, was long Emperoure, & differred for to be crowned at Rome because of þe⁴ Scisme; but after þat vnion was had, he was crowned with Emperial Diademe, with gret¹⁴ glorie & 20 triumphe, of Pope Nicholas þe Fourt: this was A man peseble, &¹⁵ of singular pacience, nat hatyng þe chirch: he wedded þe King of Portyngale doughter &c⁷.

16 How þe Duchesse of Gloucestre was Arested for treson, & 24 committed to perpetuel prison in þe Ile of Mann; And of þe deth of Maister Roger Bolingbroke.¹⁶ Ca. celij.¹⁷

IN this yere,¹⁸ Elianour Cobham, Duches of Gloucestre, was Arested for certeyn poyntes of treyson leyd Ageynst hir, wher-vpon 28 she was examyned in Seynt Stephens Chapel at Westmynster, before perchebisshop of Caunterbury; & per she was enioyned to open penauce, forto go through Chepe, bering a tapere in hir hand, & affir in¹⁹ perpetuel prison in²⁰ þe Ile of Man, vnder þe keping 32 of Sir Thomas Stanley. Also þat same tyme wer Arested Maister Thomas SouthweH, A chanon of Westmynster, Maister Iohn Hune,

¹ at H. ² not C. ³ grete H. ⁴ þe om. H.

⁵ same om. H. ⁶ was om. C. ⁷ leaf 189, back. ⁸ on HC.

⁹ how weH HC. ¹⁰ had been H. he had be C. ¹¹ & om. H.

¹² of om. H. ¹³ same om. HC. ¹⁴ gret om. H.

¹⁵ pesebly quiete and HC. ¹⁶⁻¹⁸ om. H.

¹⁷ Capitulum 22 H. ¹⁸ yere dame H. ¹⁹ to HC. ²⁰ into H.

¹ A chappeleyn of pe said ladys, ¹ Maister Roger Bolynbroke, A clerk vsyng Nygromancie, & one Mariery Iurdeman, called 'pe wyche of Eye' beside Westmynster. Thise wer Arested as for beyng of
⁴ counsel with pe sayd ² Duchesse of Gloucestre. And as for Maister Thomas Southwel, he died in pe Towr pe night before he ³ shold have benne regned on pe morow ⁴; for so he said him self pat he shold die in his bedd, & nat bi Iustice. And in pe ⁵ xx yere, ⁶
⁸ Maister Iohn Hune & Maister Roger Bolyngbroke wer brought to ⁷ pe Guyldhalle in London, & per, before pe Mayr, pe lordes & ⁸ chief Iustice of Englonde, wer pei ⁹ rayned, & dampned both ¹⁰ to be drawen, hanged & quartred; but Maister Iohn Hune had his
¹² chartre, & was pardoned by pe King; but Maister Roger was drawen to Tiborne, wher he confessed pat he died gyltles, & neuer had trespassed in pat pat he died fore; nat-withstanding he was hanged, ¹¹ hedded, & quartred; ¹² And Margery Iurdemain was brent in Smyth-
¹⁶ felde. Also pis yere ¹³ was A gret Affray in Flet Strete by night tyme, bitwen men of court & men of London, & diuerse men slayn, & many ¹⁴ hurt: & one Herbotel was chief ¹⁵ cause of pe misgouernance & Affray. Also pis yere, at chesing of pe Mair of London, pe
²⁰ commones named Robert Chapton, & Raulyne Holand, taylor. & pe Aldermenn toke Robbert Clapton, & brought him at pe ¹⁶ right hond of pe Mair, as pe custome is. And pan certeyn talyoures & other ¹⁷ hand-crafty men cried "nay! nat pat ¹⁸ man, but ¹⁹ Raulyn
²⁴ Holand!" Wherfor pe Mair, pat was Padesly, ²⁰ sent po pat cried so ²¹ to Newgate, where they Abode a gret while, & wer wel ²² ponysshed.

In this same ²³ yere wer diuerse Embassatoures sent in to Guyan
²⁸ for A mariage for pe King for perles doughter of Arminak, which was concluded; but, by pe mean of ²⁴ perle of Suthfolk, it was lett & put Aparte. And after pis, pe said Erle of Southfolk went ouer pe ²⁵ See vnto ²⁶ Fraunce, & per he treted pe mariage bitwen pe King

¹⁻¹ om. H. ² leaf 190. ³ pat he H. ⁴ morne HC. ⁵ pis H.

⁶ yere pe xx H. the yere xx C. ⁷ into H. ⁸ and the H.

⁹ pei om. HC. ¹⁰ both om. H. ¹¹ hanged om. H.

¹² quartered, on whos saule God haue mercy H. quartered, on whos soule God haue mercy C.

¹³ yere the lord talbott leyde feire to Deype, But pe Dolphyn rescowed it And wan pe Bastell pat Englishman hade made. Also pis yere H.

¹⁴ som H. somme C. ¹⁵ chief om. H. ¹⁶ pe om. C.

¹⁷ other om. H. ¹⁸ this HC. ¹⁹ no H.

²⁰ pat was padesly H. that was padysly C. om. Ad. ²¹ so cried HC.

²² wel om. H. ²³ same om. H. ²⁴ pe mean of om. H.

²⁵ pe om. H. ²⁶ into HC.

of Englon^d & ¹ þe Kinges doughter of Cecil & of Ierusalem. & þe next yere it was concluded fully, þis² mariage; by which³ mariage þe⁴ Kyng shold delyuer to hir fader þe Duchie of Angeo & perldome of Mayn⁵, which was þe key of Normandy. Then departed þe ⁴ Duke of Suthfolk, with his wife & diuerse lordes & knightes, in þe moste rial astate ⁵ þat might be, out of Englon^d, with new charez & palfreys, which went thurgh Chepe, & so went ouer þe See, & receyved hir, & sith brought hir in Lent⁶ after to Hampton, wher ⁸ she landed, & was ryally receyved. And on Candelmes evyn⁷ before, bi A gret tempest of thondre & lightenyng at afternone, Poules steple was sett A fire on þe middes of the⁷ shafte in þe tymbre, which was qwenched bi force⁸ of⁹ labour, ¹⁰ & specially bi ¹³ þe labour¹⁰ of þe morow masse preste of þe Bow in Chepe, which was thought impossible, saufe only bi¹¹ þe grace of God.

This yere was þerle of Stafford made & create Duke of Bokynham; þerle of Warewik, Duke of Warwike; þerle of Dorsett, ¹⁶ Marques¹² of Dorsett; & þerle of Suthfolk was¹³ made¹⁴ Marquys of Southfolk.

¹⁵ **How King Henry þe Sext¹⁶ wedded Quene Margaret; And of hir Coronacion.**¹⁵ *Capitulum CCI[i]ij.*¹⁷ 20

IN this yere Kyng Henry maried at Southwyke Quene Margaret; & she come to London [þe] xviij day of May; And bi þe way al þe lordes of Englon^d receyved^d hir worsshypfully in diuerse places, & in especial þe Duke of Gloucestre. And on þe¹⁸ ²⁴ Blakhethe, þe Mair of London¹⁹, Aldermen, & al þe crafte-men²⁰ in blew gowannes browdred with þe deuyse of his craft, þat þei might be biknowen, mett with hir, with rede hoodes, & brought hir to London, where were diuerse pagentis & conntinace of ²⁸ diuerse histories shewed in diuerse placez of þe Cite Rially, & castelles. And þe xxx day of May þe forsaid Quene was crowned at Westmynster; and þer was iustes iij dayes during, with-in þe sayntuarie tofore pabbey. This yere þe Prior of Kilmain Appelled ³²

¹ And Marget H. ² þat H. that C. ³ the which H.

⁴ by the which the H. ⁵ leaf 190, back. ⁶ the lent H. the lente C.

⁷ of Ad. of the C. ⁸ bi force om. H. ⁹ by H.

¹⁰⁻¹⁰ and . . . labour om. H. ¹¹ bi om. HC. ¹² þe marques H.

¹³ was om. H. ¹⁴ þe H. ¹⁵⁻¹⁵ How . . . Coronacion om. H.

¹⁶ þe sext om. C. ¹⁷ Capitulum 23 H.

¹⁸ þe om. H. ¹⁹ of London om. C.

²⁰ men om. HC.

perle of Vrmond of treson), which had A day Assigned to pame forto
 feght in Smythfeld. And þe listes wer made, & þe feeld dressed ;
 but when it came to poynt, þe King commaunded þat þei shold nat
 4 fight, but toke þe quarel in-to his own hond. & pis was¹ done at
 þe Instance & laboure² of certeyn prechours & doctoures of London,
 as Maister Gilbert Worthington, parson³ of ⁴ Seynt Andrews in
 Holborn, & other. Also þis same yere come A gret Enbassate into
 8 Englund out of Fraunce, forto haue concluded A perpetuel pees ;
 but in conclusion it turned vnto⁵ A trewes of A yere. About þis
 tyme dyed Seynt Bernardyne, A gray frere⁶ which began þe new
 reformation of þat ordre in many places, In so myche þat þei pat
 12 wer reformed bene called 'Observantes,' which Observauntes bene
 encrecid gretly in Italie & in Almaigne. This Bernardin was
 canonized bi Pope Nicholas þe Fyft In þe yere M^t CCCCL.⁷ Iohannes
 de Capestrauo was his disciple, whiche profited moche⁸ to þe
 16 reformation of þat ordre ; for whome God shewed many a fair⁹
 miracle. Also hère is to be noted, þat fro þis tyme forward, King
 Henry neuer profited¹⁰ ne Went forward ; but Fortune began to turn
 fro him on al sides, als¹⁰ wel in Fraunce, Normandy, Guyan, as in
 20 Englund. Some men hold opinion þat King Henry gaf commission
 plenerly¹¹ to Sir Edward Huße, Sir Robert Roos, Dean¹² of Seynt
 Seuerynes, & oper, to conclude A mariage for him with perle of
 Arminakes suster, which was promysed (as it was seid) & concluded ;
 24 but afterward¹³ it was broken, & he wedded Quene Margarete, as
 A-fore is seid ; which was A dere mariage for þe reame of Englund ;¹⁴
¹⁵ffor it is knowen verely þat, for to haue hir, was delyuered þe
 Duchie of Angeo & þe Erldome of Maign), which was þe key of
 28 Normandie, for þe Frensh men tentre. And About þis, þe¹⁵ said¹⁶
 Marquys of Southfolk axed in playn parlement A fyftenth & an
 half for to feche hir out of Fraunce. Se now¹⁷ what A mariage was
 þis, as to þe comparison of þat oper mariage of Arminyke ! for per
 32 shold haue ben delyuered so many castels & townes in Gwyhen ;
 And so moche gode shold haue bene yiffen with hir, þat al Englund
 shold haue bene enryched per-by,¹⁸ but contrary-wise feH. Wherfor

¹ was om. H. ² & laboure om. H. ³ the person H. ⁴ leaf 191.

⁵ to H. ⁶ ? MS. frerer. ⁷ yere of our lord M^t CCCC and fyty H.

⁸ moche om. H. ⁹ a fair om. H. ¹⁰⁻¹⁰ om. H. als = as C.

¹¹ plenerly om. H. ¹² þe Dean H.

¹³ afterward it was broken for by the mene of þe marquys of suffolke H.

¹⁴ englund as it schewed before. H. ¹⁵⁻¹⁵ om. H.

¹⁶ & for H. ¹⁷ lo HC.

¹⁸ ben þer by encreased H. þer by om. C.

euery gret ¹ prince ought to kepe his promisses; ² for, bicause of breking of pis promisse, ² & for mariage of Quene Margaret, what losse hath pe reame of Englonde had, ³ bi losyng of Normandy and Guyan, bi diuision of ⁴ pe reame, pe rebelling of commynes Ageynst ⁴ per princes & lordes; what diuision Ayen ⁵ pe lordes, what murdre & sleying of pame! what feldes foughten & made! in conclusion, so many, ⁶ that many a ⁷ man hath lost his life; And in conclusion, pe King deposed, & ⁸ pe Quene with hir son fayn to flee into ⁸ Scotland, & fro pens to ⁹ Fraunce, & so to Lorayn, pe place wher ¹⁰ she come first ¹¹ fro! Many men deme pat pe breking of ¹² pe Kinges promisse to pe suster of perles of Armynak, was cause of this gret losse & Aduersite.

12

**How pe gode Duke of Gloucestre, Humfrey, pe Kinges vncl,
was Arested at pe parlement of Bury; And ¹³ of his death;
And how Anges in Mayn was deliuered.**

In ¹⁴ pe xxv^{to} yere ¹⁵ of King Henry pe VI^{te}, ¹⁶ was A parlement ¹⁶ at Bury called seynt Edmundes Bury; About which was commaunded all pe communes of pe cont[r]e to be per in per most defensable Aray, to ¹⁷ A-wayt vpon pe King, to which ¹⁸ parlement come pe Duke of Gloucestre, Humfrey, pe Kinges vncl, which had ²⁰ bene pe ¹⁹ protector of Englonde al pe non-Age of pe King. And Anone after pat ²⁰ he was come to ²¹ his logyng, he was Arested bi pe Viscount Bemond, pe Constable of Englonde, acompanyed ²² with ²³ pe Duke of Bokyngham & many oper lordes, and forth ²⁴ with al ²⁴ his ²⁵ seruandes wer commaunded for to depart fro him; And xxxij of ²⁶ pe chief of them wer arested also, ²⁷ & sent to diuerse prisiones. And anone, after pe ²⁸ said Arest, ²⁹ pe said Duke was on pe morn found ³⁰ dede: on whos soul, God haue mercy, Amen! ³¹ But how ²⁸ he died, & in what maner, pe certentie is nat knowen to me. ³² Some said he died for sorow; some said he was murthred bitwene ij

¹ leaf 191, back. ²⁻² om. H. ³ had om. HC. ⁴ in HC.

⁵ among H. amonge C. ⁶ so many om. H. ⁷ a om. H.

⁸ and om. H. ⁹ into H. that C. ¹⁰ pat H.

¹¹ first om. H. ¹² of om. H. ¹³ of om. C. ¹⁴ Also in H.

¹⁵ yere xxv C. ¹⁶ pe vi^{te} om. HC. ¹⁷ for to HC. ¹⁸ to the which H.

¹⁹ pe om. C. ²⁰ pat om. C. ²¹ come in H. was in C.

²² whome Acompanyed H. whom accompanied C.

²³ with om. HC. ²⁴ for H. ²⁵ his om. H.

²⁶ also of H. ²⁷ also om. H. were also arested C. ²⁸ this C.

²⁹ And v or vj days after bis seid arest H.

³⁰ was . . . found om. H. found om. C. ³¹ Amen om. H.

³² to me om. H. to me knowen C.

federbeddes; other said *pat* an hote spytt was put in his foundement; & so,¹ how² he died, God knoweth, to whome is no thing³ hidd. And when⁴ he was thus⁵ dede, he was leil open, *pat* al⁴ men might se him, And so both lordes & knightes of *pe* shires, with burgessers, come & saw him⁶ ded; but *pai* coul nat *perceif* wound ne token⁷ how he died. here may men mark what *pis* world⁸ is! this Duke was A noble man & A *gret* clerk, & had worsshippfully⁸ rewled *pis* reame to *pe* Kinges behove, & neuer coude be found faute in⁹ him,¹⁰ but envy of *pame* *pat* wer *gouvernours*, & had promised¹¹ *pe* Duchis of Angas & perldome of Maign, caused¹² *pe* destruccion of *pis* noble man; for thei dral him, *pat* he wold haue¹² enpesshed *pat* deliuerance. And after, *pei* sent his body to seynt Albones¹³ with *certeyn* lightes for to be buried; And so *Sir* Geruase of Clifton had *pan*¹³ *pe* charge to convey *pe* corps¹⁴; & so it was buried at Seynt Albons in *pe* Abbey; & v persones of his houshold¹⁶ wer sent to London, & *per* wer reyned & juged to be drawn, honged & quartred; Of wome *pe* names wer *Sir* Roger Chammbrelayn, knight, one¹⁵ Midelton, A¹⁶ squyer, Herbard, A squyer, Arthur,¹⁷ A squyer, & Richard Nedham: which v persons wer drawn fro *pe*²⁰ Toure of London thugh Chepe to¹⁸ Tiburn, & *per* honged, & lat down quyeck, & *pen* striped for to have bene heded & quartred. And *pan* *pe* Marquys of Southfolk shewed *per* for *pame* *pe* Kinges pardon vnder his *gret* Seale; & so *pei* wer pardoned of *pe* remnant of thexecucion, & had *per* lyues, & after¹⁹ war brought agen yn to London, &²⁰ frely deliuered. this began *pe* trouble in *pe* reame of²¹ Englonl for *pe* deth of *pis* noble Duke of Gloucestre; &²² al *pe* communes of *pe* reame began forto murmure²³ for it,²⁴ &²⁸ were nat contente.

After *pat*²⁵ Pope Eugeny was dede,²⁶ Nicholas *pe* Fyft was elect Pope. This Nycholas was chosen for Eugeny, yet honggyng *pe*

¹ but H. so om. C. ² leaf 192. ³ nothing is H.

⁴ *pen* when H. *thenne* whan C. ⁵ so HC.

⁶ him lye H. hym lye C.

⁷ but wond ne token colde the not *perceyue* H. but wounde ne token coude they *perceyue* C.

⁸ worde H. ⁹ to C. ¹⁰ found be hym Any faute H.

¹¹ promised to deliuer H. ¹² for thei caused H.

¹³ om. H. ¹⁴ in the charge of the corpus to convoy H.

¹⁵ And H. ¹⁶ A om. H. ¹⁷ or Archure H.

¹⁸ vnto H. ¹⁹ and so *pei* H. And so they C.

²⁰ And after H. and after C. ²¹ *pe* reame of om. H.

²² of Gloucestre & om. H. & om. C. ²³ to mourne H.

²⁴ for it om. H. ²⁵ *pat* om. HC. ²⁶ was dede om. H.

Scisme. natwithstondyng he gat pe obedience of al Cristen Reames ; for after *pat*¹ he was electe & sacred ² Pope, certayn lordes of Fraunce & of England wer sent vnto³ Sauoy, to Pope Felix, for to entrete him to cese of pe⁴ Pepecy. And bi pe special⁵ labour 4 of pe⁶ Bisshop of Norwich & pe lorde of Seynt Iohnes, he cessed pe ij^{do} yere after *pat* Pope Nicholas was sacred. And pe seid Felix was made Legate of Fraunce & Cardinal of Sauoye, & resigned pe hole papacy to⁷ Nicholas ; after,⁸ lyved an holy lyfe, & died ⁸ an holy man ; And as it is said, Almighty⁹ God shewed miracles for him. This was pe xxij Scisme bitwen Eugeny & Felix, & dured xvi yere. pe cause was pis : The¹⁰ general Counsel of Basil deposed Eugeny, which was only Pope & vndoubted, for- 12 as-myche as he obserued nat & kept¹¹ pe decrees & statutes of pe Councyl of Constance, as it is A-fore¹² said ; nethir¹³ he rought not to gyve obedience to *pat* general Counsell in no maner wise ;¹⁴ wher-of Arose A gret Altercacion emong Writeres of pis 16 mateer, *pro* & *contra*, which kan nat Accorde vnto¹⁵ pis day. one partie seith *pat*¹⁶ ‘pe Counsel is Aboue pe Pope,’ *pat* oper partie seith “nay, but pe Pope is Aboue pe Counsel.” Godd, blessed Aboue aH thinges, gif & graunt¹⁷ his pees in¹⁸ holy chirche, 20 spouse of Criste, Amen ! This Nicholas was commen of Iene,¹⁹ of low burth ; A doctour of dyvynite, an Actif man, he reedyfied many places *pat* wer broken & ruynouse, & did do²⁰ make A gret wall About pe Palays, & made pe²¹ wall new About Rome, 24 for drede of pe Turkes. And pe peple wondred of pe ering²² &²³ resignyng of Felix to²⁴ him, considering *pat* he was A man of so humble²⁵ burth ; And *pat* othir was of Affinite to al pe moste parte of Cristen princes ; wherof *per* was A verse publisshed in 28 Rome, *pus* :²⁶ hic fulsit mundo ; cessit Felix Nicholas.

²⁷ How Sir Fraunceys Aragonoys toke Fogiers in Normandy ; & of pe losse of Constantinoble by the Turks.²⁷ Ca. celiij.²⁸

¹ *pat om. H.*² *leaf 192, back.*³ *in to H. into C.*⁴ *pe om. H.*⁵ *special om. H.*⁶ *pe om. H.*⁷ *vnto H.*⁸ *afterward H.*⁹ *Almighty om. H.*¹⁰ *pat the H.*¹¹ *And kept not H.*¹² *A-fore om. H.*¹³ *Neuer H.*¹⁴ *in no maner wise om. H.*¹⁵ *on to H.*¹⁶ *pat om. H.*¹⁷ *send H.*¹⁸ *among H.*¹⁹ *was young of Iene comyn H ; was of Iene comen of C.*²⁰ *to H.*²¹ *A H.*²² *ceysyng H. ceasing C.*²³ *and of the H.*²⁴ *vn to H.*²⁵ *lowe H.*²⁶ *in his maner H. in this maner C.*²⁷⁻²⁸ *om. H.*²⁸ *Capitulum 25 H.*

In þe xxvij yere of King Henry þe vj^{te},¹ beyng trewes bitwen England & Fraunce,² A knight of þe Engliſſh partie named Sir Fraunceys Aragonys, toke A town of Normandy, called³ Fogiere, 4 Ayens þe trewes; of which takyng began moche sorow & losse, for þis was þe occasion bi which⁴ þe Frenshmen gat al Normandy &c.⁵ 6 About þis tyme þe Cite of Constantinoble, which was Imperia^l 7 Cite in al Grece, was taken bi þe Turkes infideles, which was 8 betrayed (as some hold Opinion), & pemp[er]or taken & slayn, & þat ryal chirch of Sancta Sophia robbed & despoyled, & þe reliques & ymages & þe Rode drawen Aboute þe strete; which was done in despite of Cristen feith. And sone after, al Cristen feith in Grece 12 perished & cessed. Ther wer many Cristen men slayn, & innumerable solde & put in Captiuite. by þe takyng of þis towne, þe Turkey gretly⁸ enhaunſed in pride; & it is A gret losse vnto al Cristendome.⁶

16 9 In þe xxvij yere¹⁰ was A parlement holden at Westmynster, & fro þens Adiourned to þe Blakfreres of¹¹ London, And after Cristenmasse, to¹² Westmynster Ageyn. And þis same yere, Robert of¹³ Cane, A man of þe West contre, with A few shippes, toke A 20 gret¹⁴ flote of shippes comyng out of þe baye, laden with salt,—which shippes wer of Prays, Flaundes, Holand & Zeland,—& brought þame to Hampton. Wherfor þe merchantes of England beyng in Flaundes, wer Arested in Bruges, Ippre, & oþer places, 24 & might nat be deliuered, ner þer dettes dischargied, til þei hadd made A poyntment for to pay for thamendes & hurtes of tho shippes; which was payed bi þe merchandes of þe staple, euery penny. And in like wise, þe merchauntez & godez beyng in 28 Danske wer also Arested, & made gret¹⁵ Amendes.

This same yere the¹⁶ Frenshmen in A mornyng toke, bi A trayn,¹⁷ þe town of Ponteralargee, & þer-in þe Lorde Fauconbrigge was taken prisoner. And after þat,¹⁸ in Decembre, Roan was 32 taken & lost, beyng þer-in þe Duke of Somersett, Edmund, þerle¹⁹ of Shrewsbury, whiche bi A-poyntment left Pleges, & left al²⁰

¹ tho in the yere of kyng harry xxvij H. In the yere of kyng henry xxvij C.

² fraunce and Englonð C. ³ named HC. ⁴ bi the which H.

⁵ &c om. H. ⁶⁻⁸ om. H. ⁷ leaf 193. ⁸ is gretly C.

⁹ This yere A squire of Englonð named Chalons duer armes with A knyzt of fraunce named Sir leuys de buyett to fore þe french kyng And ranne þe french knyght through wyth A spere And slew him in þe feld H.

¹⁰ yere xxvij C. ¹¹ at HC. ¹² on to H. ¹³ of om. H.

¹⁴ an hole H. ¹⁵ Agrete H. ¹⁶ the om. H. ¹⁷ by A trayn toke H.

¹⁸ þat om. H. ¹⁹ Erle H. ²⁰ lost H. loste C.

Normandy, &¹ come home. And during þe said² parlement þe Duke of Suthfolke was Arested & sent to³ þe Towre; & þer he⁴ was A moneth. And after, þe King did do feche him out, for which⁵ cause all þe communes of England wer in A gret rumor, what for⁶ deliueraunce of Angas & Maign, & after,⁷ losing of al Normandie, And in especial for þe deth of þe gode Duke of Gloucestre; In so myche þat, in some placez, men gadred togedre, & made pame capitaynes—as Blew-Berde & oþer, which wer resisted, taken, & 8 had Iustice, & died. And þen⁸ þe said Parlement was adiourned to Leycestre; and thidder þe King brought with him þe Duke of Southfolk. & when⁹ þe Comon house vnderstode þat he was oute of þe Toure, & come thider, þei desired to haue execucion on¹⁰ þem 12 þat wer cause of þe delyuerance of Normandy, & had bene cause of þe deth of þe¹¹ Duke of Gloucestre, & had sold Gascoygñ & Guyhan, of which þei named to-be gylty, þe Duke of Southfolk as chief, þe Lord Say, þe Bisshop of Salesbury, Danyel, & many moo. And 16 for to Apease þe comons, þe Duke of Southfolk was exiled out of Englonð v yere; & so, during þe Parlement, he went in to North-folk, & þer toke shipping forto go out of þe Reame of Englonð¹² vnto¹³ Fraunce. And þis yere,¹⁴ as he sayled on þe See, A shipp of 20 Werre called¹⁵ Nicholas of þe¹⁶ Tour mett with þis¹⁷ shippe, & founde him þer-in; whome þei toke out, & brought hym into þere shipp tofore þe Maister & Capitayns; & þer he was examined, & at last Iuged to þe¹⁸ deth. And so þei put him in A Cabone, & his 24 chapeleyn for to shryve him; And þat done, þei brought him in to Dover Rood, & þer sett him in-to þe boot, & þere smote of his hede, & brought þe body Alonde, vpon þe sondes, & sett þe hede per-by. And þis was done þe fyft day of Maye. loo! whatt 28 Availed him now, al his¹⁹ deliueraunce of Normandy &c.²⁰ And here yhe may leer²¹ how he was rewarded for þe deth of þe Duke of Gloucestre. This began sorow vpon sorew, & deth for deth.²²

²³ How this yere was thensurrexion in Kent of þe communes, 32
of whome Iake Cade, On Irishman, was Capitayn.²³
Ca. cclv.²⁴

¹ A H. ² same H. ³ in to HC. ⁴ he om. H.

⁵ for which of Ad. of which HC. ⁶ for the HC. ⁷ after for H.

⁸ þen om. H. ⁹ leaf 193, back. ¹⁰ of H. ¹¹ þe om. H.

¹² of Englonð om. H. ¹³ into HC. ¹⁴ yere om. H.

¹⁵ called the HC. ¹⁶ þe om. HC. ¹⁷ hys H. his C. ¹⁸ þe om. H.

¹⁹ þis H. ²⁰ &c om. H. ²¹ se H. here C. ²² deth &c. C.

²³⁻²⁴ om. H. ²⁴ Capitulum 26 H.

This yere of our Lorde M^t cccc l, was þe gret grace of þe Iubilee at Rome; wher was gret pardon, in-so-mych þat, frome¹ al place; in² Cristendome, gret multitude of peple resorted thider.

4 þis yeere³ was A gret Assembled &⁴ gadering togedre of þe⁵ comons of Kent in gret nombre, & made an Insurrexiō, & rebelled Ageynst þe Kyng & his lawes, & ordeynd þame⁶ A capitayn called Iohn Cayd, An Irish man, which named him self Mortymer, Cosyn 8 to þe Duke of Yorke. And þis Capitayn held thise men togedre, & made ordinance; Among þame, & brought þame to Blak-Heth, where he made A biñ of petiriones to þe King & his Counsel, & shewed what iniuries & oppressions þe Poer comons suffred; & al 12 vnder colour forto come⁷ to his Abone; & he had A gret multitude of peple. And þe xvij⁸ day of Iuny, þe King,⁹ many lordes, 10 Capitaynes & men of Werre, went toward him to þe Blakk-heeth. And when þe Capitayne of Kent vnderstode þe commyng of þe 16 King with so gret¹¹ puyssaunce, he¹² with-drew him with his peple to Seuenoke, A litel village. And þe¹³ xxvij¹⁴ day of Iun, he¹⁵ beyng with-drawn & gone, þe King come, with his Armee sett in ordre & enbatailed, to þe Blak-Heth, And, by Aduise of his Counsel, 20 sent Sir Vmfrey Stafford, knight, & William Stafford, squyer, two valiaunt Captanes, with certeyn peple, to feght with þe Capytane, & to take¹⁶ & bryng him & his Accessories to þe King, which went to Seuenoke; & per þe Capytane with his felisshepe mett 24 with hem, & fought Ayenst þame,¹⁷ & in conclusion slew þame bothe, & as many as Abode & wold nat yheld þame ner flee. Duryng þis sharmysh fiñ¹⁸ A grete variaunce Amonges þe¹⁹ lordes men, & þe²⁰ comon peple beyng on Blak-Heth Ayens þe²¹ lordes & Capitayns, 28 sayng playnly þat þei wold go to þe Capitayn of Kent, to Assist and help him,²² but if þei might haue execucion of þe traytours beyng²³ About þe King, to which²⁴ þe King said nay; And þei said playnly þat²⁵ þe Lorde Say, Tresourer of England, the Bisshope of 32 Salesbury, ²⁶þe Baron of Dudley,²⁶ þabbot of Gloucestre, Danyel, & Trevillian, & many mo, wer traytours, & worthy to be dede.

¹ in H. ² of H.

³ yere was sir Thomas Oryell ouerthrown At Fermyngham And many English men slayn and takyn prisoners This same yere H.

⁴ A H. ⁵ þe om. H. ⁶ hym C. ⁷ haue come H. ⁸ vij H.

⁹ king with H. ¹⁰ leaf 194. ¹¹ grete A H. ¹² he om. Ad.

¹³ þe om. H. ¹⁴ xxvij^{ti} H. ¹⁵ he om. H. ¹⁶ take hym HC.

¹⁷ them Ayenst H. ¹⁸ þer fell H. ¹⁹ þe om. H. ²⁰ þe om. H.

²¹ þer H. their C. ²² him om. H. ²³ beyng om. H.

²⁴ to where H. wher to C. ²⁵ þat om. H. ²⁶ om. H.

herfore, forto¹ please þe lordes menys & also some of þe Kinges house, þe Lorde Say was Arested & sent to þe Toure of London. And þan þe King, hering tydynges of þe deth & ouerthrowing of þe Staffordes, with-drew him to London, & fro thens² to Kylling-4 worth; ffor þe King ne þe lordes durst nat trust þer own household meney &c.³ Then, after þat þe Capytan had þis victory vpon þise⁴ Staffordes, Anone he toke Sir Humfrey Salett, & his brigantines smytten ful of gylted nayles, & also his gilted spores, & 8 Araied him like A lorde & a Capi⁵stain, & resorted with al his meyney, & also mo þan he had tofore, to þe Blak-Heth. Ageyn to whome come perchebisshope of Caunterbury & þe Duke of Bokyngham to þe Blak-Heth, and spake with him; &, as it was said, þei 12 found him ⁶witty in his talkyng & ⁷request; & so they departed.⁶ And þe third day of Iuyl he come & entred into London with al his peple, & ⁸did make A ⁹cry per¹⁰ in þe Kinges name & in his name,¹¹ þat no man shold robb ne take no mannes gode bot if he 16 payd for it; & come ridyng thugh þe Cite in gret pride, & smote his swerde vpon London stone in Canwykstrete. And he, beyng in þe Cite, sent to þe Towre forto haue þe Lord Saye; & so þei sett him & brought him to þe Guyld-Hall before þe Mayre & þe 20 Aldremen, wher he was examined. And þe lorde¹² sayd þat¹³ he wolde & ought to bene Iuged by his peres. And þe communes of Kent toke him by force fro þe Mair &¹⁴ officers þat kept him, & toke him to A prest to shryve him. & er he might be half 24 shryven, þei brought him to þe Standard in Chepe, & per smote of his hede: ¹⁵& thus died þe Lorde Say, Tresourer of Englonde. After þis, þei sett his hede on¹⁶ A spere, & bare it Aboute in þe Citee. And þe same day, Aboute¹⁷ þe¹⁸ Mylle-Ende, Crowmer was beheaded. 28 And þe¹⁹ day before, at afternone, þe Capytan, with certeyn of his meyney, went to Philipp Malpas house, & robbed him, & toke Away moche gode. And fro thense he went to Seynt Margret Patyns, to one Cherstis hous, & robbed him, ²⁰& toke A way moche 32 gode.²⁰ Also, At which robbyng diuerse men of London of per neghburse wer at it, & toke part with him.²¹ For þis robbyng þe

¹ to H. ² thens vn to A. ³ &c. om. H. ⁴ the HC.

⁵ leaf 194, back. ⁶⁻⁸ om. H. ⁷ and his C.

⁸ And per H. and there C. ⁹ A om. HC. ¹⁰ per om. HC.

¹¹ name om. H. ¹² And he HC. ¹³ þat om. HC. ¹⁴ And the H.

¹⁵ hede on: yhos saul god haue mercy Amen) H. hede on whos soule Almyghty god haue pite and mercy Amen. C.

¹⁶ vp on H. ¹⁷ Aboute om. H. ¹⁸ at H. ¹⁹ þe same H.

²⁰⁻²¹ om. H. ²¹ them H.

peples hertes fih fro him, & euery thryfty man was A-forde¹ forto²
 be serued in like wise. for *per* was many A-man, in London þat
 Abbayted and wold fayn³ haue seen A comon robbery, which
 4 Almighty⁴ God for-bidd! for it is to suppose þat,⁵ if he had nat
 robbed, he might haue gone ferre er he had be *with-stonde*; ffor þe
 King & al the ⁶lordes of þe Reame of Englonð wer departed,
 except the Lorde Scalez þat kept þe Toure of London.⁷ And þe
 8 fyft day of Iuyl he gert⁸ smyte of A mannes hede in Southwerk.
 And þe night after, þe Mair of London, þe Aldermen & þe⁹ com-
 munes of þe Cite, concluded to dryve Away þe Capytane & his
 hoste, and sent to þe Lorde Scales in¹⁰ þe Toure, & to Mathew
 12 Gogh, A Capitayn of Normandie, þat þei wold þat night Assail þe
 Capitayn with þem of Kent. & so þey did, & come to London
 Brigge, in to Southwerk, er þe Capitayn had any knowlage *per*-of; &
 þe¹¹ þei fought with þem þat kept¹² þe brigge. & þe Kentissh men
 16 went to harnoyes, & come to þe brigge, & shott & fought with þame,
 & gat þe brigge, & made þame of Londone to flee, & slew many of
 þame, & þis endured al þe night, to & fro, til ix of þe⁹ clokk on þe
 morne. & at¹³ last þei brent þe drawbrigge, wher many of þame of
 20 London wer drowned. In which night, Sutton, an Alderman, was
 slayn; Roger Hesant, & Mathew Gogh, & many oþer. And, after
 this, þe Chaunceler of Englonð sent to þe Capytane A general par-
 done¹⁴ for him, & Another for all his meyney. And þan þei
 24 departed fro Southwerk, euery man home to his hous. And when
 þei wer al departed & gone, *per* wer proclamacions made in Kent,
 Southsea, & in¹⁵ oþer places, þat what man coude take þe Capytane,
 quyk or ded, shold haue A m^t mark. And after þis, one Alexander
 28 Iden, A squyer of Kent, toke him in A gardyn in Southsex; & in
 þe takyng þe Capytane, Iohn Cade was slayn, & after beheded, &
 his hede sett on London Brigge. And þan Anone after,¹⁶ þe King
 come in-to Kent, & did his Iustices sitt at Canterbury, & enquire
 32 who wer Accessories & chief cause of þis Insurreccion. And *per*
 wer viij men Iuged to dethe in one day, & in othir places, mo.
 And fro þens þe King went vnto¹⁷ Successex, & so¹⁸ in-to þe West

¹ Arested H. ² to H. ³ fayn om. H. ⁴ almighty om. H.

⁵ þat om. HC. ⁶ leaf 195. ⁷ of London om. H.

⁸ he did do H. he dide done C.

⁹ þe om. H. ¹⁰ to HC. ¹¹ þer om. H. ¹² And H.

¹³ at the H. ¹⁴ pardon generall H. pardon general C.

¹⁵ in om. H. ¹⁶ And Anon after then H. And anone after thenne C.

¹⁷ in to H. ¹⁸ so om. HC.

contre, where A litel before was slayn þe Bisshop of Salisbury. And þis¹ yere so many wer² Iuged to deth, þat xxij hedes stode³ vpon⁴ London Brigge at ones.

**5 Of þe felde þat þe⁶ Duke of York toke at Brenthethe in Kent; 4
And of þe birth of Prince Edward; And of þe first batail
of⁷ Seynt Albones, wher þe Duke of Somersett was slayn.⁵
Ca. cc lvi.⁸**

In þe xxx yere of King Henry þe vi^{te}, þe⁹ Duke of York came⁸ out of þe Marche of Walys, with þerle of Devonshire &¹⁰ Lorde Cobbam, &¹¹ gret puyssance, for reformation of certayn Iniuries & wronges, & also¹² to haue Iustice of¹³ certeyn lordes beyng¹⁴ About þe King; and toke A¹⁵ felde at Brentheth beside Derthford in Kent, 12 which was A strong feld. For which cause þe King, with al þe lordes of the land, went vnto¹⁶ Blakheth with A gret & A strong¹⁷ multitude of peple, armed & ordeyned for þe werr in þe best wise. And when þei had mustered on þe Blakheth, certeyn lordes wer sent to him 16 for to trete & make A-poyntment with him, which wer, þe Bisshope of Ely &¹⁸ þe Bisshop of Wynchestre, & þe Erles of Salesbury & of Warrewick. And þei concluded þat þe Duke of Somersett shold be had to warde, & to Aunswer to such Articles as þe Duke of 20 York sholde put on¹⁹ him; and þan þe Duke of York shold brek his felde, & come to þe King, which was²⁰ promised bi þe Kyng. And so þe King commaunded þat þe Duke of Somersett shold be had in warde; & þen þe Duke of York breke vp his felde, & come 24 to þe King. And when he was comen, contrary to þe promisses tofore²¹ made, þe Duke of Somersett was present in þe felde, Awayting & chief about þe King, & made þe Duke of York ride tofore as A prisoner thugh London; & after þei wold haue put 28 him in holde. But A noyse Aroose þat perl of Marche, his son, was commyng with²² x mⁱ men to London-ward, wher-of þe Kyng & his counsel fered. And þan they concluded þat þe Duke of York sholde departe at his wiñ.

32

¹ þis same H. this same C.

² were so many H. were soo many C. ³ leaf 195, back.

⁴ on H. at C. ⁵⁻⁵ om. H. ⁶ þat Ad. that the C. ⁷ at C.

⁸ Capitulum 27 H. ⁹ In the yere xxx the HC.

¹⁰ & þe H. and the C. ¹¹ with H.

¹² also om. H. ¹³ on HC. ¹⁴ beyng om. H.

¹⁵ An H. ¹⁶ vn to the H. vnto the C. ¹⁷ & A strong om. H.

¹⁸ and om. H. ¹⁹ to H. ²⁰ was att H. wa3 al C. ²¹ Afore HC.

²² Here H breaks off imperfect.

About þis tyme began gret diuision in Spriusse bitwene þe gret Maister & þe knightes of þe Duche ordre, which wer lordes of þat Contre; ffor þe communes & townes rebelled ¹ Ageynst þe lordes, & made so gret werre þat, at þe last, þei called þe King of Pole to be þer lorde; which ² King come, & was worsshipfully receyved, & laid siege to þe castel of Marienburgh (which was þe chief Castel & strenght of al þe land), & wan it, & drove out þe Maister of 8 Dansk & al othir places of þat land. And so þei þat had bene lordes many yeres, lost al þere seynorie & possessions in þo landes.

And in ³ þe yere of þencarnacion of our Lord M^t iiii^e liij, vpon ⁴ Seynt Edwardes day, Quene ⁵ Margaret was delyuered of 12 A fair prince, which was named Edwarde. þat same day Iohn Norman was chosen for to be Mair of London, And on ⁶ þe day þat he shold take his othe at Westmynstre, he went thider by water with al þe craftes, wher Afore-tyme þe Mair, Aldremen, & al þe 16 craftes rode on ⁷ horse back: which was neuer vsed afore, ⁸ but seth ⁹ þat tyme þei haue gone euer bi water, in barges.

Yhe haue wel vnderstond before, ¹⁰ how þat, contrary to the promise of þe King, & also þe conclusions taken betwene þe King & 20 þe Duke of York at Brentheth, þe Duke of Somersett went nat to warde, but Abode about þe King, & had gret rewl. And Anone aftir, he was made Capytayn of Caley, & rewled þe King & his reame as he wold. Wherfor þe gret lordes of þe Reame, & also þe 24 communes, wer nat pleased, for which cause þe Duke of Yorke, þerles of Warrewick & of Salesbury, with many knyghtes & squyers & moche peple, come for to remeue þe said Duke of Somersett & othir fro þe Kyng. And þe King, hering of þe 28 commyng, thought by his counsel forto haue gone Westward, & nat for to mete with þame: and he ¹¹ had with him þe Duke of Somersett, þe Duke of Bokyngham, þerle of Stafford, þerle of Northumbreland, Lorde ¹² Clifford, & many oþer. And what tyme 32 þat þe Duke of York & his felisship vnderstode þat þe King was departed with þise said lordes fro London, Anone he chaunged þe ¹³ way, & costed þe Contre, & come to Seynt Albons ¹⁴ þe xxij day of May, & ¹⁵ mett with þe Kyng, to whome the Kyng sent 36 certayn lordes, & desired him to kepe þe peax, & departed, but in

¹ leaf 196.

² the which C.

³ in om. C.

⁴ on C.

⁵ the quene C.

⁶ on om. C.

⁷ a C.

⁸ after C.

⁹ syn C.

¹⁰ tofore C.

¹¹ he om. C.

¹² the lord C.

¹³ his C.

¹⁴ leaf 196, back.

¹⁵ & there C.

conclusion), whiles þei treted on þat one side, þerle of Warwik, with þe Marchemen & with othir, entred þe town on þat other side, & fought Ayenst þe King & his *partie*: & so began þe batail & feghtyng, which endured A gode while, but in conclusion þe Duke ⁴ of York apteyned & had þe victorie of þat Iorney; In which was slayn þe Duke of Somerset, þerle of Northumbreland & þe Lorde Clifford, with ¹ many knightez & squyers, & many ² hurt. And on þe morne after þei brought þe Kinge in gret Astate to London, and ⁸ he was ³ looged in þe Bisshop paleys of London. And sone ⁴ After was A gret parlement; In which parlement þe Duke of York was made Protector of Englonð, & þerl of Warwick Capytane of Caley, & þerle of Salesbury Chaunceler of Englonð. And al suche ¹² persones as had the rewl tofore About þe King, wer sett Aparte, & might nat reul as þei did Afore.⁵

In this same yeer died Pope Nicholas þe Fyft; & after him was Calixt þe Third. This Calist was A Catalane, & an olde man ¹⁶ when he was chosen, & continually seek; wherfore he might nat performe his zeles & desire þat he had conceyved Aгенst þe Turke.⁶ & þe cause of lettyng þirow was his Age & sekeness. This Calixte instituted & ordeyned þe Feste of þe ⁷ Transfiguracion of our Lorde ²⁰ to be halowed on Seynt Sixt day in August, bicause of þe gret victory þat þei of Hungary had Aгенst þe Turkes þat same day he was chosen Pope, in þe yeer of our Lord Ml iiij^o lv, and died þe yere M[†] iiij^o lviiij, þat same day þat he ordeyned þe Fest of þe ²⁴ Transfiguracion to be halowed.

In þis same yere fiH A gret Affray in London Aгенst þe Lumbardes. The cause began for ⁸ A yong man toke A dagger fro A Lumbard, & brake it; wherfor þe yong man on þe morne was ²⁸ sent fore to come tofore þe Mair & Aldermen, & þer, for þe offense, he was commytted to warde. And ⁹ then þe Mair departed fro þe GuyldhaH for to go home to his dyner, but in þe Chepe þe yong men of þe mercerie, for þe moste parte Apprentises, held þe Mair ³² & Shyreves stil in Chepe, & wold nat suffre him to departe vnto þe tyme þat þare felow, which was commytted to warde, wer delyuered; & so by force þei rescued þer felowe fro prisone, & þat done, þe Mair & Shyreves departed, & the prisoner was ¹⁰ delyuered, ³⁶ which, if he had be put to prisone, had be in Iubardie of his lyfe.

¹ And C. ² many mo C. ³ which was C. ⁴ anone C.

⁵ tofore C. ⁶ he had agenst the turke conceyued C.

⁷ of Ad. of the C. ⁸ bycause C. ⁹ leaf 197. ¹⁰ was om C.

And pan¹ began A Rumor in þe Cite Ayenst þe Lumbardes, And þe same evenyng þe handcrafty peple of þe townd Arose, & come² to the Lumbardes houses, & dispoyled & robbed³ diuerse of þame; wherfore þe Mair & Aldremen come with þe honest peple of þe town, & drofe þame thens, & sent some of thame þat had stollen, to Newgate. And þe yong man þat was rescued bi his felowes saw þis gret Rumor, Affray & robbery, folowed⁴ of his first mevyng to þe Lumbard; he⁵ departed & went to Westmynster to sanctuary, or els it had cost him his lyfe, ffor Anone After come down An oper determyne for to do Iustice on al þame þat so rebelled in þe Cite Ayens þe Lumbardes, vpon⁶ which satt with þe Mayr þat tyme William Marow, þe Duke of Bokyngham, & many oper lordes, for to se execucion done, bot þe comons of þe Cite secretly made þame redy, & did Arme þame in þer houses, & wer in purpose forto haue rongen þe comon beß which is named Bow Beß; but þei wer lett bi sad men, which come to þe knowlege of þe Duke of Bokyngham & othir lordes. & forthwith⁷ þei Arose, for þei durst ne lenger Abide, for þei doubted þat þe hole Cite shold haue risen Ayenst þeme, but yett neuer-þe-lesse, ij or iiij of þe Cite were Iuged to deth for þis robbery, & wer honged at Tiburn.

Anone After, þe King, þe⁸ Quene, & othir lordes, rode to Covente, & with-drew þame fro London for this cause And a liteß⁹ to-fore, þe Duke of Yorke was sent fore to Grenewiche, & þer was dischargied of þe protectorshipp, & þerle of¹⁰ Salesbury of þe¹¹ Chauncelershippe. And after þis þei wer sent for by priuey seal forto come to Covente, where þei wer almoste deceyved, & þerle of Warwick also, And shold haue bene destroyed if þei had nat seen wele too.

How Lord¹² Egremond was take by þerle of Salesbury sonnes. And of þe robberyng of Sandwyche. ca^m. cclvij.

This yere wer taken iiij gret fisshes bitwen Greth & London: 32 one¹³ was called 'mors marine,' þe secund, A 'swerd fyssh,' & þe other tweyn wer whalles. In þis same yere for certeyn, þer was An¹⁴ Affray in¹⁵ þe North contre bitwene Lorde¹⁶ Egremond & þerle of Salesbury sonnes; & when thay had taken him, was had to

¹ pan om. C.² ran C.³ & robbed & despoyled C.⁴ ensyewed C.⁵ he om. C.⁶ on C.⁷ incontynent C.⁸ þe om. C.⁹ leaf 197, back.¹⁰ And my lord of C.¹¹ his C.¹² the lord C.¹³ that one C.¹⁴ was An om. C.¹⁵ done in C.¹⁶ the lord C.

London), & per¹ condemned in a gret somme of money to þe said Erle of Salesbury, & þe for committed to prison in Newgate, in London, wher, whan he had be A certayn space, he brak þe prison, & iij prisoners with him, & ascaped & went his way. 4

Also þis yere þe perle of Warrewikk & his wife went to Caley with A fayr ffelaushipp, & toke possession of his office. About þis tyme was A gret reformation of many monasteris of Religion, in diuerse parties of þe worlde, which wer reformed after þe first 8 Institution), & continued in many Places. Also About þis tyme þe craft of enprynteng was fyrst found in Magynce in Almain, which craft is multiplied thugh þe world in many places, & bokes ben had gret chepe & in gret nommbre, bicause of þe same 12 craft.

This same yere was A gret batail in þe marches bitwen Hungary & Turkey, at A place called Septedrade, where innumerable Turkes wer slayn, more by miracle þan bi mannes hond, ffor onely 16 þe hondes of God smote þeme. Seynt Iohn of Capestrane was þe present, & prouoked þe Cristen peple, beyng þen Aferde after to pursew þe Turkes, wher ane Infinite multitude wer slayn & destroyed. þe Turkes said þat A gret nombre of Armed men 20 folowed þame, þat þei wer Aferde to turn Ageyn: ² they wer holy Aungels.

This same yere þe prisoners of Newgate in London brake þe prison, & ³ kept þe gate A long while; but at þe ⁴ last þe town gett 24 þe prison one them), & þen þei wer put in feteris & Irons, & were sore punisshed, in example of other. In this yere also was A gret erthquake in Naples, in-so-moche þat per perisshed xl M^t peple þat sanke þe into þerth. Item, in þe yeer xxxvj, Seynt Osmunde, 28 somtyme Bisshope of Salesbury, was Canonized at Rome bi Pope Calixt; & þe xvj day of Iuil he was translated at Salesbury bi þe perchebisshope of Caunterbury & many other bisshopes. And in August after, Sir Piers ⁵ de Breisey seneschal of Normandy, with 32 þe Capytane of Depe & many oþer Capitaynes & men of Werre, went to þe See with A gret Navy, & come to Downes by night; & on þe morne erly, before day, þei londed & come to Sandwyche, both bi land & water, & toke the town), & ryfled & dispoyled it, & 36

¹ sones, the sayd lord Egremond whome they had taken was C.

² leaf 198.

³ prison, & wente vpon the leedes / & fought agenst them of the cyte / & C.

⁴ þe om. C.

⁵ There is a gap in C from here to p. 527, line 1.

toke many prisoners, & left þe town al naked,—which was A rich town & mych gode þer-in,—& had with þame many ryche prisoners. In this same yere, in many places of Fraunce, Almaign, 4 Flaundres, Holand & Ze[land, men, women &] children gadred þame by gret Companyes forto go on pilgrmage to Seynt Micheles Mount in Normandy, which come fro fer contrees; wherof þe peple mervailed; & many supposed þat some wicked spirite meved þame 8 so to doo; but it endured nat long, by cause of þe long way, & also for lak of vitail as þei went.

In this yere Reynold Pecok, Bisshop of Chichester, was founden an heretike, & þe iij day of Decembre was Abiured at Lambeth, in 12 þe presence of perchebisshop of Caunterbury & many bisshoppes & doctoures & lordes temperel; & his bokes brent at Paules crosse.

Yhe haue herd tofore how certayn lordes wer slayn at Seynt Alboyns, wherfor was euermore A grutche & wrath had, by þe 16 ¹ heires of þame þat wer so slayn; Ayenst þe Duke of Yorke, þerles of Warwick & of Salesbury. Wherfor þe Kyng, by þavise of his Councel, sent for thame to London: to which place þe Duke of York came, þe xxvj day of Ianyuer, with iiij^c men, & logied at 20 Bernardes Castel in his own place, And þe xv day of Ianiuer come þe perle of Salesbury with v^c men, & was logged in therber, his own place. And þen come þe Duke of Excetre & of Somersett, with viij^c men, & lay without Temple Barr. & þerl of Northumbreland, 24 Lord Clifford & Lord Egremont, with xv^c men, & loged without þe town. And þe Mayr þat tyme, Ieffray Boleyn, kept gret watche, with þe comons of þe Cite, & rode About þe Cite by Holborn & Flete Strete with a v M^t men wel Armed & Araied for to kepe þe 28 pees, And þe xiiij day of Feuerer, þe perle of Warwick come to London fro Caleys, wel beseen & worsshypfully, with vj^c men in rede Iaquettes, browdred with A ragged staff behynd & Afore; & he was logged at þe Gray Freres, And þe xvij day of Marche þe 32 King come to London & þe Quene; & þer was A concorde & pees made Among those lordes, & þei wer sett in pees. And vpon our Lady Day, þe xv day of Marche þe ² of our Lorde M^t iiij^c lvij, þe King, Quene, & al pise lordes went in procession at Poules in 36 London. And Anone after, þe King & þe lordes departed. In þis yere was A gret Affray in Flet Strete bitwen men of Court & men of þe same stret: In which Affray þe Quenes Attorney was slayn.

¹ leaf 198, back.

² þer = the year.

How þe Kinges howshold mad Affray Ayenst þerle of Warrewikk; & of þe Iourney at Blorehethe. Ca^m. cclviij.

Also þis same yeer, als þerle of Warwyk was at A Councel in Westmynster, al þe Kinges houshold meyney gadred þame to-gedre 4 for to have slayn þe said Erle; bot, bi help of God & of his frendes, he recouered his barge, & escaped þare evyl enterprise, how wel þe Coques come renyng out with spyttes & pestelles Ayenst him. And þe same Day he rode to-ward Warrewik; And sone After he 8 gate him A commission, & went ouer þe see to Caleys. Sone after þis, þerle of Salesbury comyng to London, was encountred at Bloreheth ¹ with Lorde Awdeley, and moche oþer peple ordeyned forto haue destressed him; bot he, having knowlege þat he shold 12 be mett, was Accompanied with his ij sonnes, Sir Thomas & Sir Iohn Nevill, & A gret felawshipp of gode men. & so þei mett & fought to-gedre; wher þerle of Salesbury wan þe feld; And þe Lorde Awdley was slayn, & many gentilmen of Chesshire, & moche 16 peple hurt; And therles ij sonnes wer hurt; & goyng homeward afterward, þei wer taken, & had to Chestre bi þe Quenes meyney.

After, Calixt Pius was Pope, & was chosen þis yere M^t iiij^e lvii./ And he was called before, 'Eneas'; An Eloquent man & A 20 poete laureat; he was embassatoure of þemperor Afore tyme, & he wrote in þe Councel of Basile A noble tretise for þe Auctorite of þe same; Also he Canonized Seynt Katerine of Senys. This Pope ordeyned gret Indulgences & pardon to þem þat wold go Werre 24 Ayenst þe Turke, & wrote An Epistle to þe gret Turke, exorting him to be-come Cristen. & in þe ende he ordeynd A passage Ayenst þe Turks at Ancone, to which moche peple drew, out of al parties of Cristendome; of which peple he sent many home Ayene, 28 be-cause þei suffised nat. And Anone after, he dyed at þe said Ankone, yere of our Lord M^t iiij^e lxiij, xiiij day of Auguste.

How Andrew Trollop & þe Soudioure of Caleys forsoke þe Duke of Yorke, & per Maister perl of Warrewik, in 32 the West contre. Cap. cclix.

The Duke of York, þerles of Warwik & of Salesbury, saw þat þe gouernance of þe Reame stode moste by þe Quene & hir Councel, & how þe gret princes of þe lond wer nat called to 36 Councel bot sett A-parte; & nat onely so, but þat it was seid

¹ leaf 199.

through þe reame þat the¹ said lordes shold be destroyed vtterly, as
it² openly was shewed att Bloreheth bi þame þat wold haue slayn
þerl of Salesbury, þan þei, for saluacion of þer lyves, & also for
4 þe comon wele of þe reame, thought forto remedie thise thinges,
Assembled þame to-gedre with moche peple, & toke A feld³ in þe
West contre; to which þerle of Warwik come fro Caleys, with
many of þe olde soudiours, as Andrew Trollop & other. In whose
8 wisdom, as for þe werre, he mych trusted. And when þei wer
thus Assembled, & made þer feld, þe King sent out his commissions
& priuey seales vnto al þe lordes of his realme, to come & Awayt
on him in þer moste defensable wise. And so euery man come, in
12 suche wise þat þe King was stronger, & had moche more peple þan
þe Duke of York & þerles of Warrewik & of⁴ Salesbury. For it
is here to be noted þat euery lord in Englonde at þis tyme durst nat
disobey þe Quene, for she rewled pesibly al þat was done About þe
16 Kyng, which was A gode, simple, & Innocent man, And þan when
þe King was comen to þe place wher al⁵ þei were; þe Duke of
York & his felasship had made þer felde in þe stronggest wise, &
had proposed verely to abyden & have foughten; bot in þe night
20 Andrew Trollop & al tholde soudiours of Caleys, with A gret
felasship, sodenly departed out of þe Dukes oost⁶ & went strait
vnto þe Kinges feld, wher þei wer receyved joyously, for þei knew
þe entent of þe othir lordes, & Also þe maner of þer felde. And
24 þen þe Duke of York, with þe oper lordes, seyng þame so descevyd,
toke A councel shortly þat⁷ same night, & departed fro þe felde,
levyng behynde þame þe moste parte of þer peple to kepe þe feld til
on þe morne. Then þe Duke of York, with his second son,
28 departed thugh Walez toward Ireland, levyng his eldest son þerl
of⁸ Marche, with þerles of Warwyck & of⁹ Salisbury, which
to-gedre with iij or iiij persones, rode strait vnto Devenshyre, &
þar, bi help & Ayd of one Denham, A squyer, which gat for them
32 A shipp which cost xcxxx¹⁰ nobles, & with þe same shipp sayled fro
þens in to Garnesey, & þer refresshed þame, & fro þens sayled to
Caleys, wher þei wer receyved in-to þe Castel bi þe postern, er þei
of þe town knew of it; & þe Duke of York toke ship in Wales, &
36 sayled ouer in-to Ireland, wher he was wel receyved.

¹ tho C. ² it om. C. ³ leaf 199, back. ⁴ of om. C.

⁵ as C. ⁶ hooste C. ⁷ in that C. ⁸ of the C.

⁹ of om. C. ¹⁰ cc xx C.

¹ How therles of Marche, Warrewik & Salesbury, entred into Caleys; & how² perle of Warwik went in to Ireland. ca. celix.³

Then King Henry, beyng *with* his oost in þe felde, nat knowing 4 of þis sodeyn departing, on þe morne fond none in þe felde of þe said lordes, sent forth in al haste men to folow & persue after, to tak þame; but þei mett nat *with* hem, as God wolde. Then⁴ þe King went to Ludlow; & despoiled the Castel & þe town, & sent 8 þe Duches of York, *with* hir childer, to þe⁵ Lady of Bokingham, hir suster, where she was kepte long aftir. & forth*with* þe King ordeynd þe Duke of Somerset Capitayn of Caleys; & thise othir lordes so departed as Afore is said, wer proclamyd rebelles & gret 12 traytours. Then the Duke of Somerset toke to him al þe sowdioures þat departed fro þe felde, & made him redy in al haste to go to Caleys, & take possession of his office. And when he come, he founde perl of Warwik *per*in as Captayn, & perles of Marche & 16 Salisbury also; & þan he loded by Scales, & went to Guysnes, & *per* he was receyved. And it fortunyd þat some of þe shippes þat come ouer *with* him come in-to Caleys haven bi *per* fre wiþ, for þe shipmen ought more favour to perl of Warwik þan to þe Duke of 20 Somerset. In which shippes wer taken diuerse men, as Ieuy Fynkhiß, Iohn Felaw, Kaylles & Parser, which wer beheded sone after in Caleys. And after þis, dayly come men ouer þe⁶ See to pise lordes to Caleys, & began to wex strenger,⁷ And þei borrowed 24 moche gode of þe Staple. And on þat othir side þe Duke of Somerset, beyng in Guysnes, gat peple to him, which come out & scarmusshed *with* þame of Caleys, & þei⁸ *with* þame; which endured many dayes; and⁹ moche peple dayly come ouer þe see 28 to¹⁰ these lordes. Then on A tyme, by thavyse of councel, þe lordes at Caleis sent ouer Maister Denham, *with* A gret felawship, to Sandwyche, &¹¹ toke þe town, & *per*-in þe Lorde Ryvers, & þe Lorde Scales his son, & toke many shippes in þe haven, & broght þam al 32 to Caleys; *with* which shippes, ¹²many mariniers of *per* fre wiþ come to Caleys to serue perle of Warrewik.

And after þis, perle of Warwik, bi þavise of þe lordes, toke al

¹ leaf 200. ² as Ad. how C. ³ celix C. ⁴ And thenne C.

⁵ my C. ⁶ þe om. C. ⁷ stronger & stronger C.

⁸ they of Caleys C.

⁹ many dayes / During thus this same scarmuchyng / C.

¹⁰ come over vnto C. ¹¹ which C.

¹² leaf 200, back.

his shippes, & manned þam wel, & sayled his¹-self into Ireland fro to speke *with* þe Duke of York, & to take his Advice how þei shold entre in-to England ageyn. And when he had ben *per*, & done his
4 erandes, he returned toward² Caleys, & brought with him his moder, þe Countesse of Salesbury. Tho was³ commyng in þe west contre, vpon þe See, þe Duke of Excestre, Admiral of Englon^d, beyng in þe Grace of Dieu, Accompanied *with* many shippes of werre;
8 which⁴ mett *with* þe flete of þerle of Warwik⁵; but þei fought nat, for þe substance of þe peple beyng *with* þe Duke of Excestre ought better with & more fauor to þerle⁶ þan to him; & þei departed & come to Caleys in saufte, blissed be God! Then þe Kinges counceel,
12 seyng þat these lordes had goten these shippes fro Sandwiche, & taken Lorde⁷ Ryvers & his son, ordeyned A Garnyson at Sandwiche, to Abide & kepe þe town, & made one Mountforte, Capytan of þe town, & warned⁸ þat no man, ne vitail, ne merchant þat
16 shold go vnto⁹ Flaundres, shold nat go vnto¹⁰ Caleys. Then þei of Caleys seyng þis, made out Maister Denhame & many oþer, to go to Sandwich. & so þei did, & Assayled þe town by water & by lond, & gat it, & brought Mountforte *per* Capitayn ouer þe See to
20 Risebanke, & *per* smote of his hede; & yet dayly men come ouer to þame fro¹¹ al parties of England.

How þerles of Marche, of Warwik & of Salesbury entred in to England. And of Northampton felde¹² wher diuerse lordes wer slayn. Cap^m. cclxj.

After¹³ þis, þe said Erles of Marche, of¹⁴ Warwik & of Salisbury come ouer to Dover *with* moche peple, & landed *per*¹⁵; to whome al þe contrey drew, & come to London Armed; & for to lat þe
28 lordes of þe Kinges Councell know *per* entent & thought, þei¹⁶ assembled þame, & told þame þat þei entended no harme vnto the Kinges person, sauf þat þei wold put fro him such persones as wer About him, & so departed fro London *with* A gret puyssaunce
32 toward Northampton, wher þe King was, Accompayned *with* many lordes, & had made A strong felde *with*-out þe town. & ¹⁷ there bothe parties mett, & was foughten A gret batail, In which wer¹⁸

¹ hym C. ² ayenetoward C. ³ And C. ⁴ which om. C.

⁵ met with therle of Warwyk & his flete C.

⁶ therle of Warrewyk C. ⁷ the lord C. ⁸ warned om. C.

⁹ in to C. ¹⁰ in to C. ¹¹ out of C.

¹² And of the felde of Northampton C. ¹³ And after C. ¹⁴ of om. C.

¹⁵ ther lounded C. ¹⁶ knowe theyr trouth and also theyr entent C.

¹⁷ leaf 201. ¹⁸ batayll were C.

slayn þe Duke of Bokynham, perl of Shrewesbury, Vicount¹ Beamont, Lorde² Egremont, & many knyghtes & squyers, & other Also; And þe King his³ self taken in þe feld, & afterward brought to London. And Anone After⁴ was A parlement at Westmynster, 4 During which parlement þe Duke of York come out of Ireland, with þerle of Rutland rydyng with A gret ffelasship in-to þe paleys at Westmynster, & toke þe Kinges paleys, & come in-to þe parlement chamber, & per toke þe Kinges place, & clamed þe 8 Crown as his propre enheritance & right, & kast forth in writing his title, & also how he was rightful heyr; wherfor was moche to doo; but in conclusion it was Apoynted & concluded þat Kyng Henry shold regne & be King during his Naturel lyfe, for-as-myche 12 as he had be so long King, & was possessed; & after his deth þe Duke of York shold be King, & his heires after him; & forthwith he shold be proclaimed heyr Apparent, & shold also be Protectour of⁵ Englonde during þe Kinges lyfe, with many oþer thinges 16 ordeyned in þe same parlement. And if King Henry during his life went fro þis Apoyntment, or any Article concluded in þe said parlement, he shold be deposed, & þe Duke shold take þe Crown & be Kyng: Al thise⁶ thinges wer enacted bi þe Auctorite of þe said 20 parlement. At⁷ which parlement þe communes of þe reame being Assembled in þe common house, comonyng & tretim vpon þe title of þe said Duke of York, sodenly fih down þe crown which hang þan in⁸ myddes of þe said hous, which is the ffraytor of þe Abbey 24 of Westmynster, which was take for A prodige or token þat þe reign of King Henry was ended. And also þe Crown which stode on þe highest toure of þe steple in þe Castel of Dover, fil down þis same yere. 28

**How þe Duke of York was slayn; And of Wakefelde felde,⁹
& of þe ij^{te} journey at Seynt Albones bi þe Quene &
Prince. ca. cclxij.**

Then, for-as-moche as þe Quene with þe prince was in þe North, 32 & Absented hir fro the King, & wold nat obey such thinges as was concluded in¹⁰ þe parlement, Itt was ordeyned þat þe Duke of York, as Protector, shold go Northward for to bring in þe Quene, & subdew such as wold nat obey; with whome went perl of 36

¹ the Vysecounte C. ² the lord C. ³ hym C. ⁴ afterward C.

⁵ & regent of C. ⁶ whiche C. ⁷ at the C. ⁸ in the C.

⁹ and of the feld of Wakefeld C. ¹⁰ leaf 201, back.

Salesbury, Sir Thomas Nevile his son, with myche peple. And at Wakefeld, in Cristmasse weke, þei wer al ouerthrowen & slayn bi þe lordes of þe Quene partye, þat is to say,¹ þe Duke of York was 4 slayn, þerl of Rutland, Sir Thomas Nevil, & many mo. þerl of Salesbury was / taken² Alyve, & other, as Iohn Harow of London, Capitayn of þe foot-men, & Hanson of HuH, which wer brought to Pountfret, & after þer beheded, & þer hedes sent to York, & þer 8 sett vpon þe yates, &c.

And þis tyme, þerl of Marche beyng in Shrewesbury, hering þe deth of his fadre, desired Assistence & Ayd of þe town for tavenge his fadres deth; & fro þense went to Walys, wher, at Candelmasse 12 after, he had A batail at Mortimesse Crosse Aynst þerles of Penbrok & of Wilshire, wher þerl of March had victorie. Than þe Quene, with lordes of þe north, After þei had destressed & slayn þe Duke of York & his felowship, come southward with A gret multitude 16 of peple & A gret puissance of peple, for to come to þe King, to defect such conclusions as had bene taken before bi þe parlement. Ageynst whos commyng, þe Duke of Northfolk, þerle of Warewick, with moche peple & ordinaunce, went vnto Seynt Albones, & lad 20 King Henry with þame; & þer encountred to-gedre in suche wise, & fought, þat þe Duke of Northfolk & þerl of Warewick, with other of þat partie, fledd & lost þat felde; wher King Henry was takyn, & went with þe Quene, & Prince his son, which tho had 24 goten þat felde. Than þe Quene & hir partie, beyng at þer Above, sent Anone to London, which was on Asshwoodenesday, þe fyft day of Lent, for vitail, which þe Mayr ordeynd, bi chanes of þe Aldremen, þat certayn cartes laden with vitail shold be sent to 28 Seynt Albones to þame. And when þe Cartes come to Crepilgate, þe communes of þe Cite þat kept þat gate,³ toke þe vitailles fro þe Carters, & wold not suffre it to passe. Then wer þer certeyn Aldermen & comoners Apoynted to go to Barnett forto speke with 32 þe Quenes Counsel for treatie, þat þe Northeryn men shold be sent home vnto þer contre Ageyn; ffor þe Cite of London dred fore to be robbed & dispoyled if þei shold come. And thus, during þis tretye, tydinges come þat þerle of Warrewick mett with þerle of 36 Marche on Cotteswold, comyng fro Walys with a gret meyney of Walessshmen, & þat þei both wer commyng to London ward.

¹ wete C.

² Here is a gap in C from *taken to men þat wer þer* (page 533, line 5).

³ leaf 202.

Anone as thise tydinges wer knowen, þe treaty was broken; for þe King, Quene, Prince, & al þe othir lordes þat wer with þame, departed fro Seynt Albones northward, with al þer peple yet or þei departed fro pens. þei beheded þe Lorde Bonevil & Sir Thomas 4 Kyriel, which wer taken in þe Iourney done on Shroft-Tuesday. Then þe Duches of York beyng at London, & hering of þe losse of þe felde at Seynt Albones, sent ouer þe See hir ij yong sonnes, George & Richard, which went to Vtrecht; & Philip Malpas, a 8 riche merchant of London, Thomas Vaghan, Squyer, & William Hatteclif, & many oþer, fering of þe commyng of þe Quene to London, toke a-shipp of Andwarpe for to haue gone in-to Zeland; And on þat other coste wer taken of one colompne of Frenshmen, 12 A shipp of Werre; & he toke þame prisoners, & brought þame in-to France, wher þei payd gret godes for þer raunson; & þer was myche gode & rychesse in þat shippe.

Of þe deposicion of Kyng Henry þe vj^{te}; And how King 16 Edward þe Fourt toke possession; And of þe bataill of Palme Sondag; and how he was crowned. *Cap. cclxiiij.*

Than when perle of Marche & þerl of Warwick had mett togedre on Cotteswold, In-continent they concluded to go to 20 London, & sent worde Anone ¹to þe Mair & to þe Cite þat þei shold come. Anone þe Cite was glad of þer commyng, hoping to be releued bi thame. And when þei wer commyn to London, & had spoken with þe lordes & Astates þat wer ther, þei concluded, 24 for-as-mych as King Henry was gone with þame Northward, þat he had forfeited his Crown, & ought forto be deposd, According to þe Actes made and passed in þe last parlement. And so, by thavice of þe lordes spirituel & temperel þen beyng At London, 28 perle of Marche, Edward, bi þe grace of God þe oldest son of Richard, Duke of Yorke, As rightful heir & next enheritour to his fadre, þe iiij^{te} day of Marche, þe yere of oure Lorde God Mⁱ cccclix, toke possession of þe Reame of England at Westmynster in þe gret 32 haß, & after, in þabbey church; & offred as King, bering þe Sceptre ryal, to whome al þe lordes, both spirituel & temperel, did homage & obeisaunce, to þer souereyn liege & lawful lord & Kyng; & forthwith it was proclaimed thugh þe Cite, Kinge Edward, þe 36 Fourt of þat name. And Anone after, þe King rode in his royall Astate Northward, with al his lordes, to subdue his subgettes þat

¹ leaf 202, back.

tyme beyng in þe North, & tavenge his fadre deth, And vpon
 Palme Sondag after, he had A gret batail in þe north contre at A
 place called Towton, nat ferre fro Yorke, where, bi þe help of
 4 God, he gat þe felde & had þe victorie; & þer wer slayn of his
 Aduersaries xxx^m men & moo, As it was said by men þat wer þer.
 In which batail was slayn þerle of Northumbreland, þe Lorde
 Clifford, Sir Iohn Nevil, þerle of Westmerlandes broþer, Andrew
 8 Trowlopp, & many oþer knightes & squyers.

Then King Henry, þat had be King, beyng with þe Qvene &
 Prynce at York, hering þe losse of þat felde, & so moche peple slayn
 & ouerthrowen, Anone forthwith departed al thre, with þe Duke
 12 of Somerset, þe lorde Roos & other, toward Scotland. And þe
 next day King Edward, with al his Army, entred into York, &
 was þer proclaimed King, & obeyed as he ought to be; And þe
 Mair & þe¹ Aldremen come in, &² swore to be his liege men. And
 16 whan he had taried A while in þe Northe, &³ þat al þat contre
 was⁴ turned to him, he retorned Southwarde, levying þerle of
 Warrewyck in þoo parties, for to kepe & gouerne þat contre. And
 About Midsommer after, þe yere of our Lord God⁵ M^t iiij^c lx, &
 20 þe first yere of his regne, he was crowned at Westmynster, &
 ennoynted King of Englonde, having þe hole possession of al þe
 hole reame; whome I beseche⁶ God to preserue,⁷ & send him þe
 Accomplissment of þe remanent of his rightful enheritance beyonde
 24 þe see, so⁸ þat he may regn in þame to þe pleyasor of Almighty
 God, helth⁹ of his soul, honor & worschip in þis present life, &
 wel & profet of al his subgettes, And þat þer may be A verry final
 pees in al Cristen reames, þat þe Infidelis & miscreantes may be
 28 withstanden & destroyed, & our feith enhaunced, which in these
 dayes is sore mynnshed by þe puissaunce of þe Turkes & hethen
 men; And þat after þis present & short life we may come to þe
 euer-lastyng life.¹⁰ Amen!

32 Explicit.¹¹

¹ & þe om. C. ² & aldermen & comyns C. ³ leaf 203.

⁴ & that al the countre ther had C. ⁵ God om. C. ⁶ pray C.

⁷ god saue & kepe C. ⁸ & C. ⁹ hath Ad. helthe C.

¹⁰ lyfe in the blysse of heuen / C. ¹¹ Explicit om. C.

[H]

EXTRACTS FROM HARLEIAN MS. 53.

I.

[*The Foundation of Battle Abbey by William the Conqueror.*]

¹ When William Bastard had² conquest aH Englonð, and was crownet kyng, and had receyvet his homages and stablisshet his pees, he passet ouer see ageyn in-to Normaundy. And att Ester next folowyng he come ageyn in-to Englonð, and landit at Dover, ⁴ and brought with hym Maude his wif, and many faire ladies and gentiHwemen with hir, and from thens so to London, with gret nobley. and on the Wittesonday after folowyng, she was crownet be the Archbisshope of Euerwik at Westemynster, with gret ⁸ solempnite and wurshipe. And þe³ Kyng¹ William, by counsail of his baronry, ordeynt how his Reame shuld be gouernet for the wele of the land. And he bethought hym howe he had causet gret shedyng of bloode wrongfully; wherfore he foundet an Abbay in ¹² the same place where-as the batail was, & made for to clepe it þe Abbay of Bataile; and he gave there-to gret lordshippes, londes and rentes, for to pay for al the sawles that were slayn ther for his love.

¶ And after the discomfiture of the batail, ich wurthy knyght ¹⁶ of Normaundy that was there, laft a scochon of his armes, with his name peyntet, in a place of the batail clepit Southope, which was clepit 'the peyntit chamber,' in remembraunce of their⁴ honour and wurshipe ⁵ for euer; and there thei stode so long, tiH þei feH ²⁰ doune to the erth, and many of hem were lost.⁶ And In that same tyme there was one Thomas Sayntlegerd, squyer, dwellyng with the Abbot of Batail, and sawe þe gret myschef and periH that myght aftirward fall of disherytyng of hem of whome the Armes ²⁴ were lost.⁷ And of aH the scochons and names that were lafte clere, and not lost, he made for to make a faire boke, and peyntet hem therin, for cause they shuld be there founden in remembraunce for euer,⁸ that al men myght fynde there their armes if thei hem not ²⁸ knewe. And that same boke was kept in the Abbay of Bataile vnto the tyme that Kyng¹ Henry the .V^{te}. shuld passe in-to Normaundy,

¹ leaf 76.² duke of Normandy had L.³ there L.⁴ the L.⁵ wurship & honour that they had there L.⁶ om. L.⁷ were falle doune & lost L.⁸ be fonden therein euemore in remembrance L.

to conquere his right, and toke with hym al the gentiH-men which had forgeton their armes; wherfore þe said Kyng sent vnto the Abbot of Bataile for to sende hym that boke of Armes; And the
 4 Abbot sent to hyme the boke at his comaundement, the which boke was neuer brought ageyn; and the chambre where þe armes were was not repeiret, nor none hede taken to hem; wherfore a gret part of the Armes feH doune, and was lost and forgeten;
 8 but then aH the names and armes that were founden clere were writton¹ in a table which is of recorde in the Abbay of Batail, the which names ben rehersit in this table next folowynge in ordre. that is to say: *

12	[ard]	Purcett	BaywaH ⁸	Hanet
	Bastard	Chamett	Meynith	Lynet
	Baynard ²	RideH	DariH	Hachet
	Brassard	RussetH	RocheH	Haket
16	Maignard ³	Bloundett	—	Turret
	Berard	MaunceH	[-et, -ol]	Burdet
	Maureward	Torchappett	Toret	Bret
	Beygnard ⁴	CharneH	Tanet	Trevet
20	Hansard	TireH ⁵	Tupet ⁹	Bigot
	Hasard	ToreH	Bratet	Bagot
	Ayelard	OreH ⁷	Boynet	Tallebot
	Achard	Saintbrenett	Malet	Tibot
24	Swyward ⁵	TrameH	Bluet	Tabot
	Saylard	ClareH	Brachet	Lincot
	Bereward	FreseH	Belet	Lonetot
	Wishard	WadeH	Ledet	Pigot
28	Musard	TrussetH	Pilet ¹⁰	Tiptot ¹¹
	Lyard	Coudrett	Palet	—
	Giffard	Burnett	Tuchet	[-aunt, -ent, -ount]
	Picard	Bussett	Basset	
32	Pipard	Peverett	Buket	Gaunt
	Gerard	AueneH	Duket	Passauaunt [col. 3]
	Fossard	Veett	Piket	Niuelent
	—	Spigurnett [col. 2]	Mulet	Duredent
36	[-aH, -ett, -ith]	Lovett	Baret	Richemount
	MoreH	Criett	Mounfichet	Nepount ¹²
	Martett	Furnyvatt	Pounchet	Neyrout ¹²
	PameH	Drutatt	Pachet	—
40	PineH	Surdevatt	Corbet	[-act]
	Ducrett ⁶	Orivatt	Birset	Pountfract

¹ leaf 76, back.

² Barnard L (Lambeth MS. 6).

³ Maynard L.

⁴ Boignard L. ⁵ Swyauud L. ⁶ L. adds Putnell.

⁷ Torell L. ⁸ om. L. ⁹ Tapet L. ¹⁰ Pelet L.

¹¹ Tiptot comes 4th in the next list.

¹² These two come at the end of the -court list.

* The same names are given in alphabetical order on pp. 605-607.

[-court]	Mansey	Audeville	Fitz ⁵ Piers	
Harecourt	Candrey	Dansterville	Fitz ⁵ Symond	
Bricourt	Sancey [col. 4]	Maunde ville	Fitz ⁵ Vise	
Phanecourt	Curecy	Souppitt or Sou-	Fitz ⁵ Hu	4
Deynecourt	Anney	peitt	Fitz ⁵ Brian	
—	Bussey	—	Fitz ⁵ Garin	
[-y]	Lescey	[-ampe]	Fitz ⁵ Herbert	
Lucy	Moubray	Longchampe	—	8
Lacy	Gurnay	Nunchampe	[-ace, -ars, -as,	
Luncy	—	Feschampe	-aus; -eis, -ers,	
Darcy	[-ile, -itt]	Beauchamp	-es, -eus, -euse;	
Sunely	Morville	—	-oris, -os, -urs, 12	
Mounteny	Secheville	[-er, -ere, -our]	-uce; -is, -oise,	
Barry	Berneville	Passamere [col. 5]	-ose; -euges,	
Berry	Graynville	Mortymer	-euse, -us, -ux]	
Curty	Bontville	Poer	Curteis	16
Tracy	Frivile	Renger	Santemareis	
Bracy	Longevile	Roter	Beaumeis	
Aubeny	Fresville	Belor	Bleis	
Perly	Folville	Boner	Greis	20
Cunly	Bereville	Butteler	Wasteneis (or	
Curly	Canneville	Despenser	-eils) ⁶	
Crecy	Careville	Budler	Curteneis ⁷	
Arcy	Cardevile	Saucer	Mareis	24
Percy	Aspreville	Chaucer [*]	Seygnes	
Vescy	Colville	Ferrer	Raynes	
Verly	Toreville	Gorger	Keynes [y. 77, col. 1]	
Soldeny	Bareville	Miler	Freynes	28
Mountanasy	Scuteville	Saunzaner	Roos	
Meisy ¹	Buteville	Gower	Curthose ⁸	
Gaugy	Vmframville	Leverer	Trauers ⁴	
Hercy	Nevile	Sainteler	Matroners	32
Mongomery	Greneville	Saintomer	Vilers	
Semery	Turbeville	Ascher ⁴	Prers ⁴	
Akeny	Arville	Malynoler	Ferrers	
Pleisy	Sanderville	Hurfer	Moreus ⁹	36
Panely	Amondevile	Veer	Valeus ¹⁰	
Andeny	Spyneville	Saintleger	Chalurs	
Quincy	Widville	Gunter	Saintclus	
Tuny	Wivile	Gamager	Saintmoris ¹¹	40
Massy	Ofville	Gauter	Pus	
Welby	Gorunville ³	Banaster	Bruce	
—	Abville	Venour	Chalenges	
[-ay, -ey]	Somerville	Vauesour	Auerenges	44
Hay	Soneville	—	Parles	
Say	Baskerville	[Fitz-]	Huscharles	
Aubray ²	Hanville	Fitz ⁵ Geffray	Setvaus ¹²	
Morley	Hauteville	Fitz ⁵ Water	Taillois	48

¹ Mersy L.² Ambray L.³ Gounrvile L.⁴ om. L.⁵ Filz L.⁶ Wasteneis L.⁷ Cartenais L.⁸ See 537, I, 3.⁹ Morens ? L.¹⁰ Valens ? L.¹¹ Saintmorioris L.¹² Setvans ? L.

	Camois	[-an]	Veisyn	Plevien
	La Heuse	Brian	Mamelbarin ²	Saintmore
	Courtheuse ¹	Baucan	Comyn	—
4	Breuse	Truan	Warene	Wildbef [col. 5]
	Chaundos [col. 2]	—	Dulapenne [col. 4]	Pantulf
	Sainterois	[-oun]	—	Bardulf
	Tailepas	Britoun [col. 3]	Meyne	Sanctelou
8	Marcimas	Frisoun	Cheyne §	Gantlou
	Ferebrace	Grauntsoun ²	Penire [or Pemre]	Mountegu
	Fetepace	Vernoun	Tenere	—
	Bars	Piroun ²	Lysle	Rosynis ²
12	Quatremars	Heiroun	Burle	Heris
	Fyneux	Peisoun ³	Rusak	Brok
	Punegis	Leoun	Murdak	—
	Eurons	Motoun ²	Gorge	Hubert
16	Manus (or	—	Saintgorge ²	Lambert
	Manns)	[-yn]	—	Foliambe ²
	Grace	Cosyn	Dalamare	—
	—	Rosyn	Mire	Escot
20	[-ayn, -eyn]	Sainthelyn	Saunzire	Kirlecot
	Morteyn	Costentyn	Lunar	Trusbut
	Butvileyn	Formentyn	Orrewar	Ynigre
	Malemayn	Manyn ³	Clare	Saintnoyre
24	Foleyn	Iardyn	Savage	—
	Chambreleyn	Taryn	Neomarch	Zoochh [? MS.] ²
	Chastelleyn	Saintquintyn ²	SaintIohn	Cornor
		Hamelyn	Chene § ²	

[The Lambeth MS., leaves 111-112, leaves out a few names, spells others with slight differences, and puts in 'Putrell.']

¹ See 536; iv, 30.

² *om. L.*

³ Tyson L.

II.

[*The battle of Crecy and the Siege of Calais, A.D. 1346.*]

- 28 ¶ And in the xix yere of his regne he went in-to Britayne, and into Gascoyne & Gian,⁵ & with hym the Erle of Hunt-
yngtoun, þe Erle of Warrewik, þe Erle of Suffolk⁶ and
þe Erle of Arundeſh, and with many opire lordes, with CC
32 and .xl^{ti}. shippes, onen after Mydsomer, to avenge hym on the
wronges and harmes pat was done be Philippe Valoys,⁷ Kyng
of Fraunce, agaynes þe truyce beforesaid made; which
truys he falsly and vntrewly brake by cauelacioun. And he
36 come ageyne in-to Englonde with-in the same yere.

⁴ leaf 138. The words in large type are underlined in red in the MS. In other pages of the text, no difference of type is made.

⁵ & Gian *om. L.*

⁶ leaf 138, back.

⁷ de Valoys L.

¶ Of the bataile of Cressy, and of the seege of Caleys; and of the bataile of Durham where-as the Kyng of Scottes was taken; and alle in one yere. [*This heading is underlined in red in the MS.*]

IN the yere of oure Lord. M^t. CCC. xlvj^{ti}. and in the xx^{ti} yere 4 of the regne of Kyng Edward of Wyndesore, he held a parlement at Westmynster, where-as were al the lordes of the reame, spiritueH and temperaH.¹ At which parlement were proclame þe gret iniuries and wronges pat was done be the Kyng of 8 Fraunce and Frenshmen in the parties of be-yonde the see, and on þe see-costes in Kent, and specially be theym of Caleis. Wherefore þe Kyng, be the counseil of his lordes spirituaH and temperaH, and of al his reame, ordeynt hym to passe ouer see 12 ageyne, to chastise the rebelles of Fraunce, and to lay seege to Caleis, which did gret harme about al þe see-cost; wherfore it was pat tyme kept with saudours, to gret cost to þe King and the reame. And þerfore þe Kyng sent to al his frendes be-yonde the 16 see, pat were to hym assuret, as before is said, to mete with hym in Fraunce with al þeire power and Alliaunce. And the whiles he purveid hys navye, and made his retenewe in Englund, in al þe hast he myght; of which þe name³ of the chef lordes and 20 capteyns, with their retenewe and the noubre, folowith herafter in this table, that is for to say :

- ¶ Prynce Edward with xj banerettes, C. ij. knyghtes, CC lxiii. men of armes, CCC ^{xx}iiij ^{xx}iiij Archers on horsebak, ^{xx}iiij ix. Archers 24 on foote, vj^c Walshmen, wherof on was a chapeleyn, & anoþer a leche, and anoþer a crier. And in his retenewe was ^cxxv^{ti}2 vynteners, & ^{xx}iiij & ^{xx}iiij footmen, & v standart berers.
- ¶ Henre, Erle of Lancastre, with an Erle, xj banerettes, C. 28 ^{xx}iiij xiiij. knyghtes, v^c xiiij. men of Armes, and vj^c xij. Archers on horsebak.
- ¶ William Bohome, Erle of Northamptoun, with ij banerettes and xlvj^{ti} knyghtes, C and xij. men of Armes, And 32 C. lxj of Archers on horsebak.
- ¶ Thomas Beauchampe, Erle of Warrewik, with ij banerettes, and lxiiij knyghtes, and C and xxx^{ti} men of Armes, and C. xlvj^{ti} Archers³ on horsebak. 36

¹ lordes spirituaH & temporal of þe reame. spirituaH and temperaH om. L.

² xxvj L. ³ men of armes L.

- 1 ¶ Richard, Erle of Arundeß, with iij banerettes, and xlj^{ti}. knyghtes, and C and .vj. men of Armes, and C liij^{ti}. Archers on horsebak.¹
- 4 ¶ Robert Dufford, Erle of Suffolk, with on baneret, and xxvj^{ti}. knyghtes, and lvij^{ti} men of Armes, and lxiiij Archers on horsebak.
- ¶ William Clynton, Erle of Huntingtoun, with ij.
8 banerettes, and xxx^{ti} knyghtes, and ^{xx}iiij and xiiij. men of Armes, and ^{xx}iiij. viij. Archers on horsebak.
- ¶ John Veer, Erle of Oxenford, with on baneret and xxij knyghtes, and xliii^{ti} men of Armes, and lxiiij Archers on
12 horsebak.
- ¶ Laurence Hastynges, Erle of Penbrok, with on baneret, and xxxvj^{ti}2 knyghtes, and ^{xx}iiij³ vj men of Armes, And C xxij^{ti}4 Archers on horsebak.
- 16 ¶ The Erle of Kildare, with on baneret, and on knyght, and xxiiij^{ti}5 men of Armes, and xxvij^{ti} hobilers.
- ¶ Maistre Thomas Hattefeld, bisshope of Dureham, with iij banerettes, and xlvij^{ti}. knyghtes, C lxiiij men of
20 Armes, and ^{xx}iiij and xv Archers on horsebak.
- ¶ Hughe Spenser as an Erle, with .ij. banerettes, and xl^{ti} knyghtes, and ^{xx}iiij and xvj⁶ men of Armes, and ^{xx}iiij and xv Archers on horsebak.
- 24 ¶ 7 Rauf, Baron of Stafford, with ij banerettes, and xx^{ti} knyghtes, & ^{xx}iiij and xij men of Armes, and ^{xx}iiij and xv Archers on horsebakke.
- ¶ Richard Talbot,⁸ Baroun, Stuard of pe Kynges house, with
28 xiiij knyghtes, and lx of men of Armes, and lx Archers on horsebakke.
- ¶ Iohn Darox⁹ the fadir, Baroñ, with xj knyghtes, and xlvij^{ti} of men of Armes, and lx Archers on horsebakke, and
32 xx^{ti} Archers on foote.
- ¶ Berthelemew Burewassh, Baneret, the Kynges Chamberleyn, with one baneret, and xxvj^{ti}10 knyghtes, lxxxj of men of Armes, & lvij^{ti} Archers on horsebak, & xix on foote.
- 36 ¶ Waulter Manny, with oper xxv^{ti}11 banerettes, with theyre

¹ om. L. ² xxv^{ti} L. ³ C & L. ⁴ CC L.

⁵ xl^{ti} L. ⁶ xv L. ⁷ leaf 139. ⁸ Talbot om. L. ⁹ Barox L.

¹⁰ & vj & xx^{ti} L. ¹¹ xxxvj^{ti} L.

- retenets, that is to say, with C xxiiij^{ti} knyghtes, D¹ ^{xx}iiij xiiij of² men of Armes, and D ^{xx}iiij xij archers on horsebakke, and of hobillers and Pavysers, and C xix Archers on foote.
- ¶ Sir William Wareyne, knyghte, with opir ^{xx}iiij and xv⁴ knyghtes, CCC ^{xx}iiij xiiij³ pavisers and hobelers on horsbakke, and xvj archers on foote.
- ¶ Sir Waulter Wetewang, the Kynges wardroper, with ij knyghtes, and xxv^{ti} of men of Armes, and xxxvj^{ti} Archers on 8 horsbakke.
- ¶ Maistre Symond Islepe, Privey Seal, with xvij⁴ men of Armes, and xij Archers on horsebakke, and iiij Archers on foote. 12
- ¶ Philip Westoñ, Clerk, with iiij knyghtes, and xxvij^{ti} of men of Armes, and xxx^{ti} Archers on horsebakke.
- ¶ William Keldesby, Clerk, with iiij knyghtes, and lxxiiij of⁵ men of Armes, and lxviij Archers on horsbakke, and xij 16 Archers on foote.
- ¶ Sir William Daltoñ, Countroller of þe Kynges house, with oper xix Clerkes of dyuers officers, with an C xiiij vndir-Clerkes and squyers, and C xxv^{ti} Archers on horsebakke, and 20 ij Archers⁶ on foote.
- ¶ William at Wode, the Kynges banerer, with oper iiij banerers, and C xxxij^{ti} of Sergiauntes to meñ of Armes, Sentifers of þe Kynges house, sergeauntes of diuerse office, 24 and mynstrelles, CClxviij Archers, hobelers, banerers, messagers and yemen of þe Kynges Chambre, and of diuerse offices in þe Kynges house.
- ¶ Sir Thomas Haukestoñ, knyght, with an C lxj of men of 28 Armes, and CCC xiiij Archers on horsbakke, and CC xlj^{ti} Archers on foote.
- ¶ Maistre Siluestre Benet, and oper CCC xiiij Masons, Carpenters, Smythès, pavylers, mynours, Armerers, Gunners, 32 and Artillers.
- ¶ Sir Iohn Ward, knyght, with x Centenaries and l^{ti} men of Armes, and D⁷CC ^{xx}iiij, and viij vyntenaries, and CC ^{xx}iiij xvij⁸ Archers on horsbakke, and D hobilers, and xv⁹ M^t iiij 36 Archers on foote.

¹ and L (D = 500, misread as &). ² of om. L. ³ & xv L.

⁴ xxvj L. ⁵ of om. L. ⁶ on horsebakke and ij Archers om. L.

⁷ D (500) om. L. ⁸ viii viij L. ⁹ xvj L.

- ¶ Sir Howel Griffith, knyghte, with *oper* ij knyghtes, and ^{xx}iiij men of Armes of Walshemen of Northwales and Southwales, and ij C and iiij vintenares, and iiij M^t CC Walshmen.
- 4 ¶ Maisters of Shippes, and Constables, maryners, and pages, þe nombre of DCC: þe nombre of maryners, bargers, and balyngers and vitailers, xvj M^t.
- ¶ And thes ben þe names of the Aliens which were þe
- 8 Kynges frendes, and in his Sande that same tyme, and halp hym in his werres in Fraunce. *scilicet*:—
- 1 ¶ Lodewik, the Emperoure of Rome, with a certeyn men of Armes.
- 12 ¶ Reynold, Duke of Gildre, with a certeyn-men of Armes.
- ¶ Iohn, Duke of Braban, with a certeyne men of Armes.
- ¶ William, Erle of Henawde, with a certeyne men of Armes.
- ¶ Tederik, lord Faukemand, with a certeyne men of Armes.
- 16 ¶ Corald of Marke, with a certeyne men of Armes.
- ¶ Bertold, Erle of Baiespath, Maurchion de Brandesburghe, and othir knyghtes and squyers, straungers, witholden with þe Kyng.
- 20 ¶ Baudewyn, Archbisshope of Treeue, with a certeyn men.
- ¶ Archbisshope² of Magunenser with a certeyn men.
- ¶ Guilmyn, Marchion Iuliacen, with a certeyn men.
- ¶ The Erle of Helsteyn, with *oper* ^{xx}xxiiij^{ti} knyghtes alieyns,
- 24 clepit 'Nethirbandes,' and C ^{xx}iiij viij of men of Armes, and C lxxj pavisers.
- ¶ The Erle of Freyburghe, with *oper* xl^{ti} knyghtes alieyns, clepit 'Euerbandes,' &³ CC xxxiiij^{ti} of men of Armes and C
- 28 ^{xx}iiij ix⁴ pavisers.
- ¶ The nombre of þe retenue, without Alieyns, that is to say, of erles, barons, banerettes, knyghtes, men of armes, Constables, Centeners, capteyns, vynteners, Archers on horsbak, hobelers,
- 32 Archers of⁵ foote, and Walshmen, as þe rolles of þe retenu make mencion, is xxv^{al}. CC ^{xx}iiij. ¶ The nombre of Masone, carpenters, smythes, paviloners, Armerers, Gunners and artillers, is CCC xiiij.
- ¶ The nombre of þe maisteres of shippes, Constables, maryners
- 36 and pages of shippis, bargers, balyngers, and vitteilers is xvj. M^t.
- ¶ When Kyng Edward had made his retenu and his Armee

¹ leaf 139, back. ² The erchbisshop L. ³ & om. L.

⁴ clxvi L. ⁵ on L.

in þis wise as before is said, and his navey was redy, he shippit the xij^{te} day of Iule, the yere of our Lord M.^t CCC xlvj^{ti}, and saylet toward Normaundy, and londit at Hogges, and restet hym ther vj daies, and vnshippit his pepi^h; and þen went he 4 toward Cane, brennyng & distrying euer as he went by þe way. And þe xxvij^{ti} day of Iuyle, at þe brigge of Cane, that was strenghet be Normaundes, he had there a gret bataile, and longe duryng, thurhe gret multitude of pepil þat was þer slayn; and þer 8 was take þe Erle of Elbe,¹ the Lord Tankerville, and an C knyghtes and men of Armes, and vj^c footemen; and al þe subbarbes to þe hard walles was born and cariet away, al þat couth be cariet. And so þe Kyng passet forth in þe cuntrey, and wastet 12 and distryet xx^{ti} myle in brede.

¶ Philip of Valois, Kyng of Fraunce, was fast by with a gret host, and hard þerof, and wold not come ouer þe water of Seyne, but brake al the brigges beyonde þe water, from Roan to Parise, 16 and fled with his host to Parise. ¶ When Kyng Edward come to þe water of Seyne, he fand al þe brigges broken; but within ij daies he made a brige ageyne. and on þe morowe aftir oure Lady day Assumpcion, he passet ouer þe Water of Seyne, and 20 went toward Cressy, & distryet by þe way, townes, and þe pepi^h in hem. And in þe Fest of Saynt Berthelemewe, he passet the water of Summe vnhurt, with al his host, where-as neuer was no passage before þat tyme; And yet þer ware ij M.^t Frenshmen to 24 haue lette his passage. And þen, þe xxvj^{ti}² day of August, Edward faught beside Cressy, in a feld, havyng iij batayles of Englishmen, & Philipe of Valois iiij batailes: þe lest batail passet þe number of Englishmen. And when þe ij hostes mette to-gedre, 28 ther ³fell in-with the host of Fraunce, the Kyng of⁴ Beame, þe Duk of Loryn, And oper Erles, as of Flaundres, Dalison, Blois, Harecourt, Aunard, and⁵ Navers, and many oper lordes and barons, knyghtes and men of Armes, the nombre of j 32 M.^t CCCCC and xlij^{ti}, without footemen. And yette for al this, Phelip the Kyng⁶ withdrowe hym with the residew of a^h his pepi^h; wherfore it was said among his oune mewe "Nostre beal retreit," that is to say, 'Oure faire withdraweth hym.'⁷ 36 ¶ And thus Kyng Edward had þe Victory; and there he and his pepi^h hem restet, and thanket God. and on þe morow after, þe

¹ þe Erle of Elbe *om.* L.² vj L.³ leaf 140.⁴ kyng Ha. king of L.⁵ Aunard and *om.* L.⁶ þe king Phelipe L.⁷ hym *om.* L.

Frenshe men come ageyne with a gret host to gyve Kyng Edward bataile; but the Erle of Warrewik mette with hem, and þe Erle of Norhamptoun, and þe Erle of Suffolke, with theire meyny, and 4 slowe of hem ij M^t, and toke many of the gentils prisoners; and al þe remenaunt fled iiij lekes thens. And thrid day after, the¹ Kyng Edwerd went toward Caleis, distrying al þe cuntrey as he rode, and laide² seege to Caleis³ þe iiij^{de} day of Septembre, with 8 the Caste^l, and contynuet þe sege sti^l⁴ from that day vnto þe iiij^{de} day of Aust the next yere folowyng.

¶ Whiles Kyng Edward lay at Seege of⁵ Caleys, a gret power of Scottes come in-to Englonð, to Nevileros, about Saint 12 Luyk day, wenyng to haue founden al þe land destitute and voide of men, because the Kyng was beyonde þe see with a gret host; 14 þei wend þe had be non lasse at home, but prestes, men of religion, plowmen and laborers;⁶ but, thanket be God! they fand⁷ enow to 16 wisttonde hem: they robbit and made gret distruccion; And so ther was a day of Batail sette betwene hem and certeyn lordes and meñ of holy chirch that were in that cuntrey, and þe comyn pepi^l; at which batail, throw Goddes myghte, [the Scottes] were⁸ 20 discomfit, notwithstanding they were iiij meñ ageyne one of Engli^she meñ.⁹ And pere were slayne the chivalry of Scotte- lonð; and there was David, the Kyng of Scottes, taken fleying, smytte thurgh þe nose with an Arowe, be a yoman that was 24 callet Copeland; and there was take, the Erle of Moriss, Sir William Douglas, and many oþer gret meñ. And this batail was done beside Dereham, the xvij day of Octobre, the yere of oure Lord aboue-said. And when þe bataile was done, þe Engli^she 28 men hem restet a fewe dayes, and ordeynt kepers of the north country, and after came to London, and broȝt with hem þe Kyng of Scottes, and oþer lordes that were take prisoners, and led hem to þe Toure, where-as they abode of þe comyng of Kyng Edward 32 out of Fraunce; and aftir that was raunsont at C M^t marcs, to be payde in x yere, ich yere x M^t marcs.

¹ the *om.* L. ² laide þerto L. ³ to Caleis *om.* L.

⁴ Septembre which seege continued still L. ⁵ att L.

⁶ *om.* L. ⁷ fand^e men E. ⁸ were þe scottes L. were Ha.

⁹ of engli^she meñ *om.* L.

¶ Of the Conquest of Caleis by Kyng Edward of Wyndisore;
and of the tresoun that was ordeynt for Caleis by one Sir
Geffrey Charney. [Big writing underlined in red in the MS.]

EDward, Kyng of Englonð contynuet at þe seege stiĥ aft̃ the 4
wynter, and Philip Valois, Kyng of Fraunce, purpaset
hym *with* some fraude to putte hym fro þe seege, and come the
xxvij^{ti} day of Iuyle, þe yere of oure Lord M^t CCC xlvij^{ti} to
Calkewet, a myle and an half from Caleis, with a gret host; 8
and sent to Kyng Edward, and askit hym whedir he durst feight
with hyme the iij^{de} day, about euensonge tyme, and leve þe seege.
And Kyng Edward onon, *with*-out eny counsaile or avisement,
acceptet gladly the day; and yette much of his pepiĥ wer seke and 12
ded on þe fflux. ¶ When þe Kyng of Fraunce wist verely that
he wold feight, *with*-out eny avisement or long taryng he sette his
loggynge on fyre, and went cowardly his way.

III.

[From Bolingbroke's return, A.D. 1399, to A.D. 1405.]

¶ When Kyng Richard had tithynges in Irlond, that Henry 16
of Boleynbroke, Duyke of Herford, was comyn into Englonð, he
laste al his ordynaunce in Irlond, and hastet hym into Englonð, in
al that he myghte, and come vnto the casteĥ of ²Flynt in Wales,
and there he abode, to take his counsaile what was best for to 20
done; but ther come no counsaile to hyme. And in the menewhile,
Henry Boleynbrok ³come [to] Herford, and [þe] Erle of Derby³
come to Chestre, and loggit in the Casteĥ, ³with-in the Inner ward
perof, which casteĥ Kyng Richard had riolly repeiret, and made 24
with hertes of frestone betwene ich lope, with crownes and cheynes
about theire nekkes, for he lovit wele that place³ // And then was
there sent vnto the casteĥ of Flynt, Maister Thomas Arundeĥ,
Archbisshope of Caunterbury, and Sir Henry Percy, Erle of 28
Northumbrelond, and othir lordes, both spirituaĥ and temperaĥ;
and there was much thyng spoken of betwene þe Kyng and hem,
by gret othis and suyrtees made, that he shuld come vnto Chestre
savely, and ⁴spek with the Duyk, and be delyuert savely ageyn to 32
the said casteĥ: which othis and suyrtees were not al parfowremet.

¹ leaf 152, at foot. The red underlines are not now markt by difference of type.

² leaf 152, back.

³⁻³ om. L.

⁴ to L.

And so come the Kyng ridyng vnto Chestre ¹and yong Henry with hyme, that was þe eldest sone of the said Duyk of Herford¹ // and was loggit in the vtterward of the casteH of Chestre.² Then
4 Kyng Richard vndirstood and knewe wele that it was not wele on³ heire⁴ syde. And the same nyght, after that⁵ Kyng Richard was gone to Chestir, Sir Thomas Percy, Erle of Wircestre and stuard of the Kynges howsold, come into the haH amonges the pepiH, and
8 there he brak the rodde of his office, and bade enery man do his best; And so went ich man his way.

¶ Then þe Kyng and⁶ the Duyk mette and spake to-gedirs in þe haH of þe said CasteH, ¹that was in the vtterward,¹ a longe
12 while, and aftir departet; and in⁷ the departyng, Henry, the sonne and heire of the said Duyk, come to his fadir, and knelit down before hym, and welcomet hym, as hym aught to do; And there forthwith his fadir hym charget the next day to come from the
16 Kyng, and waite vppon hym. ¶ Then this yong knyght Henry brought þe Kyng to his chambre with a sorowfuH hert, for cause he shuld depart from his godfadir and his Souerayne Lord, for he louet hyme enterely. And when he come into the Kynges
20 chambre, he tolde the Kyng how he most, the next day aftir, wayte vppon his fadir, he streyt and hard comaundement. And then þe kyng said to hym the[s]e wordes: ¶ “Good sonne Henry, I gyve the good⁸ leue to do thy fadirs comaundement; but I knowe
24 wele there is on Henry shal do me much harme; and I suppose it is not thowe. Wherefore I pray the be my frende, for I wot now howe it wil go.” And so on the next day aftir, Henry toke his leue of þe Kyng his godfadir with an hevy hert, and went to his
28 fadir, Duyk of Herford. And after that, was the Kyng arestet in the same CasteH by the said Duyk, and al his meyny that were about hym put away; and such men were put about hym as the Duyk wold. Then from thens he was broughte to London, and, by
32 assent of al þe lordes, putte in þe Toure. ¹And on Saint Laurence even, þe hed of Perkyn of Lee was smyt of vnder the Iubet⁹ of Chestre.¹

¹⁻¹ *om. L.* ² *of Chestre om. L.* ³ *in L.* ⁴ *his L.*

⁵ *that om. L.* ⁶ *þe kyng and om. L.* ⁷ *at L.*

⁸ *good om. L.* ⁹ *gibbet L.*

¹ ¶ Of the deth of Kyng Richard, and of othir dyuers Dukes,
Erles, and barons moo. [*Big writing, underlined with red.*]

IN the first yere of the regne² of Kyng Henry the iiiij^{te}, Kyng Richard, which þat was put doune of³ his Rialte, was in þe 4 CasteH of Pountfret vndir þe ward of Sir Robert⁴ of Watirton, knyght⁵; and þere he was ich day servet [as] a⁶ Kyng aught to he, that he myght se it; but he myght come to non þerof; wherfore sone aftir he deyed for honger in prisoñ in þe same CasteH⁷; and so 8 he made his ende. ¶ And when Kyng Henry wist verely that he was ded, because much pepiH said he was on lyve many a day after, he made to sere hym, and clope hym in⁸ lynnyn Cloth, al saave onely the visage; and that was lafte open, that men myght se and 12 knowe his persone from al oþer; and so was he brought with torch-light vnto Paulis at Londoñ, and had þere his masse and dirige, and þe same wise at Westemynster; and þen from Paules he was broughte to Langeley, and þere he was enteret. 16

¶ That same yere Kyng Henry the iiiij^{te} held his Cristemas in þe CasteH of Wynnessore: and on the xij^{te} even come to hym the Duke of Awmarle, and told hym how þat he and þe Duke of Surry, þe Duk of Excestre, and þe Erle of Salesbury and þe Erle 20 of Gloucestre,⁹ and oþer moo of theyre Affynyte, were accordit to make a mummyng vnto þe said Kyng Henry on xij^{te} day at nyght, in¹⁰ which mummyng þei purpaset to sle hym. ¶ When¹¹ Kyng Henry þe iiiij^{te} was thus warnet, he rode in hast þat same 24 nyght pryvely to London, to gete hym socoure and counsaile. But assone as þe forsaid lordes wist and knewe that their counsaile were discourt openly, they fled, euery man his way; And aftirward thei were taken in certeyn places of Englonð be þe comyns, and hedit, 28 and peire hedis sette on London Brigge,¹² and their bodyes quartert, and sett vp in dyuers townes of Englonð.¹² Whos names folowen here aftir¹³ in þis table, and the places where þei wer taken, and hedit: 32

Att Circestre were	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{The Duke of Surry and Erle} \\ \text{of Kent}^{14} \\ \text{The Erle of Salesbery} \\ \text{The Erle of Oxenford} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{quarteret}^{15} \\ \text{and hedit.} \end{array} \right\}$	36
taken with hem of þe			
toune			

¹ leaf 153. ² of the regne *om.* L. ³ from L. ⁴ Henry L.
⁵ knyght *om.* L. ⁶ a Ha. as a L. ⁷ in þe same CasteH *om.* L.
⁸ on L. ⁹ and þe Erle of Gloucestre *om.* L. ¹⁰ on L.
¹¹ And when L. ^{12—12} *om.* L. ¹³ aftir *om.* L.
¹⁴ and Erle of Kent *om.* L. ¹⁵ And þes thre were quartered L

At Oxenford were take
with hem of þe toune . . .

{ { { {	Sir Thomas Blount	} knyghtes } } }	} quateret } and } hedit.
	Sir Rauf Lunnay		
	Sir Benet Sely		
	Thomas ¹ WyntersshiH squyer		

At PritweH in a mylne
was take by th[e]
Comyns

{ { {	Sir Iohn Holand	} And quateret, ² and } hedit at Plasshe in } Essex.
	Duyk of Excestre	

8 At Bristow was take
by hem of þe toune . . .

{ {	The Erle of Gloucestre	} quateret and } hedit. ³
	and Lord Spencer.	

4 And afftirward in that⁵ same yere, was Sir Bernard⁶ Brocas,
knyght, ⁷and Sir Iohn Shelley, knyghte, And Sir Iohn Mawde-
12 leyne and Ferby, parsones of Kyng Richard ChapeH,⁷ take, and
put in þe Toure of Londone; and there they were iuged to the
deth⁸, ⁷theire hedes to be smytton of, and sette on London Brigge:
and so they were. ¶ That same yere, Queene IsabeH, that was the
16 wiff of Kyng Richard the Secunde, was dischargit of hir dowery,
and sent home in-to Fraunce ageyne with many rich gyftes.⁷

¶ Of the werre of Wales betwene the Lord Gray of Rithen
and Oweyn of Glyndore of Wales, and of the bataile of
20 **Shrewisbury.** [*Big wrtling, underlined with red.*]

IN the secunde yere of the regne of Kyng Henry the iiij^{te}, was
Sire Roger of Claryntoun, knyght, and the Pryoure of Launde,
and viij Freres Mynoures,—⁷ wherof somme were maisters of
24 dyvinite⁷—and oper moo, were, for tresone, drawe and hanget at
Tiburne.⁹ ¶ That same yere ther began a gret discencion and a
debate in Wales betwene þe Lord Gray of þe Rithyn and Oweyne
of Glyndore, Squyer of Wales, for bying of an hare in the market.
28 This Oweyne Arerit a gret nombre of Wa[l]sshe-men, and distroyet
þe lordeshipes of the Lord Gray, and of þe Kynges also, and did
much harme through-out Wales, and robbet and slowe the Kynges
pepiH, both Engliish and Walsh. and the Lord Gray distroyet, on
32 his party, al pat held with þe said Oweyne; And this werre endurit
xij yere. ¶ And at last this Oweyne toke the Lord Grey, Prisoner,
and were raunsont for V^c¹⁰ prisoners of Walsh-men of the March¹¹;

¹ And Thomas L. ² And quateret om. L.

³ quateret and hedit om. L. ⁴ leaf 153, back. ⁵ þe L.

⁶ Thomas L. ⁷⁻⁷ om. L. ⁸ Iuged & put to deth L.

⁹ at Tiburne om. L. ¹⁰ vj C L. ¹¹ of the March om. L.

and þe Lord Gray at last to wedde his doughter, and kept hym there with his wiff; and sone after he dyet. ¶ Then went the Kyng in-to Wales with a gret power, to distry this Oweyne and þe rebelles of Wales; but þe Walssh mén fled vp on hye mounteynes, 4 where-as þe Kyng couth in no wise come to hem; and so þe Kyng sped not þere; wherfore he retournet home ageyne. 1 And þat same yere was a gret drouth and a scariste of whete, so that a quarter was wurth xvj^s. 8

¶ That same yere Sir William Sawtre, preest, was brent in Smythfeld, for cresy; and that yere Sir Roger Waldeyne and Sir Richard Clidrowe qvytte² by a quest of men of London. and that same [yere] was a bataile on Halydoun Hylle betwene 12 Englyssh-men and Scottes, where-as was taken þe Erle Douglas, and his one ey smytte out, and þe Erle of Moriss, and many othir lordes, knyghtes and squyers; and so, as God wold, thenglyssh men had þe feld and þe victory.¹ 16

¶ In the iij^{de} yere of þe regne of Kyng Henry the iiij^{te},³ Apperit a sterre in þe firmament 1 in the west, in þe monyth of Fevryere,¹ which wes clepit the 'blasyng sterre,' 1 and of clerkes it was clepit 'stella Comata.'¹ Anon after, feli a debate betwene þe Kyng and 20 Sir Henry Percy, that was callet amonge þe Scottes 'Henry Hate-spurre.' This Syre Henry come vnto þe Kyng, and asket of hym certeyn wages that he was behynde, for þe kepyng and wardeynshipe of þe Marches, and þe kyng hym gave but a light Answare. 24 And Sir Henry Percy said 'he quyt hym not to hym as he shold do, for,' he said, 'ne had he ben, he had neuer be Kyng of Englund.' The Kyng then, with that word was sore mevyt, and with his fist stroke Sir⁴ Henry Percy on þe cheke. And þen Sir Henry, sore 28 aggrevid, said the[s]e wordes vnto the Kyng: "In faith, this shal be the derrest-boght buffet that euer was in Englund"; and with þat word 1 turnet the bakke, and 1 toke his hors, and rode his way with his meyny 1 that come with hym.¹ When þe Kyng had smytten 32 Sir Henry thus, as before is said, yet he was sory þerof, and hym repentet, and sent for Sire Henry ageyne; but he wold come to þe Kyng in no wise, but rode forth, and rayset a gre[te] pepil of diuers shires, and specialy of Chestre-shire; and on Saynt Mary 36 Mawdeleyne euen next folowyng, the yere of owre⁵ Lord I .M^t. CCCC. iij.,⁶ was a gret bataile besydes Shrewesbery, betwene Kyng

¹⁻¹ *om. L.* ² qvytte = were acquitted. ³ the iiij^{te} *om. L.*

⁴ Sir *om. L.* ⁵ *om. Ha.* owre *L.* ⁶ & iij *L.*

Henry þe iiij^{te}¹ and þe said Sir Henry Percy, by false counsaile and
wikket steryng of Sir Thomas Percy, Erle of Wircestre, and vncle
vnto the said Henry Percy. in which bataile was slayne, first, Sir
4 Henry Percy hym self,² and þe moost party of his pepil; and Sir
Thomas Percy, Erle of Wircestre³ was taken, ⁴and was kept ij
dayes, and after was drawe⁴ and⁵ hanget, ⁴and his hed smytton
of, and sette on London Brigge. And in that same batayle,⁴ on⁶
8 þe Kynges party, was slayne The Erle of Stafford, and Sir Waltere
Blount in þe Kynges cote Armure ⁴vnder þe Kynges baner,⁴ &
many othir wurthy knyghtes and Squyers and good yemen.⁸ And
in that same bataile þe Prynce was smytte thurgh þe hed with an
12 Arowe; and yet God fortunet that he lyvit. ⁴And Sir Iohn of
Stanley, knyght, was smytte in the throte with an Arowe; and
when þe bataile was done, the Kyng sent to hym, and to wete of
hym what he shuld do with Chestirshire, for-as-much [as] they
16 were ageynes hym. And he Answar^t þe messenger, so as he myght
speke rattelyng in þe throte, and said, "Brenne and sle! Brenne
and sle!" And þe Kyng asket what he said; and he þat was sent
to hym said to þe Kyng that he shuld take hem to grace; and so
20 the Kyng þen hem toke to grace; and al þat wol^t ask grace þat
were taken, had grace and forgyvenes; but aftir þe bataile the
Kynges meyny come into Chestirshire, and dispoylet þe cuntre in
euery part, and bare away the goodes that couth be caryet.⁴
24 ¶ This bataile was þe heviest, and vnkyndest and sorest batail þat
euer was before that tyme in Englonde; for ther was þe sonne
ageynes þe fadir, and the brothir ageynes brothir,⁹ and kynne
ageynes kynne; ⁴and þer was beriet in on pitte xj^c men; in which
28 place is now a Chapeil of oure Lady, & prestes syngyng for the
sawles. And thys bataile was the yere of oure Lord aboue-sayd,
wherof a versifier makith mencion, And sayth on thys wyse:

Anno Milleno quadracenteno-que trino,

32 Bellum Salopie fuerat in Mag[ne] Mari[e] nocte.

**How Dame Iahne, Duchess of Britayne, come into Englonde, and
weddit vnto Kyng Henry the iiij^{te}. And of the comyng of
þe Emperoure in-to Englonde.⁴** [*Big writing, underlined with red.*]

¹ MS. þe^{te}. ² and hym self Ha. hym self *om.* L.

³ Erle of Wircestre *om.* L. ⁴⁻⁴ *om.* L. ⁵ And aftirward L.

⁶ And on L. ⁷ leaf 154. ⁸ and good yemen *om.* L.

⁹ the brother L.

IN the iiij^{te} yere of pe regne of Kyng Henry the iiij^{te} [the] Emperoure of Constaigynⁿople come in-to Englonde, to se pe gouernaunce and pe conveyaunce of pe land, and pe comoditees, on pe Kynges cost; and when he had seyne al þat he wolde, he went 4 ageyne. And þat same yere, Dame Iahne, Duches of Britayne, come into Englonde, and landet at Falmouthe in Cornewaile, and was weddit vn-to Kyng Henry pe iiij^{te} at Wynchester, in the Abbay of Saynt Swithyn, and sone aftirward was crownet at 8 Westemynster. ¶ And þat same yere, Daine Blaunche, the eldest daughter of Kyng Henry pe iiij^{te},¹ was sent with Sire Iohn Beaufort, Erle of Somerzed, hir vncl, and with Maistre Richard Clifford, that tyme Bysshope of Londone, and oper notable persones, vnto 12 Coleyne; and þer was she weddit vnto pe sone of pe Duke of Barry; and after pe ffest of pe mariage was done, pe saide Erle and Bisshope come into Englonde ageyne.

Of the bataile of Mark. [*Big letters, red underlines.*] 16

¶ In pe v^{te} yere of pe regne of Kyng Henry pe iiij^{te}, pe Lord Thomas, pe sonne of Kyng Henry, and pe Erle of Kent, with many oper wurthy men, went to pe see; and they landit at Schuys, and made pere a gret assaut, and brent² in pe Ile of Cageant, and token² 20 iiij karrikkes of Geene, lade³ with diuerse⁴ Marchaundise, and hem brougt into pe Cambre⁵ before Winchilsey; ²and pere pe goodes were cantet, and one of pe karrikkes was sodanly brent; and so pe said lordes went no ferther at þat tyme.² 24

¶ And that yere, in pe xxiiij^{ti}. day of Iunij, the Erle of Saynt Paule laide seege to pe CasteH of Mark, iiij myle out of Caleys, with iiij M^t men, and diket hem stronge with-in pe toune of Mark,⁶ Iohn⁷ Beaufort, Erle of Somerzed, that tyme beyng Capteyn of Caleis, ²and 28 Sir Richard of Asslitoñ, knyghte, his leotenaunt; which Richard,² with the garison of Caleis, allonely⁸ went to Mark, and faught with pe Frensshmen long, and entirt in on hem at pe Northgappe, ²and at pe west gappe,² and slow and toke al that wolde abide. And pe 32 Erle of Saynt Paule hym-self fled his way, ⁹þe pe marreys; and or pe bateH wes done, Sir Iohn Beaufort, Erle of Somerzed and Capteyne of Caleys, come out of Englonde, and landit at Caleys,

¹ þe eldest doughtir of king henry dame Blanch L.

²⁻² om. L. ³ with lade Ha. ⁴ diuerse om. L.

⁵ into pe Cambre om. L. ⁶ of Mark om. L. ⁷ But Iohn L.

⁸ of Caleis allonely om. L. ⁹ om. L to line 2, next page.

and went to Mark, and come to pe ende of pe discumfiture of pe
Frenssh-men⁹: And per was taken the Lord Hanget and¹ many
worthy prisoners of² knyghtes, squyers, ³and men of Armes. and
4 pis bataile was done pe yere of oure Lorde aboue [said, Mt] CCCC v,
and on saynt Crispyne and Crispanes day, as a versifier makes
perof mencion, and saith³: [*No verses follow in the MS.*]

IV.

[*From the first year of Henry V, 1413, to the third year, 1415.*]

⁴ And in pat same yere, on Twelft Night, certeyne lollardes were
8 arested at the signe of pe Ax, without Cripilgate, at London, which
had purposet, thugh peire false treson, to haue made a mummyng
at Eltham, where pe Kyng was; and vnder pe coloure of the
mummyng, they wold have distryet pe Kyng, and pe lordes spirit-
12 uaH and temperaH, and all pe clergy of pe Reame. And pey had
cast to haue taken pe felk be-side Saint Giles; but, as God wold,
pe Kyng perof had warnyng, and come to London, and with hym
pe Bisshope⁵ of Caunterbery, and toke pe felk beside Saint Iones
16 and Clerkyn-weHe, and made to kepe al pe hye wayes to London;
and so were thei taken ay as they come thidirward. And in
London was tak Sire Roger Acton, knyghte, and was drawe &
hanget be-side Saint Giles, where pe Kyng lete do make iiij pairos
20 of gallous, pat were callet 'pe lollers galowes.' And per wes take,
Syre Iohn Beuerlay, a prest, and Iohn Broune, a squyere, and
many oper moo, pe nombre of xxxviii persons and moo, and were
draw, hanget and brent. ¶ And Sir Iohn OldcasteH, pe Lord
24 Cobham, was arest at Wyndesore for heresy, and was sent to pe
Toure of London; and sone after, he was examynt at pe⁶ ffirre
prechours, before al the⁷ clergy of pe wurthiest of religion, and
bisshoppes, and doctours of dyvinite; and per were temperal lordes
28 to here hys opynions. and after, he was sent vnto pe Toure ageyn;
but sone after he brake out of pe Toure, and went in-to Walis.
¶ And pat same yere Iohn Sere, a squyer, slowe Tibey,⁸ a prest in
⁹London, beside Aldrichgate,¹⁰ and pen toke the church of Saint

¹ the Lord Hanget and *om.* L.

² prisoners of *om.* L.

³⁻⁵ *om.* L. ⁴ leaf 155, back.

⁵ erchbisshop L.

⁶ pe *om.* L. ⁷ al Ha. al the L.

⁸ Tibey *om.* L.

⁹ leaf 156.

¹⁰ beside Aldrichgate *om.* L.

Anne; wherfore þe Kyng made þe Cite to wach hym þer, day and nyght, duryng iij wokes; and þen was he muret vp in the chireh: þen he and iij of his mene forswore þe londe, and went in-to Fraunce, and there he dyet. 4

¶ And in þe seconde yere of his regne, he helde a gret counsaile at Westmyn[s]ter, with al þe lordes of his Reame, spirituaH and temperaH: where it was tretit and spoken of his title pat he had to Normauudy, Gascoyne and Gyan, which was his enheritaunce of 8 righte. and after, he held a gret parlement at Leicestre, where, be thavice of al his lordes of his Counsaile, and of þe comyns of his land, he sent in-to Fraunce his enbassatours, to þe Kyng there and to his Counsaile, requiryng hem to yelde vp to him his said 12 enheritaunce, or elles he lete hem wete he wold it gete with þe sword, by þe helpe of Ihesu Crist. ¶ Then þe Dolfyn of Fraunce, Charles, ansuard to þe Kynges enbassatours, and said: "youre Kyng of Englonde is ouer¹ yong and tendre of age to be a good 16 werrioure, and not like to make such a conquest on Fraunce."

¶ Then þe Kynges enbassatours, heryng this scornfuH ansuare, retournet in-to Englonde ageyne, and told þe Kyng and his Counsaile the ansuare and þe entent of þe Dolfyn and of þe Counsaile of 20 Fraunce. ¶ The Kyng then was þerwith sore amevide; and onon in al hast made redy his ordinaunce necessary for þe werre, and lete make .iij. gret shippes—one of xv^c tonne pat was clepit þe 'Gracedieu,' and þe 'gost' and þe 'trynite,' smaller shippes. and 24 he lete ordeyne and make gret gunnes, and al oper ordynaunces, and made his retenewe, And comaundet his lordys, dukes, erles and² barons, knyghtes, squyers,³ and al oper comyners, masons, carpenters, and al⁴ artificers, to make hem redy to go with hym 28 into Fraunce, to help hym wyne his heritage and his righte, and to mete with hym on Lammas Day at Southampton, where he ordeynt his navy to be þer, redy to abide his comyng: ⁵whidir come many shippes out of Holynd.⁵ And when þe kyng was redy, 32 he come to Southampton on Lammas day,⁶ where-as mette hym al his pepill; and þer was he redy⁷ to take his viage ⁵in-to Normandy.

At which day⁵ it was puplisshit, and openly knowen, pat iij 36 lordes, pat is to say, Richard, Erle of Cambrigge, broper to Edward,

¹ ou Ha. ouer L. ² and om. L.

³ & squyers L. ⁴ al oper L. ⁵⁻⁵ om. L.

⁶ on Lammas day om. L. ⁷ And as he was redy L.

Duyk of York, and þe Lord Scrope, Tresourer of Englonð, and Sir Thomas Gray, knyght, had receyuet a gret somme of money, þat is to say, a M^t pounde of gold,¹ and had sold þe Kyng vnto þe
4 Frensshmen and his brether.² Wherefore they were onon taken and Iugit, their hedis to be smytton of; and so they were,³ without þe Southgates at Southampton.³ And when that was done, þe Kyng shippit with his host, and so saylet in-to Normaundy⁴ with
8 xv^c shippes, gret and smaH. And arryvet at Kittance one oure Lady even, þe Assumpcion. And from thens he went streight to Harflewe, and besegit þe toune be londe and be watir.

How kyng Henry the V^{te} wanne Harflewe; and of the bataile
12 of Agincourt, and how the Emperoure come into Englonð.

W Hen Harflewe was besegit be londe and be water, þer were in þe toune viij^c men of werre, with-out lordes and states. And thes were þe names of þe lordes: Sir Iakes de Harecourt, capteyn,
16 þe Lord Gawcourt, the Lord of Hakryse, the Lord of Florry, the Lord of Bleynvile, the Lord of Tiptot, the Lord of Combreyyle, the Lord of Beushvyle, and opir moo which shal be reherset hereafter ¶ The Kyng þen sent to Sir Iakes de Harecourt, Capteyn of Harflewe, and hym comaundit to delyuer þe toune. And Sire Iakes ansuard and said, 'he toke hym none to kepe; nor none he shuld hane pere.' And when this ansuare was brought vnto þe Kyng, he made to lay 'goodgrace,' his gret gunne, and al his oper gunnes, on
24 ich a side, and comaundit his gunners to bete doune þe walles. and so thei shotte on ich side, and brak doune þe walles, and þe houses with-in the toune. ¶ When thay of þe toune þat saw, they sent to Kyng Henry, besechyng hym of viij dayes of respite, if eny maner
28 rescouse myght come to hem in þe menewhile. and if so were there come none rescouse to hem with-in þe viij^{te} dayes, they wold deliuer to hym the keyes and þe toune: and þer-vppon þai wold deliuer hym xxiiij lordes in hostage, and of the wurthyest men of
32 þe toune.

¶ The Kyng then grauntet wele perto; and so ⁵they delyuert xxiiij^{ti} hostages, whos names ben writton in this table ³next folowyng, þat is to say: ³—

¹ receyued the somme of M^l li of gold L.

² and his brether *om.* L. ³⁻³ *om.* L.

⁴ shipped & sailed toward Normandy L. ⁵ leaf 156, back.

The Lord Tutteville,	Thomas de Asses,	
The Lord of Clere,	Iohn Malherbe,	
The Lord of Chasteleyn, }	Iohn Harrard,	
De Beauvise, ¹ }	Stephan Heuband,	4
The Lord Blowset,	Guilliam Buchier,	
The Lord Burnet, }	Laurence Robyn,	
of Langchampe, ² }	Iohn Buchier	
The Lord Iohn ³ of Malevile,	Aleyn Ligne,	8
The Lord Charles ⁴ de Saint	Iohn Graunt,	
Claleyn,	Robyn Walkyle,	
The Lord Caradouse ⁵ Deske-	Iohn le Mare,	
sewis,	Iany ⁿ le Duyk,	12
The Lord Iakes ⁶ de Bankvyle,	Guilmot Guillias.	
Guilliam de Pount,	Colyn ⁷ Langloys,	

¶ And when thes xxiiij^{te} hostages were sent out of pe toune to pe Kyng, al thoo viij dayes after they of pe toune loket after 16 rescoure; but per come none. Wherefore Sir Iakes de Harecourt, s^pat was Capteyn of pe toune of Harflew,^s with lordes and stat^s of pe toune, brough[t] peⁿ Kyng pe keys at the viij^{te} dayes ende, and deliuer^t hym pe toune. ¶ Then pe Kyng made pe Erle of 20 Dorset, Beaufort his vnkill, capteyn of pe toune, and hym com- andit to put out al the Frensshe pepi^l pat were wⁱthⁱn, man woman and child, and stuff pe toune wⁱth Englisshemen, and so he did. ¶ Then pe Kyng remevit from pens with his pepi^l, and 24 come down to Caleis-ward be land, to pe noumbre of viij M^t.; but pe Frensshe-men hade breken alle the brigges where he shuld haue passit over. Wherefore he sought his way in oper places, and come downward to a place clepit Agincourt; where-as al pe power 28 of Fraunce wer gedirt, and redy to stoppe hym pe way, and to gyve hym bataile. ¶ And when pe Kyng this sawe, he praid God be his helpe; and with pe pepi^l pa[t] he had, which was but scarce viij M^t, made hym redy, and hym enbatailt. ¶ The Kyng pat 32 tyme had a mys-trust in Edward, Duyk of York; and pat the Duyke wele perceyuet, and come to pe Kyng, and hym besoughte that he myght haue pe vaward pat day. and pe Kyng hym

¹ De Beauvise *om.* L. ² of Langchampe *om.* L.

³ Iohnⁿ *om.* L. ⁴ Charles *om.* L.

⁵ Caradouse *om.* L. ⁶ Iakes *om.* L. ⁷ And Colyn L.

⁸⁻⁹ *om.* L. ⁹ to pe L.

graunted. Then þe Duyk went forth, and comaundit and charget
 euery man to ordeyne hym a stake of tre, sharpet at both endys,
 and pight an ende asslope in þe ground before hem, that þe
 4 Frenshemen shuld not ouerride hem; for thair purpose was to
 haue ouerriden hem; for they were nombret ^{xx} vj M^t and moo. And
 þe Frenshmen, al þe nyghte before or þat the bataile was, made
 muche reveH, and cryeng and shoutyng,¹ al þe nyghte, and plaiet
 8 Englisshemen at þe² dyce, euery archer for a blank. ¶ And on þe
 morowe about pryme, þe Kyng comaundit euery man to make hym
 redy to bataile, and said thes wordes: "Sirres! thenkes this day
 to quyte youe as men, and feightes for þe righte of Englonde! and,
 12 in the name of Almyghty God, avaunt baner! and Saynt George,
 this day thyn helpe!" Then oure men knelit doune al attones,
 and made a cros on þe grounde, and kissit it, and put hem in þe
 mercy of God.
 16 ¶ The Frenshmen þen come with³ gret pride ferisly, and oure
 archers shotte frely; and att last, both þe battailes Ioynet and
 mette, and sore foughton togedirs. And þe Frenshe men presit so
 fast and so thikke on oure pepiH, þat they fel on þe stakes þat
 20 were pighte in the ground, horse and man, so thikke, ich ouer⁴
 othir, þat gret pepiH of hem were slayne with-out eny stroke. And
 þe Kyng þat day fuH manfully faughte⁵ that same day, his oune
 handys⁶; so that 1 pece of his croune was broken, which afterward
 24 was founden and⁶ broughte to hynd. and so at last, Almyghty God
 gaue grace that he had þe victory of hys ennys, for al theire pride,
 and slowe xij M^t; of the which, þe lordes and þe states of name,
 theire names folowen in þis table herafter:

28	The Bisshope of Sayntis,	The Erle of Brene,
	The Duyke of Brabane,	The Erle of Sannes,
	The Duyk of Barry,	The Erle of Grauntpre,
	The Duyke of Launson),	The Erle of Fallyngberge,
32	The Erle of Douers,	The Lord Dalabret,
	The Erle of Marle,	The Lord Heyle,
	The Erle of Russe,	The Constable of Fraunce,
	The Erle of Almartyne,	The Lord of Dampiere,
36	The Erle of Vandemound,	The Lord of Beaufremound,

¹ and shoutyng *om. L.*
⁴ on L. ³⁻⁵ *om. L.*

² þe *om. L.* ³ in L.
⁶ founden and *om. L.*

The Lord of Danssy, ¹	The Lord Colard of Fessenis,
The Lord Damnery, ²	The Lord Cheyny,
The Lord Robert ³ Frere,	The Lord of Beauford,
The Lord of Ranavile,	The Lord of Branen, 4
The Lord Waryn,	The Lord Raulond of Grotuse,
The Lord of Kemeram,	The Lord Philipe of Lens,
The Lord of Bakevyle,	The Lord William Eriche,
The Lord Senal of Henawe,	The Lord of Saint Clos, 8
The Lord of Mongangies,	⁸ The Lord Iohn of Poys, ⁸
⁴ The Lord Coursy,	The Lord Iakes of Coriamble,
The Lord Oudard of Rant,	The Lord of Caunkesy,
The Lord of Hemes,	⁸ The Lord Colard Somanyng, ⁸ 12
The Lord Symond of FragneH,	The Lord Colard of Frenys, ^[col. 2]
The Lord of Cramys,	The Lord Gaumot of Burnvile,
The Lord Robert ⁵ Monerigny,	The Lord Ronale of Flaundes,
The Lord of Quemes,	The Lord Bidamue of Lannoys, 16
The Lord Daunchy,	The Lord Iohn of Garonnys,
The Lord Gerard of Herbanes,	The Lord Dacoy,
The Lord Iohn of Gres,	The Lord Colenchet,
The Lord of Soile,	The Lord Doo, 20
The Lord Dauphyan,	The Lord Iohn of Beaumont,
The Lord Mounteney,	The Lord Iohn of Drouy,
The Lord Bury and his sonne,	⁸ The Lord Charles, ⁸
The Lord Reynold Dagincourt,	The Lord Philipe Lynberk ¹⁰ 24
The Lord Mayhewe ⁶ of Humes,	and his sonne,
The Lord Philipe of Fosseins,	The Lord Iohn of Calkevile,
The Lord Burian ⁷ of Rubenpre,	The Lord of Bryoile,
The Lord of Poys,	The Lord William of Granevile, 28
The Lord Launcelet of Clarre,	The Lord Humers,
The Lord of Hemedede,	The Lord Iohn of Monteuey,
The Lord of Coresques,	The Lord of Harlyn and his
The Lord of Marquet,	broper, 32
The Lord Robert of Poys,	The Lord Malare of Gurnay,
⁸ The Lord of Noel, ⁸	The Lord of Cankers,
The Lord Robert of Waryn,	⁸ The Lord of Houncious of
The Lord Haucon ⁹ of Croan,	Poys, ⁸ 36
The Lord of Eroun and hissonne,	The Lord of Long,

¹ Anvy L. ² Amery L. ³ lord of L. ⁴ leaf 157.⁵ lord of L. ⁶ Mayhewe om. L. ⁷ Burian om. L. ⁸⁻⁸ om. L.⁹ Haucon om. L. ¹⁰ Lynberk om. L.

	The Lord of Tenys and his sonne,	Fort-escu, Robert of ¹ Savage,
	The Castelyn of Lens,	Brian of Geromes,
4	The Baron of Mary,	Iohn of ¹ Gardyn,
	The Stuard of Henawde,	Dorn dez Pres,
	The Baily of Dauneus,	Iohn of Sempy,
	Iohn Guryñ,	Pier Bonenfaunt,
8	Damset Dannay,	² Burgu of Rony, ²
	Iohn of Lesele,	Pers of Fossenis.

And many othir moo, as before is saide. And thes were pe names of pe Frenssh lordes pat were take prisoners in pat batail :—
 12 The Duyk of Orlyauñce, The Duyk of Burboyn, ²The Erle of Eawe,² The Erle of Richemond, The Erle of Vandome, Sir Iohn of Bare, pe ²Dukes broper of Bare, Sir Bursigaunt,² stuard of Fraunce, ²Sir Iohn de Roche,² And many oper³ moo, to pe nombre
 16 of viij^c.

And pes were pe names of pe lordes pat were slayñ on oure party :—The good and noble Edward, Duyk of York, in pe vaward, The Erle of Suffolk, and oper moo yemen to pe nombre of xxviij^{ti}.
 20 and pis bataile was done pe xxv^{ti} day of Octobre, on Saint Crispyn and Crispians day, the yere of oure Lord, M^t CCCC xv. ²¶ Of which a versifier makes mencion, and saith “Crispini multos strauit gens anglica Francos.” ¶ Then come tithynges to pe Kyng
 24 pat a newe bataile of Frenshmen were redy to feight with hym ageyn. Then pe Kyng onon chargit and comaundet euery man to sle his prisoner. And when the Frensh men pat sawe, they withdrowe hem, and went their way.²

28 ¶ Then come pe Kyng to Caleys with his prisoners, and thankit God of pat gloriose victory, ⁴and Saint George, which halpe hym to fighte, and was seyne abouen in pe eyre, pat day they fauzt. And when pe Kyng come to Caleys, he restet hym pere awhile,
 32 and after shippit, and come into Englonde, and landet at Dovir, and passit so forth to Berehamdounne, where-as mette with hym pe v portes, with x M^t men clenly harnesshit and arrayet. And pen said pe Duyk of Orlyauñce : “¶ what ! shal we now go ageyne to
 36 bataile?” And pe Kyng hym ansuand, and said : “Nay : thes ben childer of my cuntre come to welcome me home.” And there⁵ pe

¹ of om. L. ²⁻² om. L. ³ oper om. L.

⁴ leaf 157, back.

⁵ their Ha. there L.

v portes presentit þe Kyng with a shippe, & gold therin. And so rode he forth to Caunterbery, where-as þe procession hym mette with-out þe toun, and hym broght to Cristischirche; and the Kyng offert at Saint Thomas shryne. And from thens he rode to Eltham. 4
 1 And fro thens he toke his way to London; 1 and on Blakke-Heth mette with hym þe Meyre and the Aldermen, with al the craftes of þe Cite clothet al in rede, to þe nombre of xx^{ti} M^t; and per they welcomet hym home, and þe Kyng hem thanket. And so rode he 8
 forth to London 1 on Saint Clement day, 1 where-as he was riolly receyuet with precession, And song "Aue Anglorum flos, mundi miles Christi!" And when he come to London Brigge, where-as were ij turrets on þe draw-brige, and a gret Geaunt, and on þe 12
 turrets stondyng a lyon and a Antlope, with many anges syngyng "Benedictus qui venit in nomine Domini!" And so rode he forth in-to London; and þe stretes were rially hanget with rich clothes; 1 And in CornhyH was made a rioH toure, full of patri- 16
 arches syngyng "Cantate Domino canticum nouum! laus laus eius, in ecclesia sanctorum!" and kest doun quyk briddes, which flawe thikke about þe Kyng. 1 And when he come into Chepe, þe Condites ranne wyne. And on þe gret condit were xij Apposteles, 20
 syngyng "Benedic, Anima mea, Domino!" and xij kynges knelyng, castyng doune oblays, and welcomet hym home. And þe cros in Chepe was riolly arrayet like a CasteH, with toures pight full of baners, and per-in Angeles syngyng 'NoweH, noweH!' gyvyng 24
 besandes of gold to þe Kyng. And so rode he forth to Paules, where-as mette hym xiiij² bisshopes; and al þe belles ronge agaynes hym; and pere he alight and went to þe hye awter. And there þei song "Te Deum laudamus." And from thens he rode 28
 forth to his palice at Westmynster; And after, he rode about in the land on pilgremage, and ordeynt þe holy Chirch pat Saint George day shuld be kept hye and holy: and so was it neuer before pat day. 32

¶ In þe iiij^{de} yere of þe reyne of Kyng Henry þe v^{te}, Segewyn, þe Emperoure of Almayn, come in-to Englund, and was right wurshiply receyuet at London 1 with þe Meyre, alderme[n] and craftes, 1 and broughte to þe Kynges paleys at Westmynster, where-as 36
 was þe gret haH assignet to hym, which was ryolly hanget with clopes of gold and of Arras. And euery AngeH in þe haH-rof

1-1 om. L.

2 xij L.

holdyng a torche in his houde; ¹and iiij angeles at þe hye deece,
 ich holdyng iiij torches.¹ And þe Kyng gave þe Emperoure þe
 Gartour. And sone aftir, þe Duyke of Holand come in-to Englonð,
 4 and was loggit in Holborn, and abode a long tyme in þe lond, on
 þe Kynges cost; and after, they went home. And þe Kyng went
 with the Emperoure to Caleys, where-as was a Counseyle; at
 which Counseyle was both þe Kyng and þe Emperoure, and per
 8 taried to haue ansuare of þe Frenssh party. And thider come the
 Duyk of Burgoyñ; but he wold not come þer til Humfrey, Duyk
 of Gloucestre, lay plegge for hym. And after, the Emperoure
 went home in-to his cuntre, ¹and many Englissh men with hym
 12 made officers, for he trustid hem better þen his oune nacion.¹
 ¶ And when þe Kyng had his ansuare of þe Frensshe party, pat
 liket hym not, he come in-to Englonð ageyn, and ordeynt a gret
 army.

V.

[*From the Capture of Rouen, 19 Jan. 1419, to the Defeat of the Ghent
 men at Calais, and the Death of Watkin RUSKIN, A.D. 1436.*]

16 ²And then þe Kyng entret in-to þe toun of Roane, and hym
 restit in þe CasteH till þe toun was sette in ruyle and in govern-
 aunce; and after pat, was Caudebek, and oper garisons þernegh,
 yolden to þe Kyng ¹vnder the same appoyntement.¹

20 ¶ Of the treti of pees pat was betwene Kyng Henry of
 Englonð and Kyng Charles of Fraunce; and of þe mariage
 of Kyng Henry þe Vth and Dame Kateryñ, þe Kynges
 daughter of Fraunce; and so þe pees was made³ and
 24 fynysshit. [*Big writing, with red underlines.*]

WHen Kyng Henry of Englonð had goton Roane, as before is
 said, the Dolfyns enbassatores, as it was accordit before—
 with full power to do al thynges, as he were þere hymself present,—
 28 comen to þe Kyng to þe said Cite of Roane; and after many tretise
 had, thus it was appoyntet: pat a certeyñ day sette, þe Dolfyn shuld
 come to þe toun of⁴ Dreux, and Kyng Henry to Aueraunchis, and

¹⁻¹ om. L.

² leaf 158, back.

³ made Ha. was made L.

⁴ toun Ha. toun of L.

pere chese a mene place betwene both assent, where they myghte peasably tret of pe pees. Which appoyntement truly to be kept, pe Kyng and the said Ambassatoures sette-to paire seales. at which day pe Kyng come; but pe Dolfyn com not: wherfore pe pees was 4 broke as for that tyme.

¶ In this mene while, Iohn, Duyk of Burgoyne, which had pe ruyle of pe Kyng of Fraunce because of his sekenes, be letteres and ambassatouris sought Kyng Henry grace; and pe Kyng sent³ Ambassatoures ageyn to Charles, Kyng¹ of Fraunce, and to pe said Duyk, to Province, of which ambassatours pe Erle of Warrewik was chef;² and in pe way as he shuld go, lay a gret busschement of Frenshe men, to take hym, and let hym pe way and his purpose; 12 but he slogh and toke the moost party of hem, and come to Province, and purposed his ambassiat. And so was it pere appoyntet and accordit, that Henry of Englonde and Charles of Fraunce, with pe Quene his wif, and pe Duyk of Burgoyne, shuld 16 come to a mene place, & trete of pe pees. And to do pis message, pe Erle of Saint Paule, and pe sonne and heire of pe Duyk of Burgoyne, come to pe Kyng as Ambassatours. ¶ Then Kyng Henry of Englonde, of pe mater be relacion of Ambassatoures of 20 both parties, appoyntet with his enmys that, at a certeyn day, he shulde come to Maunt, and Charles, Kyng of Fraunce, and Iohn, Duyk of Burgoyne, shuld come to Pounteys; and pe mene place of this treti should be Melan sus Sayn; to pe which, noper party 24 shuld come with moo þen M^t v^c men; and in pe mene tyme truyce shulde be on both parties: which mene place was aftirward arayet betwene ij villages, and lymytit and market betwene ij gret diches, where-in no man shuld come, but onely such as shuld trete. 28 And per pe Kynges tentes were riolly pighte and arrerit, and pe Kynges tentes of Fraunce. And Kyng Henry lete arere ij tentes betwene .ij. diches, where-in both pe Kynges myght trete apart with theire secret Counsaile, ³and pe astate of bope Kynges observet and 32 kept.³ and a stake was pighte in pe myddes of a faire playn, to pe which, and no ferther, eythir Kyng shuld come to oper. And pe day appoyntet,⁴ Kyng Henry come to Maunt, And Kyng Charles, because of his acustumet sekenes, came not; but pe Quene his wif, 36 and pe Duke of Burgoyne, with oper notable prynces of their

¹ Ambassatours to the king L.

² the king made chef the erle of Warrewik L.

⁴ assigned L.

³⁻³ om. L.

alliaunce, and with ¹ M^t v^c men, comen to Pounteys, and aftir, to pe mene place. And Kyng Henry first kisset pe Quene, and pen Dame Kateryn, hir doughter, ²for at pat tyme pe Kyng sawe hir
 4 first.² ¶ Then Kyng Henry, pe Quene and hir doughter, and pe Duyk of Burgoyñ, with oper, went into a tent to trete of pees, where they were almost iij dayes; but it toke non ende ³at that tyme.

In the menewhile, the Dolfyn, with letters and messagers, 8 sterid the Duyk of Burgoyñ that he, nor non of his, shuld assent to pe pees. And at pe v^{to} nonas of August, in pe which pe said Kynges shuld haue semblet, pe Kyng of Fraunce, pe Quene, pe Duyk of Burgoyñ, nor non of hem, come. Wherfor it was
 12 openly knawe that pe Frensh party was cause⁴ pat the pees was not endit at that tyme.

Then Kyng Henry went vnto Pounteys, and gat it. And sent Thomas his broper, Duyk of Clarence, with a notable power, to
 16 Parise, and gate it, And retournet ageyn to pe Kyng. And pen pe Kyng went to Bokend-villers and ⁵Gysours, and gate hem.⁶ And whiles this was in doying, pe Duyk of Burgeyn, pat first sought pe Kynges grace, went to pe Dolfyn to Motreux, vnder
 20 sav-condit of comyng and goyng, and pere, by pe said Dolfyn, was traytosely and vnmanly slayne, As he knelit before hym, and after, put in-to a pitte, botit and spurret. ¶ And when Philip, his sonne and his heire, perof had knowlege, he sought Kyng Henry grace,
 24 and become his man. ¶ The same tyme, certeyn ambassatours of Kyng Charles and of pe Duyk of Burgoyñ, & of Citizyns of Parise, come to Kyng Henry vnto Maunt, to trete of pees; but because the Kyng was so besily occupiet in his werres, and also he supposet
 28 pat the Frenshmen were not fully enclynet to pe pees as than, pis treti toke non ende at pat tyme,⁷ but aftirward at Roan it was fully fynesshit.

¶ Aftirward, whiles Kyng Henry held his Cristenmas in⁸
 32 Roan, the Ambassatours of Kyng Charles and of pe Dukes of Burgoyñ come pidir to hym; to whom Kyng Henry⁹ sent ageyn Richard, Erle of Warrewik, with oper wise men, and a notable power of men of armes,¹⁰ wip full power to concludye the pees;
 36 and aftir many wise tretise had, pees was on both sides concludit, by pe affinite and wedlok of Kyng Henry and Dame Kateryn,

¹ with a L. (Ha has 'M^t. M^t.' for 1000.) ²⁻² om. L. ³ leaf 159.

⁴ cause om. L. ⁵ Bokend-villers and om. L.

⁶ it L. ⁷ at pat tyme om. L. ⁸ att L. ⁹ pe king L.

¹⁰ of men of armes om. L.

Kyng Charles doughter. But be-cause certeyn thynges were necessary, for þe which þe presence of both þe Kynges most nedis be had, what for setting-to of their seales, what for the mariage sewing, And also Charles was so feblet for age, and oft tymes was vexit with his sekenes. ¶ Thus it was betwene hem appoyntet, pat Kyng Henry shuld come at a day lymyt, vnder tryce, with suche puysshauce as hym liket, to Nogent vpon Sayn, to performe finally al thyng that to þe pees was nedful; and if he come not, al thyng shuld be had as for noughte. After this appoyntement þus made, þe Erle retourne to þe Kyng, notifying vnto hym in writyng al þe affecte of his enbassiat. ¶ Then þe Kyng from thens went to Nogent; and þer mette with hym Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyne, with a gret company of men of Armes. Then, after many and diuerse tretise, þe xij^{te} kalendes of Iune, þe xlith yere of þe regne of Kyng Charles, in þe Cathedra^{ll} church þer, Kyng Henry, with Thomas, Duyk of Clarence, his broþer, and oþer 16 princes and nobles, and Isabe^{ll}, Quene of Fraunce, with þe Duyk of Burgoyne beyng þer for Kyng Charles laboryng þen in his forsaid affirmit; and in þeir oune names, and þe iij states of Fraunce, pees betwene þe ij remes of Englonde and of Fraunce was made, 20 and with certeyn condicions approvit. And Kyng Charles charget al his legemen, on payn of forfeiture of paire legeaunce, to kepe þe said pees; And þerto þai mad their gret oth, and plight þeir trouthis in þe handes of Kyng Henry. And onon, Quene Isabe^{ll} 24 of Fraunce, & Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyne, in þe name of Kyng Charles, swore vppon þe Euangelistes to kepe this pees, þus concludit, for theyn, for their heires, & their¹ successours, withouten fraude or male engyne, for euermore. And this same othe 28 made Quene Isabe^{ll}, and the Duyk of Burgoyne, and þe iij states of Fraunce, to Kyng Henry, his heires and his successours. And at the ix^{te} kalendes of Iune, before Quene Isabe^{ll} and Kyng Charles Counsaile in þe parlement, and þe iij states of Fraunce, and oþer 32 Englishe prynces and lordes, contracte of Maternony be present wordes, betwene Kyng Henry and Dame Kateryn, Kyng Charles doughter, there was solempnet and made. And as sone as this was enditet in writyng, as it was accordit, Kyng Henry, Kyng Charles, 36 and þe ij Quenes, ² Isabe^{ll} and Kateryn, and þe Duyk of Burgeyn, went to Saynluys and gate it; and fro thens vnto Melon, and besegit þe toune. and þe seege enduret from þe first Idus of Iuyle vnto

¹ their Ha. & for þeyre L.² leaf 159, back.

Nouembre aftir. and at that seege, lay with Kyng Henry, Iames, Kyng of Scottes, as presoner. And pei within pe toune suffert gret duresse; but at last, for diffault of vitaille, thei yolde
4 vp the toune. ¶ Then pe Kynges and pe Quenes, and Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyñ, with theire hostes, went to Parise; and the Citizyns of pe Citee mette with hem in¹ full noble array, and riolly hem receyued. ¶ And at pe viij^{te} Idus of Ianuare, Kyng Henry
8 and Dame Kateryñ comen in-to Englonð, and laft at Parise Thomas Beaufort, Duyk of Excestre, his vncl, and Thomas, Duyk of Clarence, his broþer, Regent of Normaundy. And pe xiiij day of Feuryere, ²pat feß on pe Sondag,² Dame Kateryn was crownet at
12 Westemynster with gret solempnyte.

¶ And in this while Thomas, Duyk³ of Clarence, with oper certeyñ lordes, made a iournay, and lefte at home pe yomanry, but toke with hym gentels and speris; at which iournay he was
16 slayñ with pe Scottes, and al pat come with hym; and pe Erle of Huntynghton was per take, and oper moo, ²and pat wás gret routh.²
¶ And when tithinges perof come to Kyng Henry, he was sorowfull and hevy, and made hym redy to go ouer see; and at
20 Mydsomer next aftir the coronacion,⁴ he went ouer⁵ into Fraunce ageyn, ²and left the Quene in Englonð,² and gat certeyñ garisons pat were rebeß, and besegit pe toune of Meux; at which seege tithynges come to pe Kyng pat pe Quene was deliuert of a sonne
24 at Wyndesore pat was clepit Henry. ¶ And whene pe Quene⁶ was purifiet, she went ouer into Fraunce to pe Kyng. And after pat Meux was yoldon, Kyng Henry went to Parise, makyng ordynaunce to be-seege pe toune of Cane. And þen a sore and a fervent malady
28 hym toke, and fro day to day hym vexit til he deyed in pe Casteß of Bois de Vincent, the last day of August, when pat he had regnet ix yere, v monithis, iiij. weekes and iiij days; and aftirward he was brought in-to Englonð Riolly, and enterid at Westemynster.

[*The Accession of Henry VI.*]

32 **A**fter the noble⁷ victoriose pryñce, Kyng Henry the vth, regnet his sonne, Henry the vj^{te}, ²that was bore at Wyndesore in the fest of Saint Nycolace the Confessoure,² and began to regne in pe age of ix monithes and xv dayes. And to Richard, Erle of

¹ with L. ²⁻² om. L.

⁴ the coronacion om. L.

⁷ noble & L.

³ Duyk Ha. duyk of L.

⁵ ouer om. L. ⁶ quene Ha. pe queene L.

Warrewik, was commyttit þe kepyng of hym, for-as-much he was countet and hold þe best-nurtured man of Englonð; and þe Bisshope¹ of Caunterbery and the Bisshope of Wynchester were his godfaders; and þe Duches of Holand was his godmoder; ²and ⁴so forth-with-al he was sette to howsokk. and þat same yere þe Duches of Holand was weddit to Humfrey, Duyk of Gloucestre,² and the first yere of his regne, dyet Charles, þe Kyng of Fraunce, ²att Bois de Vyncent, and was entered at Parise,² and þe Quene ⁸his wif with³ ²hym. And þat same yere was one Sir William Tailoure, prest, brent in Smythfeld for heresy.

¶ And þe second yere of his regne, Sir Roger Mortymer, knyght, brak out of þe Toure of London, be counsaile of certeyn persones ¹²of þe same Toure, and was tak ageyn on þe Toure-wharf, and after brought to Westmynster: and þere was he iuged to þe deth, and was draw and hanget at Tiburn, and quartert, and his hed set on London Brigge; and his hert and his bowelles were beryet in ¹⁶þe Grey Freris in London, on the north side of þe chirch.²

¶ **Of the Bataile of VernuH in Perche be Iohn, Duyk of Bedford, and Regent of Fraunce.** [*Big letters, red underlines.*]

In the second yere of þe reyne of Kyng Henry the vj^{te} aboue- ²⁰said, Iohn, Duyk of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce, & ⁴the Erle of Salisbery; Mountegu,⁵ the Erle of ArundeH, the Lord Scales, the Lord Poyninges,⁶ with þe nombre of xij M^t of Englysshe men, laid seege to Ivory in Normaundy. And whiles they lay att that ²⁴seege, the Duyk of Launson gadert a gret host of Frensshmen, and Scottes and lumbardes, þe nombre of lij M^t, to rescowe Ivory, and to give bataile to þe said Duyke of Bedford. But when they herkk that þe Duyk of Bedforde had with hym xij M^t men, thay ²⁸laffe Ivory, and come to VernuH in Perche, which was þat tyme in þe handes of Englysshe-men, ²And the Lord Scales therof beyng capteyn, and was att þe said seege of Ivory.² ¶ Then þe Frensshe men chargit þe Englysshe men to delyuer þe town of VernuH vp to ³²32 hem, And ⁷the said Duyke of Bedford and all his power were ouerthrowe and slayn before Ivory. And they of the town of VernuH wend it had ben trewe, And gave vp þe toune to þe Frenshmen. And þus⁸ by this trayn, VernuH was lost, vnknowyng of ³⁶36

¹ Archbysshop L. ²⁻² om. L. ³ also L.

⁴ & om. L. ⁵ Mountegu om. L. ⁶ the Lord Poyning om. L.

⁷ leaf 160. ⁸ þus om. L.

the Duyke of Bedford and pe lordes which lay att pe said^d seege of Ivory¹; neuerpeles at last it was yolden^d vp to hem. ¶ Then iij M^t. men toke theire leve of the Duyk of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce,² and departet from^d thens³ hom^d to their garisons. And they were not passet thens xij lekes, but tithynges come to pe Duyk how pe Frensshe had geten VernyH, and were therin. Wherefore he onon, with pe Erle of Salesbery, Mountegu, pe Erle of ArundeH, pe Lord Scalys, and pe Lord Poynynges, with⁴ ix M^t Englissh men, retournet⁵ to VernyH, and toke thair felde a myle from^d the toune, to gyve the Frensshe men bataile; but pe Frensshe men^d nor pe Scottes⁶ wold^d not beleve pat the English men^d wold^d feight with hem^d, for they had redy knowlege pat iij M^t men^d were gon^d hom^d to their garisons, and pey were⁸ but ix M^t men, and they were lij M^t: notwithstanding, a day of batail was sett. ¶ Then oure Englissh men pichet theire stakes; and on pe day of batail when pai shuld feight, they knelit doune and kissit the ground; and pen the Duyke of Bedford bade ‘aunant baner!’ And so they Ioynet to-gedris and faughte; and the Duyk of Bedford faughte pat day manfully with his oune hondis. And whilis they were besy feightyng, the Lumbardes of pe Frensshe host comen behynde the batail of pe Englissh men, and slowe theire pages, and went away with thaire horses. And on Yong, an Englissh Capteyn, fledde away with v^c men in his felissh[ip]e, and told how Englissh men had lost the felde; which was afir taken, and was hanget, drawe and quartert, as he was wele wurthy; for God fortunet so, that pe Duyke of Bedford had the vi[c]tory and the felde⁹ of his enmyse, and put pe Frensshe men^d to the flight, and chasit hem to pe toune dikes of VernyH, where-as many of hem^d were drownet. ¹⁰ And when pey retournet agayn to the bataile, thay fand pe Scottes feghtyng stiH with pe Erle of Salisbery whiles pei were folowyng pe chase of the Frensshe men. And so then onon pe Scottes were aH discomfit and slayne, pe Englissh men cryyng “A Clarens, A clarans!” for cause pe Scottes before that tyme [ferede] pe Duyk of Clarans. ¶ And the[s] were pe names of pe lordes, kny3tes and swyers, and men of name of pe Scottes pat were slayne in pat batail: that is to say,

¹ Bedford pat lay before Ivory L. ² and Regent of Fraunce *om.* L.

³ Ivory L. ⁴ Salesbury the lord of Arundel & pe lord Scalys with L.

⁵ went L. ⁶ nor pe Scottes *om.* L. ⁷ durst L.

⁸ were lla. pey were L. ⁹ and the felde *om.* L.

¹⁰ There is a gap in L from here to batail on p. 567, l. 15.

The Erle Douglas, þat was att þe bataile of Shrewisbery new made
Duyke of Turreyn,

The Erle of Bugham,	Sir Gauter Lynnesey,	
Iames Douglas,	Alexander Hume,	4
The Lord Sauyton,	Adam Dalgleis,	
The Lord Dondas,	Alexandre Stuard,	
Sir William of Seton,	Iames Lunieston,	[col. 3]
Sir Thomas of Murray,	Robert Serand,	8
Sir Gye Ferard,	Andrewe Murray,	
Sir Iohn Saintclere, [col. 2]	Thomas Grenston,	
Sir Archbald Goumerston	Huchon Candy,	
Sir Gauter Berton,	Dauid Murray.	12

¶ And many oþer Scottes moo of gentilmen, and þe men were
there slayne that ben not namet here.

¶ And þes ben þe names of þe lordes and men of name of þe
Frensshe men that were slayne in þat same bataiH before the toun 16
of VernyH in Perche : that is for to say :

The Erle of DaumaH, [col. 1]	Sir Lowis de Trye,	
The Erle Bendtadom,	Sir Charles de Guesines,	
The Erle Romier, [col. 2]	Sir Iohn de Murrak,	20
The Erle DaubinaH,	Sir Gyles Deschavile,	
The Lord Manny, [col. 3]	Sir Iohn Bonnestablez,	
The Lord Gravile,	Sir Giles de Camegez, [col. 2]	
The Lord Flenogin,	Sir Boit de Turnbun,	24
¹ The Lord Mountenay,	Sir Tristrem Coiseron,	
The Lord Camelhart,	Sir Charles DesneuaH,	
The Lorde Chageron,	Sir Robert de Layre,	
The Lord Mesilate,	Sir Charles de Bruyne,	28
The Lord Dauterme,	Sir Iohn Poyngaunt,	
The Lord de la Frait,	Sir Peris de Bellay,	
The Lorde de Cathemagez,	Sir Peris BottereH	
The Lord de le Forge,	And his brother,	32
The Lord de Bellay,	Sir Fraunceis de Gryngoux,	
The Lord de le Champayn,	Sir Emery de la GrissiH,	
The Lord Gamagez,	Sir Pruncele Fraunceis,	
The Lord Dassail Raboule,	MarshaH de la Fait,	36
The Vicont of Nerborn,	Peris de Guyssay,	

¹ leaf 160, back.

	Peris de Trusselle,	Heton de Guesmez,
	Robynet de Cleremount,	Geffrey Paillam,
	Lewis de Osternard,	Regnaulton Grenault,
4	Colville le Vicont, [col. 3]	Godffray de Soubres,
	Druet Desson,	Hewe de Beaussault,
	Geffray de la Gressih,	Le Camus de Frisendy,
	Andrewe Poyngaunt,	Guylliam Remon de la Maiser,
8	Iolin de Tonevile,	Lewis de Bagard,
	Moriard de la Mote,	Peron de Luppe,
	Iohn Frere,	Ion de Puche.
	Iohn de la Famruner,	

12 Thes were þe names of lordes, knyghtes, squiers, and gentilmen
of name þat were slayn in þe said bataile, of Frensshmen, and
many oþer moo þat ar not here namet. And the nombre of al þe
Frensshemen and Scottes that were slayn in þat batail, be¹
16 herawdes accompted, xij M^t v^c xxx, with² hem þat were drounet
in þe dikes of VernyH. ¶ And thes were the names of hem þat
were taken prisoners: ³ The Duyke of Launson, Iohn Boutevile,
Sir Peris Henson, Vidain Lannoye.⁴ ¶ And when þis bataile was
20 don⁵ and þe Englissh men had þe victory, they lovid⁶ and⁷ thanket
God gretely of his grace, And forthwith went to þe toun of
VernyH, which was onon⁷ deliuert vpe⁸ to hem, ⁹and had⁹ aH þe
stuff that þe Frensshmen ther-in hade.⁹ And þen went þe Duyke
24 of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce peasably to Roon, thankyng
God of þat victoriose battaile.

¶ In the iij^d yere of þe Regne of Kyng Henry þe vj^{te}, the
Prince of Portyngale come in-to Englund; which was of þe Kyng
28 and þe¹⁰ lordes wurshiply receyuet. And astirward, at Saynt
George Fest att Wyndesore,¹¹ the said Prince was made¹² Knyght of
þe Garture. ¶ In the iiij^{te} yere of his regne þer fih a gret discord
betwene Humfrey, Duyke of Gloucester, and Henry, Bisshope of
32 Wynchester; wherfore the Comyns of London aros with þe said
Duyke, which lay þat tyme at his oun place ⁹at Baynardes CasteH,
ageynes þe saide bisshope, which lay þat tyme in his place⁹ besides
saynt Mary-ouerheis in Suthwerk. but the Prince of Portyngale,
36 beyng that tyme¹³ in Englund, labourt so betwene hem, as God

¹ And in this taile were slayn be L. ² with out L.

³ And there was taken L. ⁴ Lannson and many moo gret lordes L.

⁵ don Ha. was don L. ⁶ lovid and om. L. ⁷ anon up L.

⁸ vpe om. L. ⁹⁻⁹ om. L. ¹⁰ of þe L. ¹¹ att Wyndesore om. L.

¹² made att Wyndesore L. ¹³ same tyme L.

wold, to kepe þe pees; wherthurghe þere was non harme done,—thanket be God!—¹ And so were the comyns of London pesite.¹ And þat same yere come Iohn, Duyk of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce, in-to Englonð, with þe Duches his wif, ¹þat was the suster ⁴ of Philipe, Duyke of Burgoyñ; and was full rially receuet of þe Maire and of þe Citizins of London.¹

¶ In the v^{te} yere of his regne a parlement was holden att Leycestre; att which parlement the Duyke of Bedford made ²yong 8 Kyng Henry the Sixt, knyghte; and xxiiij knyghtes were made with hym. And when þe Kyng wes made knyght, he made with his oune handes other xxiiij knyghtes. And att þat parlement were made many statutes and ordynaunces, and many newe officers. ¹² ¹And in þat same yere there was one William Wawe, an Outlawe, taken out of þe sayntuary of the Abbey of Bewley, and broughte to London to the Kynges-benche, and after, to Westemynster, and was pere dampnet, and had into Southwert, and sette in a cart, and ¹⁶ was broughte so thrughe-out London, and so forth to Tyburn, and þer was hanget; And after, his hekk smytten of and sette on London Brugge.¹

¶ In the vij^{te} yere of his regne, Herry, Bisshope of Winchester, ²⁰ went ouer see to Caley, and so forth to Rome, where-as þe Pope hym made Cardynaß, and gave to hym þe cros, to be born before hym alway where he went; but it was afterward taken away and laide down by commaundement of þe Pope, for cause he shulde ²⁴ haue comyn into Praage with a certeyn nomber of men of werre, whiche cunte was out of beleue of Christen faith. but he faillet his promyse, and come not there, but changet his purpos for þe wele and þe worshiþe of al the Reame of Englonð, and went into ²⁸ Normaundy with a notable meyny of Archers, the best þat couth be geton in eury place of Englonð ¹for ix^d on þe day, euery archer ij or iij bawes in a cace.¹ And so, by his comyng theder, was sauid all that lande; and elles þat tyme it shuld haue ben lost. ¶ Then ³² afterward, he come ageyn into Englonð, and was there wurshiply receyvide ¹with the Meire, Aldermen, and craftes of London, and brought so forthe to Westemynster, and lay þer in the Abbottes place within the Abbay.¹ ¶ In the vij^{te} yere of his regne þer was ³⁶ a great derth of corne. for a bussheß of whete was at iij^s sterling; and all oþer cornes were dere þat yere.

How Kyng Henry the VI^{te} was crownet att Westemynster;
And after, be counseil of his lordis of Engeland, was
crownet Kyng of Fraunce att Paryse.¹ [*Underlined with red.*]

4 I^N the viij^{te} yere of the regn of the said² Kyng Henry the
vj^{te}, he was crownet at Westemynster in Nouembre, on Saynt
Lethenardes day; and on pe nyghte before, he made xxiiij^{ti}
Knyghtes of the Bath in pe Toure of London, which rode before
8 hym on the morowe, al in blewe, toward his coronacion, to his
paleis att Westemynster. Att which coronacion was gret rialte
seynd; for al pe condites in Chepe ranne both of rede wyn and
white; and the condite Also in pe palice of Westemynster rann
12 with rede wyn; take therof, who-so wolde. And pat same yere,
sone after, he went ouer see into Fraunce with a faire felesshipe of
dukes, erlis and barons, ³in the monythe of May, and with the
nombre of iiij M^t men,³ and landet att Caleis, and went so forth be
16 londe thurgh Pikardy to Roane, where-as he was righte Rially
recevid and welcomet. ¶ In the ix^{te} yere of his regne, the Erle of
Perch, the Erle of Morteyn, the Lorde Fitz-Hewe, and pe Lord of
Audelay, shippit att Sandewiche with iiij M^t men, and landet att
20 Caleis, and went so forth thurgh Picardy⁴ to Roane. And onon
after, Henry, Cardina^t, Bisshope of Wynchester, the Lord Clynton⁵
and Sir Thomas Donstable, shippit then att Portesmouthe, and
sailet so to Kittecaux, Harflew, and to Roane. ¶ And in pe x
24 yere of his regne he was crownet att Paris, Kyng of Fraunce,³ on
oure Lady day pe Conception, in Decembre; where-as was hold as
ria^t a fest as euer was had of eny kyng.³ And in pat same yere
was Louers geton, & the⁶ walles beton down, and made an open
28 village, for all maner of pepi^t, both Engli^sshe and Freⁿsshe.

And pat same yere the Kynge come to Caleys out of Fraunce,
and shippit there, and londet att Dovor, and was wurshiply
receyuet with the barons of the v portes. And⁷ ⁸so was he
32 brought forth vnto London, and receyuet by pe Meire and Alder-
men, the first day of Marche; and so broughte to Eltham: And
ich crafte of Londen had his liuerey braudert, that every crafte
myght be knowen from othir.³ ¶ In the xj yere of his regne, the
36 Duches of Bedford, pat was that tyme clepit Madame Regent, and

¹ kyng of Engeland and after in Parise kyng of Fraunce L.

² the said om. L. ³⁻³ om. L. ⁴ thurgh Picardy om. L.

⁵ the Lord Clynton om. L. ⁶ leaf 161, back.

⁷ And fro thens he com to London L.

suster to the Duyk of Burgoyne, dyet att Roan; whos deth turnett Englyssh men aftirward to much trouble; for al þe whyles þat she was on lyue, hir brothir, Duyk of Burgoyne, was euer holdyng vppon the Englysshe party; but sone after þat she was ded, his hert was cast clene away from Englysshe men, and turnet to þe Frensshe party, and become enmy to Engeland, as ye shaH here aftirward. ¶ In the xij^{te} yere of his regne, the Duyk of Bedford and Regent of Fraunce weddit the doughter of the Erle of Saynt 8 Paule, a faire lady.¹ And þat same yere fih a gret discord betwene Sir William OldhaH, Knyghte, Leotenaunt of Caleys vnder þe said Duyke, and sawdiere of Caleys, for askyng of paire wages; where þe said sawdioures were to-gedirs sworn, and kept hym out 12 of the toune, and wold not suffere hym to come with-in, ² notwithstanding his wiff beyng within the toun.² And so went he then to Roan, and compleynet hym to þe Duyk of Bedford, and capteyn of þe said toun,³ Caleis, and made hym hevy lord toward⁴ þe said 16 sawdioures⁵; in so much þat he come doun out of Normaundy, with his lady þe Duches, the Erle of Saint Pauls doughter, and þe Bisshope of Tirrewyn her vncle, and Sir William OldhaH his leotenaunt, to þe CasteH⁶ of Balyngham, a myle from þe toune of 20 Arde. And there he lay vnto⁷ Richard Bukkeland, Tresourer of Caleis, and Capteyn of the said CasteH of Balyngham, had entretid þe saudours of Caleis, and aggreit with hem, and gyven hem obligacions of customs. And when he had made agrement with 24 hem, the Duyke and Capteyn come in Peasably to Caleis, with his lady the Duches, her vncle, and Sir William OldhaH his leotenaunt, and was⁸ rizt wurchiply recevid of þe burgeis, marchaundes, and sawdioures, ²and brought to þe CasteH with al the Sawdioures of 28 þe toune.²

¶ On þe next morawe after, he sent for þe porters, and for þe keys of al þe gates of the toune, into þe CasteH. And after sent forth sergeautes, and arestit dyuers Constables and vinteners, and 32 putte some in prison in the CasteH, and some in the MarshaH prison; and made onon also to Arest aH the obligacions of Custome that couth be founden in eny Saudours handes, and toke hem fro hem. ¶ And after, made Richard Veere, þat tyme beyng Meire, to 36

¹ a faire lady *om.* L. ²⁻² *om.* L. ³ toune of L.

⁴ to L. ⁵ sawdioures of Caleys L.

⁶ Normandy with þe said Oldhall to þe CasteH L.

⁷ vnto þe [i time that] Ha. vnto L.

⁸ with þe said leotenaunt and was L.

gyue Iugement on¹ iiij Soudeoures to be hedyt vnder pe pillery ;
for the which was made gret mone amonges the pepiH. And after,
he come to the toun haH hym self, and sate there with pe Maire,
4 and pe Kynges swerd² beyng *per present*, and hade al the sauadioures
of pe toun before hym. And al pat were billet, stode before hym
vngird³; at whiche tyme iiij were banshit, and al their wages
forfette. And they stode on pe lifte syde ; and al pat abode within
8 the toun stode on pe right syde ; but a gret part² of hem were
putte out of wages,³ and lost al that hem was owyng.³ And when
al this was done, he went to Roan ageyn with his lady the
Duches,⁴ and had neuer after bodily hele till he dyet.

12 ¶ Of the treti of Arras, and howe the Duyke of Burgoynd
turnet to the Frensshe party ; and howe he laide Seege
to Caleis, ³ And howe he withdroughe hym in-to Flaundres
or pat Ony rescous come, in the nyghte.³

16 I N the xiiij^{the} yere of the regne of Kyng Henry the vj^{te}, was the
grettest froste that was in many a day before ; for it began
vppon Saynt Kateryn even, and lastit to pe iiij^{te} day of Marche, the
space of xvj wekes. And Temmes pat tyme was so sore frozen,
20 that the vintage of Burdeux went ouer Shoters HiH : for pe shippis
with wyne myght come no nerre then Sandewiche. ³ and pat froste
pat tyme distroyet oisters, and muskelles, and fresshe-water fissh,
through pe moost party of Englonde.³ ¶ In pat same yere was pe
24 treti of Arras betwene the Kyng of Englonde, Henry the vj^{te}, And
Philipe, Duyke of Burgoynd ; and Charles de Valoice, Dolfyn of
Fraunce, that tyme beyng there in enbasshat for pe Kyng of Englonde,
Henry, CardynaH of Englonde, Bisshope of Wynchester, Iohn
28 Kempe, Erchbisshope of York, Iohn, Erle of Huntynghton ; Pole,⁵
Erle of Suffolk, ³ Prevey Seale, Sir Waulter Hongerford, Sir Iohn
Poppahm,³ with a faire feleshippe with hem, to pe number of viij^c
men. att which treti, pai wold the Kyng of Englonde shuld have
32 putte out pe floure de lice out of his Armes ; and many oþer thynges
was spoken of ; but to say shortly, pei couth not accorde ; wherfore
they departit thens, and come home ageyn into Englonde. but
thay of pe toun of Popperyng in Flaundres demenet hem
36 vngentilly, and entretid hym vnmanerly as he⁶ come rydyng

¹ to L. ² leaf 162.

³⁻³ om. L. *Heading in big letters, underlined with red.*

⁴ with his lady the Duches om. L. ⁵ & Paule L. ⁶ pey L.

thrughe the toun from the saide trefy of Arras¹; wherfore he² was sore amovid and grevid with hem, for they made his men³ to bere out of toune peyr horses dong, mawegre their tetter; neuerpeles he⁴ suffrit it, and rode on his⁵ way; but he² quytte hem that foule⁴ and gret dispite, as ye shaH here afterwarde.

¶ Then, as sone as thenbassetoures were departet from Arras, and home,⁶ the Dolfyn and the Duyke of Burgoyne were accordet, and made att one⁷ for deth of the Duyk of Burgoyne's fader, pat was⁸ slayn att Muttereux by pe same Dolfyn; and perwith endit aH that trefy.⁷ And then onon after, pe Duyk tok in-to his handes Abvyle and Amyas, and oper tounes and Castelles; and after, by a kyng of heroudes, he sent the Kynges lyueray to Caleis, [and, by]⁸ the 12 counsail of his lordes and hem of Flaundres, he made⁹ redy his ordynaunce and his pepiH,¹⁰ to come and lay seege to Caleis. And pe Flemmynges were pen so proude and hawteyn pat they sette by none Englysshe men, but hem had in gret despite, thrughe-out aH 16 Flaundres. And grete noice pere was of comyng of pe seege; neuerpeles Marchaundes yette went al this while into Flaundres to and fro, but thai had eviH chere in al plases. And they of Brigges made payntet clothes, howe¹¹ pe Flemmynges were att seege att 20 Caleis, and howe pai wann pe toune; and hanget out Englysshe men by the helis out at lopes: and weH was hyn pat myght by of pes clothes! And pai made entirledes and plaies in Brigges, of pe CardynaH of Wynchester And of the Dolfyn, of thaire purposyng 24 and Ansuaryng att the trefy of Arras, And aH in dispite and hoker¹² of Englyssh men; thei were so glad and fayn pat they shuld lay seege to Caleis, and wyne the wulles of pe staple of Caleis,¹³ and to departe it amonges hem; And bostet and saik pat 28 pe steevan Caleis was but a¹⁴ male tyde, pat is to say, A mele tyde; And mony othir scorneful wordes thai had that tyme Amonges hem. And that same yere, in pe heryng tyne, pere come iij C botes out of Normaundy to Caleis on fisshyng fare, as they were wont ich 32 yere; and euery bote had in xvj¹⁵ men. and they come as fisshers, and in fisshers clothyng; but a gret part of hem were men of werre, and had cast to haue geton pe toune. but att last, as God wolde, the[y] were aspiet by their fyne smale shertes and by 36

¹ of Arras *om.* L. ² pey L. ³ made an englyssh yemen L.

⁴ they L. ⁵ peir L. ⁶ and hom *om.* L. ⁷⁻⁷ *om.* L.

⁸ Sir so Ha. ⁹ and made L. ¹⁰ and his pepiH *om.* L. ¹¹ who L.

¹² and hoker *om.* L. ¹³ of Caleis *om.* L. ¹⁴ leaf 162, back.

¹⁵ xv L.

- their poyntes; wherfore Richarde Woodvile, Squyer, leotenaunt of
 pe said toun of Caleis vnder the Duyke of Bedford,¹ charget euery
 souldioure to bere his staff in his hand, as wele in pe cherche and
 4 att sacryng tyme as in pe market, and not to leve stondyng att pe
 chirch durre, as they were wont to do; and so thaie bare thaire
 stavis in peire handes in pe chirch, and ouer al. Then the Frensshe
 men vnderstood wele pat they were aspriet, and sawe wele pey²
 8 couth not brynge theire entent³ nor purpos about; And wenth
 their way out of Caleis hauen in a tide, and went streight to pe
 toun of Deepe, and come in pere as ffisschers, and so gate pe toun.
 And in pat same yere dyet the Duyke of Bedford in Roan,⁴ on
 12 Holy-Rode even in May, which had layn longe seeke; for whos
 deth was made muche mone amonges Englysshe men: that were pat
 tyme in Normaundy; for as long as he leuit, he was doutet and
 dreck amonges the Frenssh men.
- 16 ¶ In the xiiij yere of the⁵ regn of pe said Henry the vj^{te}, Hum-
 frey, Duyke of Gloucester, Protectour and Dessendour of Englonde,
 was made Capteyn of Caleis; and he was Capteyn of Guysnes before
 that tyme; And so he was both Capteyn of Caleis and of Guysnes.⁴
- 20 And he made Sir Iohn Radcliffe his Leotenaunt of Caleis,⁶ and
 sent hym thedir⁷; which was a wurshipful knyzt, and was wel-
 belouet amonges pe sawdiours there: for he kept and helde A gud
 and open housold to who pat wolde come, and welcome.⁴ ¶ Then
 24 come tithynges ich day more and more of pe seege comyng to Caleis.
 Then Sir John Radecliff, pe Leotenaunt of pe toun, Robert
 Clidrowe pe Meyre, and Thomas Thirland, Leotenaunt of pe staple
 of Caleis,⁶ with pe sawdioures, marchaundes, and burgeses and
 28 comyners, kest vp a faire brode dike on pe south side of the toun,
 and made iij stronge buHwerkes of erthe and cley, one att pe
 corner of pe CasteH with-out pe toun, anoper att Bulleyn gate, and
 anoper att pe postern be pe Princes Inne; And att Mylke gate was
 32 a faire bulwerk made of breke, pat Richard Woodevile had do make
 or he was discharget of his leotenauntshippe. And pai fortifiet pe
 walles, toures, and dikes on ich a side of the toun, with-in and with-
 out, And dresset theire lopes and theire gunnes to shote both hye
 36 and lawe. And the vj CasteH in the Marche; pere pat Englysshe
 men were in hem, fortifiet as strongly as they couthe, that is to say,

¹ vnder the Duyke of Bedford *om.* L.

² pou Ha. pat pey L.

³ not brynge theire entent *om.* L.

⁴ *om.* L.

⁵ of Ha. of pe L.

⁶ of Caleis *om.* L.

⁷ to Caleis L.

the CasteH of Guysnes, the CasteH of Balyngham, the CasteH of Hammes, the CasteH of Sandgat, the CasteH of Marke, and the CasteH of Oye. And Sir Iohn Radcliff, Leotenant, warnet and charget al pe cuntre þat was of pe Englissh pale, [þat þey] shuld⁴ come and bring a[[] thaire goodes, and breke down theire houses; and so, many of hem did, and many of hem stale away, some into Picardy and some into Flaundres. And pere¹ was a cry made in pe market-place² of Caleis, þat al maner of men beyng in Caleis, or 8 lyvyng vnder biH vnsword, þat they shuld come to pe toune-haH, and³ there to be sword the Kynges trewe leege men; And þai that wold not be sword, to take peire goodes and go theire way where þay wold. And so pere come many, and were there sword; and many 12 went theire way into Flaundres, and wold not be sword. ¶ And on Saynt George day, Sir Iohn Radcliff sent word prevely to pe Daywach of pe toune in pe nonetye to ryng⁴ out the laron beH, vnwetyng to the sawdioures of pe⁵ toune. And so per was a grete 16 Alaron, and saudioures were onon in thaire harneys, and comyners with hem, And wende þat enmys hade comen to haue fechet the bestys þat were pasteryng about the toune; but pere was non; for Sir Iohn Radclif did it for a sport, because it was Saint George 20 day; And for þat he wolde se howe saudioures wold bokkeH and dresse hem to peire harneys.

¶ And sone afterwarð, Edmond, Erle of Morteyn, and the Lord Camys, Sir William of Asshton, knyghte,⁶ And Sir Geoffrey 24 Werburton, knyghte,⁶ shuld haue shippit att Wynchilsey to haue gon into Fraunce with the nomber of iij M^t men of speres and Archers; but because there was so gret a noys of pe seege comyng to Caleis, þei⁷ were contirmaudit be pe Kyng⁶ and pe Duyke of 28 Gloucestre⁶ to go thider, and strenghe pe toune tiH rescous myght be had. And so went pe Erle with his Armee to Caleis. ¶ Then Humfrey, Duyke of Gloucestre, Protectoure and Deffendoure of Englonð, and Capteyn⁶ of Caleis and of Guysnes,⁶ send for al pe 32 lordes of the Reame, both spiritueH and tempereH, and for al his feede men, and desired of hem an eyde for pe rescowe of pe saide toune of Caleis. And pe lordes temperaH hym graunted to go with hym hem-self in propur person, and fynde a certeyn meyny with 36 hem vppon peire oune cost; And bisshoppis, Abottes and priours also graunted to fynde a certeyn meyny to go with hym; And al

¹ And sone aftir there L. ² place om. L. ³ and om. L.

⁴ leaf 163. ⁵ of Ha. of þe L. ⁶⁻⁶ om. L. ⁷ that þei Ha. þei L.

his feede men hym graunted eke to go with hym; And he thonket
aH. And then was it criet in al pe port townes and haven townes
in Englonde, pat al maner shippis pat were able to saile be pe see¹
4 shuld come into² Sandewich haven be a certeyn day; and so thei
were pe number of ij^{c3} sailes and moo. ¶ Philipe, Duyke of
Burgoyne, made hym redy, and the Flemmynges, al this while, and
toke dyuerse marchaundes prisoners, as they come homward out of
8 Flaundres to Caleis, and specially they of Dunkirke.⁴ And when
pe Erle of Morteyn was comyn with his Armee to Caleis, as before
is saide, he made a iourney of Bulleyn, xx^{ti} myle from Caleis, and
brent the subbarbes of pe toun, and come to Caleis ageyn on pe
12 next day after, vnfoghten with, and broughte with hem paire pray
of bestes and theire pillage. And onon after, he made anothir
iourney in-to West Flaundres, to a place clepit pe Lawe. And
whiles they ryfelt and spoilet that cuntre, and praiet in cateH, al
16 pat cuntre gedert, and come doune to Gravenyng, to mete with hym
there. And when pe Erle and his meyny come dryvyng theire
pray of bestes before hem, on pe sandes betwene pe toun of
Gravenyng and pe see, thay issuet out of pe toun prudly, and
20 faught with hym; but pai were sone discomfit, & slayn of hem iij^c
and moo: then thai fledde in-to pe toun, and pe Englyshe men hem
foloet, and toke many prisoners. ⁴ And per was an Englysshe man,
a gentill man, and a spere on horsebake, folowet pe chase of hem
24 right to pe hark gates of pe toun, so nere that his hors bare hym
into pe toun of Gravenyng, wheder he wold or no; which after
ward was delyuert be raunson.⁴ ¶ The Erle pen, with his pepill,
drove ouer pe havon of Gravenyng thaire pray of bestes, att lowe
28 water, in spite of al pe Flemmynges, and brought hem with al
thaire prisoners to Caleis, and lost neuer a man; thonket be God!
and ⁴ pai brought so gret plente of Cowes with hem, pat a man
myght haue pe best melche cowe pat was, for xij^d sterlyng.⁴ ¶ And
32 when pe Kyng and pe lordes had tithynges of pis iourney of
Gravenyng, the Kyng sent to pe saide Erle of Morteyn to Caleis,
the Gartur. And onon aftirward, the Lord Camys, Sire William
Asshton, And Sir Geffrey Weckton, with pe garnyson of Caleis and
36 of Guysnes, made pe iij^{de} iourney, both of horsemen and ⁵footemen,
and rode before the toun of Arde, and ryfelt aH the cuntre about
pe said toun. And in the mene while, Sire Robert Savoys, Capteyn

¹ be pe see *om.* L.

² and in Ha. into L.

³ ij^c L.

⁴⁻⁴ *om.* L.

⁵ leaf 163, back.

of Fynes, had gedirt of Pykardes to pe nombre of iiij M^t speris on horsbake, And laide hem pryvely in Campe Grove besides the CasteH of Balynggham. And when pe Lord Camoys with his peple was comyng homward in the felde be-syde the said grove, 4 the[i] stert iij hares, and perwith pay gave a gret showte; And so both horsemen and footemen, *with* huntynge of hem, were stragelt abrode ouer aH pe feldys, and were al out of array, and wist nothyng of pe Pikardes *pat* lay in pe grove besides hem, but euer 8 stiH showtet and huntet after pe hares, which were att last slayn amonges hem. ¶ And as pay were so stragelt and out of Array, the Pikardes sodeynly brake out of pe Grove, and rode thurgh oure meyny, in and out agayn, and smote doun many fotemen. 12 and pen, many of oure horsemen, seying this, fledde to pe CasteH of Balynggham; but the Lord Camoys and pes ij knyghtes kept pe felk; And as God wold, the fote-mene relevid ageyn to pe standart, And, pe horse-men also, And sett frely on pe Pikardes, and hem 16 discomfyt, and slowe many of hem, and drof hem to the gates of Arde, ¹where-as one Lucas, a squyer, folowet hens *within* theire barreers, and was slayn; for whome was made much mone.¹ And pus,—thonket be God!—pe Lord Camoys had pe victory of his 20 ennys, ¹pe Pikardes, in a felk callet pe Golden Dale, besidde pe CasteH of Balynggham,¹ And come to Caleys, with peir pray.

¶ Onon after, the Duke of Burgoyne, Phelipe, was redy, and come doune to Gravenyng with his ordynauce, and Flemmynges, 24 pe nombre of an CL M^t, and xij M^t cartes; and ¹ich cart had his cokke to cawe amonges the host.¹ ¶ Then pai made a brigge ouer pe water of Gravenyng, ¹into a place callet pe Hoke, *pat* was partenyng to pe saide Duyke.¹ And so come pey ouer, and shewet 28 hem before pe CasteH of Oye, and sent to Nicolas Horton, squier, and Capteyn of pe same CasteH, an heraude, charyng hym to delyuer vp pe CasteH. And he sent hym worde agayn, and said he toke hym non to kepe; nor non he wold delyuer: Neuerpeles, 32 afterward, by a fals trefy, pai had hym out of pe CasteH to come speke with pe Duyk. And in pe mene while pe CasteH was wonnen by a grate of Iron, *pat* was lafte open in pe buttery, where-as a gune lay whiles pe saudiers were in pe haH aboven, 36 trefyng of a poyntement with an heraud of pe said Duykes; And sodeynly pe Flemmynges come in, and toke hem in pe haH, and

hanget lvi on þe gallows vnder þe CasteH,¹ without eny pite, And slowe al þe remenaunt, except Nicolas Horton, Capiteyn of þe said CasteH, and one William Bullion,² Constable, And William
4 Bullion, his cosyn²: thes iij³ were prisoners, but ²Nicolas Horton þe Capteyn was long afterward⁴ raunsonet, and come home in-to Englonð; And þe Constable dyet in prison for sorowe; And his cosyn William² Bullyon⁵ was so beknowe and welebelouet with þe
8 Pikardes, þat thay gave hym his raunson, and lete hym go where he wold, so þat he shuld go to Caley, and espy when þe Duyk of Gloucester shuld come ouer with his Navey from Sandewich, And sende hem worde. ¶ When this William Bullyon come to Caleis,
12 þe pepiH had gret mervaille þat he was letton go without paying of eny rownson; wherfore Edmond, Erle of Morteyn, made to arrest hym, and put hym in prison, and bare hym on honk þat he was a spy. And þer⁶ he knowlegit þat he promyset hem to give hem
16 warnyng of þe comyng of þe Duyk of Gloucester, because of his deliuerance, but he sware he thoughte neuer to haue warnet hem; neuertheles, for þat he was broughte vnder þe pillery in þe market of Caleis, and there his hed was gird of: for whome muche mone
20 was made, for he was a gud Archer.

¶ When þe Flemmynges had þus wonnen þe CasteH of Oy be a trayne, as before is said,² which was on Saynt Petirs even in Iuyn,² thai brake vp al þe lede of the halle and of þe toures, and
24 brent vp euery stykke; And after, vndermynet þe walles and ⁷ þe toures, and sette shores vnderneath, And after, sette þe same shores on fyre, and brent hem, and so lete þe walles and toures⁸ faH doune⁹ into þe dikes. ¶ Then, þe second day of Iuyle, the
28 Flemmynges laide seege to þe CasteH of Mark, þat was next þe CasteH of Oye; but þe Erle of Morteyn had sent thider before, Christofer of Barton, squyer, with a certeyn felesshiþe with hym, to helpe¹⁰ to strenghe þe CasteH. ¶ The Flemmynges laid peire
32 gonnes to þe walles,² & beete down þe vawmures and þe walles,² and gave þe Englishe men with-in many stronge assawtes; and they manfully hem diffendit, and beet hem of, and fortifiet þe walles ageyn with tymbre and donge, & with such thyng as they
36 had within hem, And kept it be strenghe vj dais. And when þay sawe þai couth haue no rescowe, thay gave it ouer, and yolde hem-

¹ vnder þe CasteH *om. L.* ²⁻² *om. L.* ³ ij *L.*

⁴ afterward was Ha. ⁵ þis Bullion *L.* ⁶ þei Ha. þer *L.*

⁷ leaf 164. ⁸ toures & walles *L.* ⁹ doune *om. L.*

¹⁰ to helpe *om. L.*

self prisoners. ¶ Then þe Flemmynges spoilet þe CasteH, and brake of al þe lede, and brent it, and vndermynet þe walles and toures¹, ²and sette shores *per-vnder*; and after brent hem, and lete þe walles and toures faH into þe dike, as þai hade done þe CasteH 4 of Oye.² ¶ Then, þe ix^{te} day of Iuyle, In þe yere of oure Lord Ihesu Crist M^t iiij^c xxxvj, Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyne, with þe Flemmynges, come to Caleis, and laid seege *perto* be land, and pight his tentis³ before þe toune, on þe playne of Saint Peters, a 8 myle nere out of þe toun. And þe Duyk hym-self lay a litiH from Newname brigge, And þai of Gaunt beside hym, And þey of Brugges, with þe comyntee of Flaundres, lay besides Saynt Peters Chirche. but the Duyke lay not *pere* but ij days, but *pat* he 12 remeveH from thens, and al þe Gaunteners with hym, to þe Est ende of þe toun, And *pere* he pichet his tentes; for he wold ly no lenger att þe west ende of þe toun, for cause a gune shotte thugh his tent. And then þei of Gaunt onon made a strong bulwerk on an 16 high hiH of þe downe, of pipis & tymber, betweene paire loggynges and þe toun, and shott gunnes in-to þe toun; and many tymes þai shot al ouer þe toun; but al þeire gunshot did neuer harm, thanket be God ²and þe Holy Virgyn Saint Barbara!² ¶ In þe mene 20 whiles, whil þe Duyke lay att seege at Caleis, with þe Flemmynges,⁴ Sir Robert Savoys, knyght,⁵ with iiij M^t Picardes, come before þe CasteH of Balyngham. And one Richard Sellyng, beyng *perof* leotenaunt vnder Richard Bokelond, Squier, and Capteyn of þe 24 same CasteH; which Richard Sellyng gave ouer *pat*⁶ CasteH shamefully, without eny stroke, vpon apoyntement to go to þe Castell of Guysnes in thaire doublettes; and so thai did; and lafte al theire goodes, and þe stuff of þe CasteH behynde hem, which was 28 þe⁷ best-stuffet place in al poo marches.

And when Richard Sellyng come þus to Guysnes with his feleshippe, William Picton, Leotenaunt of Guysnes ²vnder Humfrey, Duyke of Gloucester,² putte hym in prison in þe said CasteH 32 of Guysnes. And when þe Picardes had pis CasteH, þe[i] spoilet it, and brake of þe lede, and brant al þe place, and vndermynet þe walles⁸ and toures, and lete hem faH in þe dike, as the Flemmynges hade done with þe Castelles of Oye and Mark. ¶ Then þe Picardes 36 come before þe CasteH of Guysnes, and laide seege *perto*, and

¹ toures so *pat* al þe Castel fell to þe grounde L. ²⁻² *om.* L.

³ tentis L. *om.* Ha. ⁴ with þe Flemmynges *om.* L. ⁵ knyght *om.* L.

⁶ þe same L. ⁷ þe be Ha. þe L. ⁸ places L.

broughte with hem a gret brasen gune of Dogeon,¹ with iij chambers, and ij othir grete gunnes of Iron callet bumbardes; and paye laide þe brasen gune in A seller of þe toune of Guysnes, on þe
 4 dikeside of þe CasteH, and shotte att a ward next a toure callet þe Faanetoure, and brake it doune in-to þe dike. but William Picton, Leotenaunt of þe CasteH, with his felesshiþe with-in, fuH manfully and discretely hym gidet, and it fortifiet ageyn with tymber and
 8 dong. ¶ And in this while, anoper meyny of Picardes come before þe CasteH of Sandgate, and bade hem deliuer vp þe CasteH; for pai said aH oper Castelles were gyven ouer. Wherefore Sir Thomas Knevet, [that] was sent thidir with A crewe, and made perof
 12 leotenaunt be þe Kyng,² Wist not what for to do; And so,² ³by⁴ þe counsaile of one Sir Thomas Heneley, Preest, A traitour, he gave vp þe CasteH of Sandgate, shamefully and cowardly, with-oute eny stroke, and hym-self and all þat were with-in þe CasteH, prisoners,
 16 except þe fals preest, which was letton go where he wold; but⁵ he went vp into Fraunce, and neuer man wist after where þat he become. ¶ And when pai had þe CasteH, pai brake down þe lede, and sette fyre on al þe place, and vndermynet þe walles; but þe
 20 Dongeon was so strong, þay couth not vndermyne it, but brake it a litiH abouen; and so þey lefte it, and lete it stande.

¶ Philipe, Duyk of Burgoyñ, lay stiH all this while, with his host of Flemmynges, before Caleis; and þei of þe toune had letten
 24 in the see, and drownet al þe cuntre about hem. And ich day pai of þe toune and þe Flemmynges skarmysshed to-gedirs. And when pai had leyñ per xiiij daies, þe Duyke lete ordeyn .xx. shippis out of Flaundres, wherof vj old shippes were lade with hard ston, 28 chalke, and brekes masont in hem with mortar, to droune hem in þe haven of Caleis, þat no shippis shuld come per-in. And when it was fuH see, about noone, þey bulgit hem, some in þe haven-mouth, and some be-sides the haven, to no purpos; for þei durst
 32 not tary, nor þei had no gret leysere to droun hem, for fere of gun-shotte; And so þei went þeire way ageyn; and on þe next day after, at lawe water, wel was hym of þe toun þat myght bring an Ax to breke þe shippis; and so pai did, al to peces, and broughte
 36 hem in-to toune, and refresshid wele þe pouer pepil; and al þe brekstones were gyven to Saynt Mary Chirch; ²and so were pai al cariet in-to toun.² And whilis þis was in doying .I. thowsand

¹ of Dogeon) *om.* L.

²⁻² *om.* L.

³ leaf 154, back.

⁴ but be L.

⁵ and L.

Flemmynges stoden on pe downes and beheld it, and were full sory in peire hertes, and were full gretely *perwith*¹ abasshit; for pai had wend² *per* shuld no shippis haue comen in pe haven afterward. ¶ Sone after *pat*, it fell *pat* they of Brugges that lay at Saint 4 Petirs, come from peire tentes down to Bulleyngate ward, some *with* pavis, and some with crossebawes, a grete meyny stragelynge. And pei of pe toune ordeynt speres on horsebakke prevely in Bulleyngat bulwerk, so *pat* they were not seyn; and sent out 8 certeyn fotemen to scarmysse *with* hem, til pey sawe theyre tyme to breke out on hem. And when pe horsemen sawe paire tyme, pei sodenly prikket to hem; and pen pe Flemmynges fledde to pe tentes; but or pai couth come there, pai were ouerthawen, and 12 brought in-to pe toune, xxxvj^{ti} of hem prisoners; and pe host with-in pe tentes fled out at pe est side,² and wend al pe worlde had comyn on hem: And pis was on a Thursday; wherfore pe Flemmynges it clepit the 'Quade Thursdagh.' ¶ When pis Journey 16 wes done vpon hem *pat* were of Brugges,³ and of pe comynthe of Flaundes,³ the Gaunterers *pat* lay *with* pe Duyke at pe est ende of pe toune, loghe hem to scorn; for pe which fi⁴ a gret debate amonges hem, and faught with-in hem-self, so *pat* no^{per} party 20 come to othir after *pat* tyme. ¶ And on pe Setirday sevennyght, & ij daies afterward, they of pe toune of Caleis, *with* certeyn horsemen & fotemen, Issuyt out sodenly on pe afternoone, and went streight to theire bullewerk on the hye hi^h in pe dounes, and man- 24 fully it wanne and toke, and slowe al *pat* euer were in hit, and brake doune pe bullewerk, and went hamward with peir prisoners; but pe Erle of Morteyn mette hem without pe toune, and made to sle al pe prisoners, for cause of one Watkyn Ruskyn, a genti^h man 28 and a gud spere, was slayn at pe wynnyng of pe same bullewerk. And when pis bullewerk was pus wonne vpon hem of Gaunt, they of Brugges were glad, and logh hem of Gaunt to scorn.⁵

¹ *perwith* full gretely L. ² ende L. ³⁻³ om. L. ⁴ fell L.

⁵ Gaunt Ha (*last word of the incomplete MS.*). Gaunt to scorn L.

[I]

[*Lambeth MS. 6, col. 2.*]

[*The Siege of Calais abandoned. The Englishmen's Mocking
Song against the Flemings.*]

¹And þis Seturday at night, the Lord Welles wes sent ouer to
Caleis by the Duyk of Gloucestre *with* a certeyn meyny, to
strength the toun till he come *with* his nauey; And he landed
4 behynd þe toure of Ryesbank. And his peple made so gret noice
in þe loundyng, that þe Duk of Burgoyne & they of Gaunt, which
lay at þe Est ende of the town, wend the Duk of Gloucester had
londid *with* his nauey þat sam nyght; wherfore þe Duk & they of
8 Gaunt brake vp þeire tentes sodeynly & priuely, & went ouer
Grauenyng watir þat same nyght, and lasfe behynd hem much of
þeire vitaille & of þeir ordynaunce; and gunnes were founden
beried vnder þe erthe. And thay of Brugges, þat lay at Saynt
12 Petirs *with* þe comynthe of Flaundres, knewe no-þyng of theire
goiing til þe Sonday in the mornyng aftir; on which Sonday, at
the releuyng, iij. Englissh trumpettes blewe vp on hye vpon
Milkgate toure, as ²they were wont to do euery day at þe releuyng
16 of the wach duryng the seege. And then they aspyed þat aH þe
Gaunteners were gon; but þey at Saynt Petirs lay stiH. but as
sone as they sawe þat the Duyk, þeire lord, & they of Gaunt, were
gon, þey brake doune þeire tentes, & sette þeire loggynges on fyre,
20 and fled þeir way in aH that euer þey myght, and laft behynd hem
much of þeir vitailles for hast. And they of the towne wold haue
folowed aftir; but þe Lord Welles had brought a priuey seal from
þe King, charging, on payn of their lyues, the[y] shuld not passe
24 gunneshotte *without* toun til þe Duyk of Gloucestre come *with* his
power; And ne had þat ben, there had ben gret good geton þat
tyme.

¶ AH þis while þe Pycardes lay at seege at Guysnes, and had
28 smytte doune þe ward next þe Faane toure, *with* þe gret brasen
gunne, as before is said. And when they of the CasteH sawe þe

¹ leaf 255, back.

² leaf 256.

Flemmynges sette þeire loggynges on fyre, thay made to ryng the
 larome beH in al that þey my3t. Wherfore the Pycardes were sore
 abasshid, and wend the Duke of Gloucestre had ben landed with
 his power, & wes comyng to rescowe the Castel, And anon ¹brake 4
 þe seege, and carted þeire ordynaunce, & fled in al that euer þey
 my3t. And they of þe Castel yssued out, both on horsebak & on
 foote, aftir hem, and ouertoke the gret brasen gunne carted, & two
 opir gret bombardes of yron; but the iij. chambres of þe brasen 8
 gunne were scaped from hem with þe hoost. Then they of Guysnes
 hewed in sonder the cartwheles, and aftir, with strenght of men &
 horses, they wer brought into þe said Castel of Guysnes; & aftir
 they were brought in-to the toune of Caleis. ¶ And on this wise, 12
 Phelip, Duk of Burgoyne, & the Flemmynges, departid from Caleis,
 and þe Pycardes from þe Castel of Guysnes, with gret shame & gret
 diswurship, & with gret losse. Wherfore amonges Englisshmen
 were made many rymes of þe Flemmynges; among the which, one 16
 is here sette for a remembraunce, that saith on this wise:—

When þe Flemmyng wer fressh, florisshid in your flouris,
 And had we[l]th at your will, ye wolde be conquerouris
 Of Caleis, þat litill toune: as it come in your mynde; 20
 But ye, to conquere Caleis, it comeþ you not of kynde.

²Remembres on pat wurship ye wann the first day,
 When the Erle of Mortein come passing with his pray
 Before youre toune of Grauenyng, wher ye, as men bold, 24
 Come rennyng on hym fersli, as lyons of Cotteswold,
 With habirgeons & hounsculles, & rusti kettiH hattes,
 With long pykes, goden daghes for to stikke the rattes,
 With messis & meskins, & eke with side Iakes, 28
 Doune vnto mydde þe leg, of kanuas lyke to sakes;
 Stoppid al with hempen tawe, and þat in straunge wise,
 Stiched like a matrace, al of þe newe gyse,
 Ye laid vpon þenglisshmen so myghtily with your handes, 32
 Til of you iij. hundrid lay strechid on the sandes.
 Ye fled þen in-to Grauenyng, and wold no lenger bide,
 And gaue þe Erle leue to passe ouer that same tyde
 In saafte with his prisoners, & lost neuer a man: 36
 This was þe first wurship, of Caleys that ye wan.

¹ col. 2, leaf 256, Lambeth MS. 64.² leaf 256, back.

Remembres how ye laide seege, with gret pryde & bost,

¹To Caleis, *pat* littil toun: the noumbre of youre host

Was a hundrid thousand & fifty, to reken by *þe* pollis,

4 As it was *pat* same tyme founden by youre rollis ;

And yette, for al youre gret host, erly nothir late,

Caleis was so ferd of you, *þey* shitte neuer a gate.

Remembres how ye drowned att full see for *þe* nones,

8 With shippes, Caleis hauen, massoned *with* stones,

And how that *þe* Calisers hem brake the next day,

When it was lawe watir, and bare lxiii clene away,

Euery stikke & stone, & lafte not ther one log.

12 Remembres eke on Goby, the watir-bailiffes dog,

How he scarmysshed *with* you twyes vpon the day,

And among you, on *þe* sandes, made many a fray.

Remembres ye of Brugges ; how ye ferst wan youre shone,

16 How ye come forth to scarmyssh vpon an aftirnone

With pauses & crossebowes, on Saynt Petirs playne,

And how sone the Calisers made you to turne agayne,

²And ouerthrewe you sodeynly, or euer that ye wist,

20 And brought you in-to Caleis, tyed fast by the fist.

Remembres ye of Gaunt eke : for al youre pride & bost,

Wonneñ was youre bulwerk, beside your gret host,

And slayne all that was therin : & ye, that same night,

24 Fled ouer Grauenyng watir ; but go *þat* go myght,

And youre lord *with* you, for dreed and for fere

Of the Duyk of Gloucester ; & yette was he not *þer*.

Wel was hym might go before *with* pisone & *with* paunce,

28 And laft behind you, for hast, al youre ordynaunce.

Remembres, ye Picardes, at seege eke as ye lay

Of Guysnès, that strong Castel, how ye fled away

For ryngyng of the larume beñ, shamfulli in a morowe,

32 As ferd as *þe* Flemmynges, *with* hertes full of sorowe.

Ye lost there your ordynaunce, of gunnes that was cheff :

To you & to al Pycardis, shame and gret repreff.

Remembres now, ye Flemmynges, vpon youre owne shame ;

36 ³When ye laide seege to Caleis, ye wer right still to blame ;

¹ col. 2, leaf 256.

² leaf 257.

³ col. 2, leaf 257.

For more of reputacioun, ben Englisshmen þen ye,
 And comen of more gentiſh blode, of olde antiquite ;
 For Flemmynges come of Flemmed men ye ſhal wel vnderſtand,
 For flemmed men & banſhid men enhabit firſt youre land. 4

Thus proue I þat Flemmynges is but a flemmed man,
 And Flaunders, of Flemmynges, the name firſt began.
 And þerfore, ye Flemmynges, þat Flemmynges ben named,
 To compare with Englisshmen, ye aught to be aſhamed ! 8
 Ye be nothing elles worth, but gret wordes to camp ;
 Sette ye ſtiſt, & biſh in pees : God gyue you quadenramp !

¶ Such & many opir rymes were made amonge Engliſshmen,
 aftir the Flemmynges were thus ſhamfully fled frome Caleis, & þe 12
 Picardis from Guisnes feldd, & gon þeire way, for drede & fere of
 þe comyng of the Duyk of Glouceſtre, whiche by þat tyme was redy
 at London with his power & armee to come to þe reſcows of Caleis,
 & to ſhippe at Sandwich, wher-as lay redy in þe hauen iij^o ſailes 16
 to abyde his comyng.

[*End of the MS.*]

[K]

[*Extracts from the unique Lambeth MS. 84.*]

I.

[*How Havelok's son, Curan, became King of Denmark and England.*]

¹How Kyng Edelf married Argentyl to a knave of his Kechyn.

ANd Kyng Edelf, þat was vncle to þe damoyseH Argentil,
bethought him how he myght with some tresoun have þe
4 lande fro hire þat was his Nece, for euermore; and, false
forsworne ayenst his othe, thought how he myght disceyue þe damoy-
seH; And so he married here to a knaue of his kechyn þat men callyd
Curan. And this Curan becam þe worthiest man of body þat ony
8 man wist in ony lande; for he was þe lengest man & highest of aH
þe Kynges householde, or in ony oþer place þat men knew þat
tyme. And Kyng Edelfe supposed to haue maryed hire shamfully
& vnworthily, for enchesoun þat he thought to haue alle here
12 lande, as he had & heelde before þat tyme, but he was disceyued;
ffor this Curan was Haulokes sone, þat was Kyng of Kirkeland
in Denmark, as ye shul here. ¶ Haulok,² þat was Kyng of
Kirkelonde in Denmark, spousyd þe Kyngis doughtir of þis londe,
16 whiche was ryght eyre of þis lande, þat men callyd Gildeburghe,
& he begat on hire this forseide Curan, whiche was his eyre. And
whan Haulok vnderstode þat he shulde deye, he betoke his sone
Curan to a lorde of his londe to kepe, þat he louyd & trustid
20 moche vnto; and þat this lorde shulde mary his sone Curan to
some worthi gentylwoman, whan he were come to age, & to make
kym Kyng of his landis. This lorde grauntyd hym þat he wolde
so do, & toke þe childe with hym, & kepte hym. ¶ But aftyrward,
24 this lorde bethouhte hym how he myght put this childe Curan
from his enerytaunce, and þat alle the lordis of Denmark dred
hym, & many of them had hym in gret fauour; and therupon, he
leete crowne hym-selfe Kyng of aH Denmark, and toke homage &

¹ leaf 48.

² Marginal rubric: How Curan, þat was Haulokis sone, kyng⁴ of Den-
mark, weddid þe Kyngis douhetir of Ingelond.

feaute of aȝ þe lordis & peple of Denmark. And anon he betoke
 Curan, þat was riht eneritour to þe crowne of Denmark, vnto a
 fissher, prevely, þat no man vndirstode, & gaue þe fissher gret good,
 & also chargyd hym, on payne of deethe, þat he shulde take þe 4
 childe Curan *with* hym, & priuely drowne hym in þe see, so þat
 he may neuer se nor here more of hym. The fissher seyde it
 shulde be doon, & toke þe childe *priuely with* hym. And whan he
 was in þe brode see, & purposid to doon this deede, he had gret pite 8
 & compassioun vpon this young childe, and thouht it were gret pite
 to drowne so faire a childe; & so he *withdrew* his euil purpose, &
 saued þe childis lyfe, & toke þe younge childe *with* hym, ¹and
 forsoke þe lande, & dwellyd in another countre *with* þe childe, for 12
 drede off þe Kyng þat vsurped þe lande. And this man kept tys²
 childe tyl he was wox moche, and of a resonable age; and alwey
 þe childe callyd hym 'fadyr,' wenyng to hym þat he had so be;
 tyl vpon a tyme, tis² fissher callid þe childe vnto hym, and tolde 16
 hym how he was nat his fadyr, but seide þat Haueelok, whiche was
 Kyng of Denmark, was his fadyr; & whan he shulde dye, he
 prayde a lorde of his londe to kepe his sone Curan; "& whan ye
 were come to natural age, to make yow Kyng of þe lande, as 20
 rightful enerytour. And he toke yow to me, & gaue me gret good,
 & also charged me, vp payne of deede, þat I shulde drowne yow in
 þe see. and I fulfillyd nad his commaundment, but sparid youre
 lyf, & kept yow hidyr-to *with* tho goodis þat he gaue me; & perfor 24
 I durste not abide in þat londe, but fledde *with* yow in-to this
 countre; for he regneth now for kyng of Denmarke, & vsurpeth þe
 crowne. And perfor I counseile yow to drawe to som pryncis
 courte, þat ye may haue eyde & helpe to enerite youre londe ayen." 28
 ¶ Than this young Ientylman thankid this fissher of his gret
 charite, & toke his leue, & cam to þe Kyngis courte of Ingelond,
 and was a sqwiler in þe kechyn: þe whiche kyng þat regnyd tho
 in Ingelonde was Edelf, whiche vsurpyd þe lande wrongfully, from 32
 his owne cosyn, whiche was kyng Adelbrightis doughtir, & riht
 eneritur, þat men callyd ArgentyH. ¶ And þis Kyng Edelf
 thouhte to mary her shamfully & vnworthely, for enchesoun to
 haue her londe from her; & so he maryed her to Curan, þat was 36
 sqwiler of his kechyn. ¶ And than Curan toke his wife ArgentyH,
 & went in-to Denmarke, and as God wolde, whiche helpith aȝ
 good men in ther right, conueyed Curan & his wife to þe howse of

¹ leaf 48, back. Lambeth MS. 84.² sic MS.

a worthi knyhte of Denmarke, þe whiche lovyd wel þe fadyr of þe
seide Curan. And whan this Curan was come thedyr, þe knyhte was
glad to holde hym, because þis Curan was so hye a man of stature,
4 & wel made with-alle; & þe knyght comaundid his serwauntis
to make hym & his wife goode chere; for they semyd onest foke.
And aftyr, whan þe nyght was come, þei were asyngned where þei
shulde lye. And in þe dede tyme of þe nyght, whan alle folkis
8 were a-bedde, & be lyklyode a-slepe, there was a gret lyght in þere
chambre, whiche oon of þe knyghtis seruauntis aspied, & preuely
went vnto þe chambre to wete what yt ment. & whan he come
thedyr, he sye a wonder grete stre^lme of lyhte com from þe mannys
12 side, & also a-noþer from þe womannys side, þei beyng fast aslepe,
pat alle þe chambyr was lyght *pere-with*. And þis man yede softly
vnto his maistyr þe knyht, & tolde hym what he sye. & þe knyht
rose hym vp & yede thedyr, & fonde yt sothe as his man had seide.
16 & þe knyht maruelyd sore what it shulde mene, & yede a-yen to his
bed, & musid sore ther-on. ¶ And on þe morw þe knyht arose, & sent
for this man Curan; and anon þe knyht axyd hym what man he
was; who was his fadyr; & where he was born. Than Curan seyde:
20 “syrre, I wot nevyr where I was born, nor who was my fadyr, but
be þe seyng of a man pat was a fissher, whiche kept me vp of
yowthe; & I knew none oþer but pat he was my fadyr. & whan I
was growen moche, & vndirstode resoun, he seide to me that he
24 was not my fadyr, but seyde pat þe Kyng of Denmark was my
fadir, pat men callyd Hauelok, & Gildeburghe my modyr, whiche
was þe Kyngis douhtir of Ingelond. & whan my fadyr shulde dye,
he betoke me to kepe to a lorde of his, & prayde hym pat he shulde
28 make me kyng, whan I come to lawful age. & that lorde betoke me
to a man pat was a fissher, & gaue^h hym gret good, & also chargyd
hem, vp payne of dethe, pat he shulde drowne me in þe see; but
þe man, of pite, cowde not fynde it in his herte.” Thanne seyde
32 þe knyht: “if it be thus, I shal knowe be sertayne fetures &
tokenys pat is on youre body, þe whiche pat I & oþyr knyhtis
were comaundid to se & take hede of, when ye were ryht younge.”
Than Curan stripte hym nakyd; & anon þe knyht sye þe markis
36 on his body pat he knew ful wel. And than þe knyht knelyd
doun & did hym worship, & seide, ‘forsothe he was þe sone of his
warshipful lorde Hauelok, & rihtful ayre of Denmarke.’ And in
alle þe hast, þe knyght wrote vnto dyuerse lordis of pat lande,

seyng, þat 'Curan, þe sone of Haueloke, & rihtful eyre, was founde, & was with hym, in his place.' ¶ And whan þe lordys herde this, & vndirstode þe trowthe, anon thei assemblyd a gret power, & cam thedyr, & did homage & fewte vnto hym. and aftyr 4 þat, thei yede & gaue batayle vnto þe Kyng þat vsurpyd, whom þe seyde Curan slew, his own hondis. And aftyr þat, thei crownyd hym Kyng of Denmarke, & so he enoyed his enheritaunce. ¶ And in þe nexte yere folwyng, this seid Curan cam in-to 8 Ingelonde, & conquestyd his wifes lande, and slowe Kyng Edelfe in þe xx. yere of his regne. In whois tyme deyde Seint Ethelburga, þe first abbes of Berkyng, In þe yere of oure Lorde v^lxxviii. And this Edelf was þe last kyng of þe trew Brytouns. 12

Anno domini v^llxx: Regned Curan, þat was ¹Hauelokis son, Kyng of Denmark, whiche reynyd be his wifes titel, & not be his owne. Capitulum lxxvij.

Aftyr Kyng Edelf, þat was þe laste kyng of þe trewe Brytouns, 16 Regned Curan In þe yere of oure Lorde. v^llxx. & þis Curan was Hauelokis sone, Kyng of Denmark, þat was a Dane; & he regned be his wivis tite, & nat be his owne; & he was a good man, & wel rewlyd þe lande. And he ne regned but 20 iiij. yeris, for þe Saxons & þe Danys slewe hym; & þat was gret hurte to alle Britayne; ²& so he deyde withoute yssu; & þe Britouns bare his body to Stonehenge, & þere entered hym with moche solempnite. 24

II.

[*The Quarrel between Richard II & his uncle, the Duke of Gloster.*]

³ In þe xx^{ti} yer Kyng Rychard heelde a grete feste at Westminster. At whiche feste arryued þe Sowdyours þat had kepte a toune callyd Breste, & satte at dyner in þe halle, whiche touzne Kyng Rycharde had delyueryd by appoyntemente to þe Duke of 28 Brytayne, wherof hygan moche trouble & sorwe, whiche dured vnto Kyng Richardys dethe. And aftyr dyner þe Duke of Gloucetre, his vncl, Sir Thomas of Woodstoke, sayde to þe Kyng: "Syre! haue ye not seen tho felawes þat sate at dyner in youre halle?" 32 and þe Kyng demaunded who they were: and he sayde, "they been

¹ leaf 49, back.

² Rubric in margin: This kyng deyde withoute yssu.

³ Slip of vellum between leaf 181 and 182, written on one side only. At the top of leaf 182 is "John Stoughton is a littel wantton."

your folke þat haue seruyd yow, & ben come from Breste, & now wote not what to doo, & haue ben euyl payde." Thenne þe Kyng sayde þat they shal be payde. Then seyde þe Duke in a grete
4 furey: "Syre! ye oughte fyrste to put your body in deuore to gete a tounne or a Castel be feet of warre vpon your enemyes, er ye shulde selle or delyuer ony townes þat your predecessours, Kynges of Englonde, haue gotten & conquestyd." To þe whiche þe Kyng
8 answeryd ryght angrely: "how saye ye that?" Thenne þe Duke sayd it ageyn. Then þe Kyng byganne to wex wrothe, & sayde: "wene ye þat I be a marchaunt or a foole, to selle my londe? by Saint Johan Baptist, nay! but trouthe it is, þat oure Cosyn of
12 Brytayne hathe rendryd & payde to vs þe somme þat my predecessours hadde lente vpon þe sayde tounne of Breste; and sith he haue payed, it is reasoun þat this tounne be delyueryd to hym ageyne." Thus beganne þe wraethe bytwene þe Kyng & his vncl.
16 And afterward, at Arondele, was a Counseyle of certeyne lordes, as þe Duke of Gloucetre, þe Archebisshop of Canterbury, þe Erles of Arondele, Warwyk & Marchalle, & oþer, for to refourme þe rewle aboute þe Kyng; whyche lordes promysed eche to abyde by oþer,
20 & so departed. And anone after, þe Erle Marchal, whiche was Captayne of Calays, bewrayed, & lete þe King haue knowleche of all þere counselle.

III.

[*The Deposition of Richard II & Election of Henry IV. The Prophecy that Richard II should be destroyd by a Toad.*]

¹Than in the begynnynge of þe xxiiijth yer, the lordys of þe
24 reavme, with þe Comouns assent, chose this worthy lorde, Syr Herry Bolyngbrook, Erle of Derby, Duke of Herforde & Duke of Lancastre be ryht lyne & herytage, and for his myhtful manhood, þat þe peple fonde in hym before al oþyr, they chose hym, &
28 made hym Kyng of Englonde amonges hem, And put asyde Richarde, Erle of Cambrygge, whiche was sone to Edmunde Langeley, Duke of York. And this sayde Richarde, Erle of Cambrygge, had weddyd Anne, þe douhetyr & Ayre of Roger
32 Mortymer, Erle of Marche & of Wulster, whiche was proclamyd, in þe ix. yer of þe regne of Kyng Richarde, heyre apparant to þe Crowne of Englonde after Kyng Richarde. For þe sayde Roger was sone & Ayre to Edmunde Mortymer, and to Philyppe,

¹ leaf 185, one-third down. Lambeth MS. 84.

douhetyr & Ayre of Sir Lyonel, þe .iiij. sone of Kyng Edward þe .iiij.; And thus was þe Ayre Ieneral put asyde. ¹Also ther was, yn Kyng Richardys courte, a worshipful clerke þat was an Astronomier, whiche knewe & vndyrstode be his counnyng þat Kyng Richarde ⁴ shulde be slayne & destroyed be a Toode. And vpon a tyme, he warnyd þe Kyng therof, & bad hym 'be ware of Todys; for a Toode shulde destroye hym;' and than þe Kyng thouhte & mervayled in his mynde, how þat shulde be. And vpon a tyme he ordeyned ⁸ & made a ryal feest in Cristmasse, & comaundyd al his lordys to come thedyr. And they cam thedyr, euery lorde in þe gayest desgysyng þat they coude deuyse. And among hem alle, Sir Herry, Erle of Derby, cam in a Gounne broyderyd ²al abowte with Toody's. ¹² & whan Kyng Richard syhe yt, he remembryd þe propheci of Toody's þat his clerke tolde hym, þat he shulde be destroyed by. And euer aftyr he had this Herry, Erle of Derby, yn Ielwsy & mystruste, supposyng þat yt shulde be he þat shulde destroy hym; ¹⁶ & fayne þe Kyng wolde an had hym destroyed; but at þe last he exiled hym for x yer.

IV.

[*The Murder and Burial of King Richard II. His Vision and his Treasure.*]

³ ¶ In þe same yere, Syr Barnarde Brokeis, Sir Iohn Selly, Syr Iohn Mawdelyn, & Syr William Ferby, were takyn & sette in ²⁰ þe Toure, & aftyr, by iugement, were hanged & by-hedyd, & ther hedys sette on London Brigge. ¶ And whan Kyng Herry sawe þat these lordys thus had rysen, & assemblyd grete peple to haue put hym to dethe, & for to restore Kyng Richard ageyne to ²⁴ his crowne & to his Reame, he thoughte teschue suche peryls.⁴ ¶ And a-none he commaunded Sir Pyers of Exton, þat he shulde goo streyte to Pounfreyte, & delyuer þe worlde of Kyng Rychard. ¶ And so he departed fro þe Kyng, and wente to þe Castel of ²⁸ Pountfrete, where-as Kyng Richard was in prisoune, þe whiche was sette at table for to dyne. ¶ And anon aftyr, Sir Pyers cam in-to þe chambre where þe Kyng was; and he broughte viij. men with hym, & eche man an axe in his honde. ¶ And whan ³² þe Kyng sawe Sir Pyers with his felausshippe entre in-to þe chambre defensably arayed, he shoof þe table from hym, and

¹ Side rubric: A prophesi of Kyng Richards dethe. ² leaf 185, back.

³ leaf 186.

⁴ Side rubric: How kyng Richard deyde.

sprange in-to þe myddys of them, & raughte an axe out of one
theyr hondes, and sette hymself valyauntly at defence. ¶ And
hym-self defendyng, he slewe foure of þe eyghte. And whanne þe
4 sayde Peers sawe þe Kyng so defende hym, he was soore abasshed
& gretly aferde, and sterte vpon þe place where-as Kyng Richard
was wonte to sytte. & as Kyng Richard foughte & defendyd
hym-self goynge bacwarde, the sayde Syr Peers smote hym on þe
8 hede *with* his axe, þat he fylle to grounde. ¶ Than cryed Kyng
Richard "God, mercy!" & thenne he gaue hym a-noper stroke
on þe hede, & soo he deyde. ¶ And thus was this noble Kyng
slayne and murthred. And whan þe Kyng was deede, þe knyghte
12 þat had thus slayne hym, sette hym down be þe deede bodye of
Kyng Richard, & byganne to wepe, saynge: "Allas! what thyng
haue we doone? we haue putte to dethe hym þat hath been oure
Kyng & souerayne lorde, two & twenty yere! Now haue I lost
16 myn honoure! I shal neuer come in place, but I shal be
reproched, for I haue doone ayenst myn honour." ¶ After this,
moche peepke in Englonde, & other countrees also, wolde not
beleue þat Kyng Richard was deede, but sayde þat he was alyue
20 many yerys aftyr. ¶ Wherefor Kyng Herry, whan he wist verryly
þat he was deede, he leete cere hym in þe best maner, & *with*
dyuers spices and baumes, & in a fayre cheste, closyd alle in lynyn
clothe, saaf his visage, whiche was lefte opyn, þat men myht see
24 & know his persone from alle othir men. ¶ And thus he was
broughte thurgh London to Powlus; & his body was leyd on a
Charyotte coueryd *with* black, and iiij. baners, whereof ij. were of
þe armes of Saint George, & ij. of þe armys of Seint Edward; &
28 & þere were an C. men clothed in blak, eche beryng a torche;
¶ And þe Cyte of London had thyrty men in whyte, eche beryng
also a torche; and þe visage of þe dede body was leyde opyn, þat
euery man myght see and knowe þat it was his body, & þat he
32 was soo deede; for many men beleuyed it not. ¶ And from
Powlus he was had to Westmenster, & þere he hadde his hole
masse, & diryge also. ¶ And fro thens he was caryed to þe
Frerys of Langley, & þere he was buryed: on whois sowle God
36 haue mercy! Amen! ¶ The comyn oppynyng of Englysshmen is,
þat Kyng Richard deyde not ¹aftyr þe maner a-foresayde, but þat
he deyde & was famynyng, & lakkyd bothe mete and drynke, & yet
he was dayle seruyd pereof lyke a Kyng, but he myht not towche

¹ leaf 186, back.

yt, but only see hyt, & *perefor* his [hunger] was *pe* more. And on a tyme, as he lay on his bed of estaate, *hym* thouhte *pere* come a fayre womman vnto *hym*, and brought a kercher ful of white Rosys, & bestruyd all his bed therwith; & he fed *hym* of the Rosys, *pat* his 4 gret hungre was *withdrawe*; & whan he woke, *hym* thoughte his apyted was wel satysfied, & *perby* his lyf contynuyd a day or tweyne the lenger. And some sayeth thus, That whan he herde saye *pat* his lordys, *pe* Duke of Excetre, *pe* Duke of Surrey, *pe* 8 Erle of Salysbury, & *pe* o^{per} lordis were deede, he was so angry & so sorrowful *pat* he swore *pat* he wolde neuer ete mete, & soo abode iiij. dayes *withoute* etyng, as they saye. And whan Kyng Herry vndirstode *pat* he wolde not ete, he sente to *hym* ij prelatys for to 12 comforte *hym*; And whan they were come, he confessyd *hym* to one of them, *pe* whiche gaue *hym* in penaunce, *pat* he shulde ete his mete. And whan he supposed to haue etyn, *pe* mete myght not goo dounne ne auale in-to his stomake, ffor *pe* conduytys of 16 his bodye were shronken to-geder. And than sayde *pe* noble Kyng Rychard, '*pat* it was doon, & *pat* he must nedis deye.' But certys, wheper he deyde this way or *pat* other, certaynly dede he is, & was buryed at Langley: God haue mercy on his soule! 20 Amen! And then was Kyng Herry peasbly King. Then he fonde in Kyng Richardes tresory nyne honderde thousande noblys, *withoute* Iewellys and vessellys whiche was as moche worthe, or more. And *pere* was founden in *pe* Tresorers kepyng of Englonde, 24 an honderde and fyfty thousand noblys, & Iewels & vessell as moche or more: and thus Kyng Herry had alle his goodys. Aboute this same tyme, *pe* Duke of Orleauce sente an herode of armys *with* lettres vnto Kyng Herry, by which he chalengyd for 28 to fyght *with* *hym* *withynne* lystes at Burdeux, or in some o^{per} metely place, *with* an C gentylmen *withoute* reproche, ageynste as meny gentlemen *withoute* reproche. wherto *pe* ¹King answeyrd ageyne by lettres worshipfully, rehersyng *pat* at suche tyme as 32 it shulde plese *hym*, he wolde come with suche nombre as it apperteyneth to a Kyng, and conquere his ryght; at whiche tyme he shulde be answeyrd atte fulle; & so *pe* mater fynysshed.¹

1—1 This is in the margin.

V.

[*The Causes of the Battle of Shrewsbury, A.D. 1403.*]

¹¶ And than Syr Thomas Percy was Iugged to be dede, pat is to sey, drawe & hangyd, and his hede smytyn of, at Shrewesbury, & his hede to be set on London Brygge, for his fals tresone; 4 for he causyd pe gret devisioun betwene the Kyng and Syr Herry Percy; for pe Kyng wolde an had pees, & so wolde Syr Herry Percy ful fayne; But Syr Thomas Percy went betwene them, & bare fals talys, othyrwyse than they sayde or ment, & causyd that 8 batayle. Vnde *versus*: Praxedis taurius nomine campo Blewyk.

M. quetwor C. ter .I.² obit certamine Percy.

¶ Also anoper princypal cause was: what tyme pat Syr Herry Derby was exilyd be Kyng Richarde, he cam ayen out of Fraunce, 12 & entryd vp in-to Engelond at Rauensport in Yorkshyre; & pere cam ayenst hym, to put hym of, Syr Herry Percy, othyrwise callyd Syr Herry Hote-spour. but Syr Herry Derby was sworyn pere to hym & to othyr lordys, pat he shulde make no chalange vnto pe 16 Crowne, but only vnto his enerytaunse, pe Dukedom of Lancastre; & vppon pat othe they suffryd hym to go fourthe. And than aftyr pat, Syr Herry Derby toke vppon hym pe Crowne. and whan they vndyrstode pat, Syr Herry Hotspur cam to pe Kyng to 20 Westmenstyr, and seyde: "Syr, this was not couienaunt nor promise." "What seyest thou, horsson?" quod the Kyng; & stert to hym, & gaue hym a gret buffet. "Wel," quod Syr Herry Hotspur, "this shal be pe shrewdest bofet pat euer thou yovyst." 24 & streyte he toke his horse, and rode home into his countre; & here-vpon began the batel of Srewesbury.

VI.

[*King Henry V: his Riot in his Youth: his Change when made King.*]

³[A]ftyr the dethe of Kyng Herry the Fourthe, Regnyd his sone Herry of Monmothe, whiche was born at Monmothe in 28 Walyes, whiche was Herry the Fyfte aftyr pe conquest. And he began to Regne on pe xxjth. day of Marche, In pe yer of our lorde

¹ on leaf 187.

² ? for 1403, July 23. Battle fought on St. Praxed's day, near a manor house named Berwick.—J. H. Wylie, who suggests 'ter I,' thrice one, for the t.I. or t.I. of the MS.

³ leaf 191. Lambeth MS. 84.

M. CCCC xij; And in þe same yer he was crownyd Kyng of Englon[d] at Westmenster on the nynthe day of Aprill; and he was a worthy kyng, & a gracious man, & a worthy conquerour. ¶ And before he was Kyng, what tyme he regnyd Prince of Walyes, he 4 fylle & yntendyd gretly to ryot, and drew to wylde company; & dyuers Ientylmen and Ientylwommen folwyd his wylle & his desire at his commaundment; & lykewyse aȝ his meyne of his housolde was attendyng & plesyed with his gouernaunce, out-sept 8 iij. men of his howsolde, whiche were ful hevy and sory of his gouernaunce; and they counseyld hym euer contrary, and fayne wolde an had hym to doon wele, & forsake ryot. and perfor he hatyd them iij. most of al men in his house, vnto þe tyme þat his 12 fadyr was dede. And thanne he beganne to regne for Kyng, & he remembryd þe gret charge & wourship þat he shulde take vpon hym; And anon he comaundyd al his peple þat were attendaunt to his mys gouernaunce afore tyme, & al his housolde, to 16 come before hym. And whan they herde þat, they were ful glad, for they subposyd þat he wolde a promotyd them in-to gret offices, & þat they shulde a stonde in gret favyr & truste with hym, & neerest of counsel, as they were afore tyme. & trustyng here- 20 vpon, they were þe homlyer & bolder vnto hym, & nothyng dred hym; ynsomoche, þat whan they were come before hym, some of them wynkyd on hym, & some smyld, & thus they made nyse semblaunte vnto hym, meny one of them. But for al þat, þe 24 Prynce kept his countynaunce ful sadly vnto them, And sayde to them: "Syrys, ye are þe peple þat I haue cherysyd & mayntynyd in Ryot & wylde gouernaunce; and here I geue yow aȝ in commaundment, & charge yow, þat from this day forward þat 28 ye forsake al mys gouernaunce, & lyve aftyr þe lawys of Almyhety God, & aftyr þe lawys of oure londe. And who þat doyth contrarye, I make feythful promys to God, þat he shal be trewly ponisid accordyng to þe lawe, withoute eny favour or grace." And 32 chargyd them, [on] payn of deth, þat they shulde neuer geve hym comforte nor counsel to falle to ryot no more; for he had takyn a charge on hym, þat alle his wittis & power were to lytyl, withoute þe helpe of God & good gouernaunce. And so he rewardyd 36 them richely with gold & syluer, & othyr Iuelys, and chargyd them alle to voyde his housolde, & lyve as good men, & neuer more to come in his presence, be-cause he wold haue noon occasioun nor remembraunce wherby he shulde falle to ryot ayen. And thus he 40

voydyd al his housolde, savyng tho iij. per'sonys pat he hatyd most, whiche were ful sory of his gouernaunce; & them he lovyd afterward best, for pere good counsayle and good gouernaunce, & 4 made them afterward gret lordys; And thus was lefte in his housolde nomo but tho iij. men. And menyone of them pat were eydyng & consentyng to his wyldnes, fyl afterward to gret myschefe and sorw.

8 ¶ Than Kyng Herry sent to Dame Kateryn Swynfor, Countesse of Herforde, whiche was tho a wel-gouerned woman, & kept pe most worshipful housolde, & pe best rewlyd pat was within pe londe; and to her he sent for men pat were of good disposicyoun; 12 & she sent hym xij. Ientylmen of sad gouernaunce. and so this gracious Kyng forsoke al wyldnes, and toke hym to good gouernaunce, and kept streytly his lawys with ryghtwisnes & Iustise. For, in pe first yere of his regne, ther were ij. knyhtis at 16 gret debate: pe tone was of Lankestyr-shire, & pe tothyr of York-shire; & they made them as stronge of peple as they cowde, & scarmyschid togedyr; and men were slayne & hurte on bothe partyes. ¶ And whan pe Kyng herde therof, he sent for 20 them: & they cam to pe Kyng to Wyndelysore, as he was goyng to his dyneer. and whan the Kyng vndirstode that they were come, he commaundyd them to come before him; And than he axyd them, 'whois men they were.' and they seyde, his lege men. 24 "and whois men be tho pat ye haue a-reysyd up to fylte for youre quarel?" and they seyde, 'his men.' "& what awtoryte or comaundement had ye, to reyse vp my men or my peple, to fyght & sle eche othyr for your quarel? yn this ye ar worthy to dye." 28 And they coude not askewse them, but besowhte pe Kyng of his grace. And than pe Kyng seyde, "be pe feith pat he owte to God & to Seint George, but yf they agreyd & accordyd, be pat tyme pat he had etyn his owystrys, they shulde be hangyd bothe two or 32 evyr he sopyt." And than they yede a-parte, & agreyd be themselfe, and cam in ayen whan pe Kyng had etyn his owistris. And than pe Kyng sayde: "Syrys, how stondyth yt with yow?" And than they knelyd downe, and seyde: "yf it plesse your good 36 grace, we be agreyd & accordyd." And than the Kyng seyde, 'be the feythe pat he owte to God & to Seint George, pat & evyr they made eny more Insurreccioun or dethe of his lege peple, they, or ony othyr lordys withynne his reawme, withowte his

¹ leaf 191, back.

commaundment, whatsomeeuer they were, they shulde dye, acording to þe lawe.' And so, after þat, ther durst no lorde make no party nor stryf; and thus he beganne to kepe his lawis and Iustise, & therfor he was belouyd & bedred.

4

VII.

[*The Battle of Agincourt.*]

¹ ¶ Than þe morwe roos, þe day gan sprynge, & þe Kyng be good avyce leet araye his batayle & his weengys; & charged euery man to keepe hem hole to-gedrys, & preyde hem alle to been of good cheer. And whanne they were redy, he askyd what tyme of 8 þe day it was, & they sayde prime. Than seyde oure Kyng: "now is it good tyme, for alle Engeland prayeth for vs. And in remembraunce þat God dyed on þe Crosse for vs, let euery man make a crosse on þe erthe, & kys hyt, & in tokenyng þat we wole 12 radyr dye on this erthe than flee." ¶ And whan þe King of Fraunce sawe oure Kyng & his peeple fal down to þe erthe, he axyd: "what meen they now?" & a Frenche knyght stode by, & seyde, "forsothe, Syre, they purpose hem this day to dey on þat 16 grounde, rathir than to flee." And than oure Kyng, with alle his peple, roos hym vp ayen; and than he seyde with an hye voyce, "In þe name of Almyhty God and of Seint George, Avaunt baneer! & Seint George, this day thyn helpe!" And therwith þe 20 Trumppetys blew vp. ¶ And than þe Frenche men come prykyng down, as they wolde haue ovirryden alle oure meyne. But God & oure Archerys made hem sone to stomble. for oure archeris shot neuer oon arwe amys, but it persshid & brouht to grounde man or 24 hors; for they shottyn þat day for a waiour; And oure stakys made hem ouer-terve, eche on othyr, þat they lay on hepys. And oure Kyng, with his meyne & with men of armys, leyde on, for it behovyd hem to fyght þat day, his owne handys. & oure good 28 Archerys þat lakkyd ² arwys, leyde on with stakys. And þat day þe Frenche men syhe Seint George in þe eyre ouer þe hoste of þe Englysshe men, fyghtyng ayenst þe Frenche men; and therfor they worship & holde of Seint George, in Engeland, more than in any 32 oper londe. ¶ And thus Almyhti God & Seint George brouht oure enemyes to grounde, & gaf us þe victory þat day. And þere were slayne of Frensshe men þat day in þe feelde of Agyncort xj. Mt., withoute prysonerys þat were takyn. And ther were noumbryd 36

¹ leaf 194.² leaf 194, back.

pat day of Frensshe men yn pe feelde, mo than Sixti score M^t.,
And of Englissh men but vij. M^t; but God & Seint George pat
day favt for vs. But pe Frensshe men pat were in pe Cyte of
4 Parys, had went pat oure Kyng had been ouer-throuhe a day
before; for pe prekers of pe Frensshe men pat kept pe owte-wacche,
met with some of oure Kyngis kartys, & ryfelyd them, & gat out
oure Kyngis coronet, & bare it in-to Parys; & wenyng to them of
8 pe Cite pat oure Kyng had been ouerthrouhe, & bare this coronet
aboutt pe cyte in processioun for ioie. And aftyrward, whan they
syhe pe Frensshemen come home sore woundyd, they marvayled
sore, & askyd them 'what chere?' & they seyde, "No som to
12 mors": we be dede & ouerthrouhe. And than an hewge peepke of
women & oper folke yede thedyr to pe feelde pere pe batayle was,
to beholde whiche party were ouerthrouhe; and they stode vpon
an hylle besydys pe feelde pere pe batayle was. ¶ And whan pe
16 Englissh hoste syhe this, they had wende pat tho peepke had been
a-noper host of Frensshe men. And anon com tydyngis to oure
Kyng pat pere was a newe batayle of Frensshemen, al in aray,
ordeyned redy to stele on hym. And anon oure Kyng leet krye
20 pat euery man shulde sle his prysoner pat he had take: & pat was
a myghty losse to Engelond, & a gret sorw to Fraunce. and whan
pat was doon, oure Kyng arayed his batayle ayen, redy to fihte
with pe Frensshe men. ¶ And whan pe Frensshmen sawe pat oure
24 men kyllid her prysonerys, than they withdrew hem, & brak her
batayle & here aray. And thus oure Kyng, as a worthy conquerour,
had pat day pe victorie in pe feelde of Agyncourt in Pykkardye,
thankyd be God!

28 And than oure Kyng retournyd ayen there pe batayle was, to
se what peple were dede of Frensshe men, and also of Englissh
men, or yf ony were hurte pat myht be holpe. And pere were
dede of Frensshe men in pe feelde: pe Duke of Barry, pe Duke
32 of Launsom, pe Duke of Braban, pe Erle of Navern, pe Chief
Counstable of Fraunce, & viij. othir Erlys; & pe Archebissshop of
Saunce; & of good Barouns .C. & mo; & of worthy knyhtis of
gret alliaunce of cote armures, a M & v^c. ¶ And of Englissh
36 men was dede pat day: pe good Duke of Yorke,¹ Ser Edmunde, &
deyde withoute yssu. And aftyr hym, was made Duke of Yorke
his broderys sone, Richarde, pat ²was sone to Richard, Erle of
Caumbrygge, pat was behedyd at Southamptone, as aftyrward ye

¹ Rubric in margin: 'there was slayne pe Duke of Yorke.' ² leaf 195.

shul here more opynly. And also there was dede, þe Erle of Suffolke; & of al oper of Englysshe men, were dede nat passyng xxvj. bodyes, thankyd be God! And this batayle was on a Friday, whiche was Crispines & Crispamanes day, in þe monthe of Octobre. 4

versus: an Mil C quatuor Synk Domini dato.

henrici terno Regis quin iure paterno.

harlet fest Maurik deuicta que prelia.

crispinum Agencourt nomen, vbi Cristus ei dedit omen. 8

VIII.

[*The Siege of Rouen. Every eldest Son a King on St. Dennis' Eve.*]

¹¶ And yn þat tyme þere was a custom in þe Cite of Rone, & also in þe Subarbys þere-of, that on Seint Denys evyn to make a kyng in euery house. And so þe grete heerys of þe subarbis cam to þe seyde Kyng Herry, & besoult hym to take noon displeure ¹² of þere customable vsage. and þe Kyng askyd them what it was. And they answeyrd & seyde 'yt was þe vsage of Roon to make, in euery hous therof, þe eldest sone a kyng on þat nyht.' And anon þe Kyng graundyd them ther askyng, so þat it were nat doon in ¹⁶ despyte of hym. And at Nyhte ther cam woorde to þe Kyng, þat þere were neuer seen so many kyngis to-gedyr in oon place. And anon þe Kyng comaundyd them to be brouht afore hym. And than spake an olde Frenche knyht, and seyde: "I trowe now is þe ²⁰ tyme come þat Rone shalbe won, aftyr þe profecye." And when þe Kyng herd þe knyht thus sey, he askyd hym, 'what was þe profecie.' And þe knyht seyde, 'yf he woold pardon hym, he woold tel hym þe profecie þerof.' And tho þe Kyng pardonid ²⁴ hym. ¶ "Syr," quod þe knyht, "this toun of Roon shall neuer be wonne, tyl ther come a Kyng þat shulde be boryn of a woman, And in a Nounys habyte, & .xxx. kynggis at his retynew, to ley seege ther-to." And there-with þe Kyng seyde: "In verbo tuo ²⁸ relaxabo rethe." And anon he comaundyd everyche of þe kyngis to be set in dyuers garisons ayenst þe Toun. And on þe next day was þe Toun of Roon yolde vp vnto oure Kyng, as ye shul here.

IX.

[*King Henry VI's youth, and the quarrel with the Flemings.*]

²a Nd yn þe yer of our Lorde, M^t CCCC & xxij, On þe last ³² day of August, Herry of Wyndelysore, þe sone of Herry þe Fyfthe,

¹ leaf 198, back. Rubric in margin: 'how xxx^{ti} kyngis leyde seege to Roon.'
² leaf 201.

began to Reyne, when he was but ix monthis of age. ¶ And as some men sey, on *pat* day of his byrthe, there sat a stronger with *pe* *parsoun* of Monmothe, *pat* prophesied at dyner, seying on this
4 wyse: "In these xxiiij. ourys passyd, othyr *with-yn* xxiiij. ourys to come, is born, or shalbe born, a new Kyng of Engeland, *pe* whiche shal begynne his reyne *withynne* *pe* first yer of his byrthe."
¶ Than seyde *pe* tothyr: "*pat* is *pe* Erle of Marche." he seyde
8 ayen: "nay, nat so." than seyde *pe* tothyr, "what troyst thou *pat* *pere* shal fal here-aftyr?" he seyde: "In *pe* fyrst vij yer of his Reyne, *pere* shalbe gret aboundaunce of al maner of ffrutys."
"And what in *pe* next vij yerys?" he seyde: "*pere* shalbe thre
12 wyse men *pat* shulbe able to gouerne eny reme." And in *pe* vj. yer aftyr, on *pe* vj day of A Nouembre, Herry *pe* vj^{te} was crownyd at Westmenster, of Herry Chychile, Archebisshop of Cauntirbury, at whois Coronacioun *pe* sone of *pe* Duke of
16 Hostryche, *with* many *oper*, were made knyhtis. ¶ And in *pe* x^{the} yer of his reyne he was crownyd ayen at Parys in Fraunce, of his vncler *pe* CardinaH of Wynchestre. And in *pe* yer aftyr *pat*, on *pe* xx^{ti} day of Maij, on a Weddenysday, fro *pe* oure of None to iij.
20 on *pe* clok at aftyrnoon, ther aperyd a Blasyng sterre in *pe* firmament, toward *pe* est, fast be *pe* Mone.

And in *pe* yer folwyng, the Dewke of Burgoyne began to meue werre ayenst Engeland, & wolde an had Caley. And thedyr was
24 sent in bassetre, *pe* Duke of Exetyr, *with* *oper* lordys; & as he cam homward ayen, his hors dounyd in *pe* touzne of Poperyng; and *pe* Flemyggis rysyn vp, & wolde nat suffyr hym to passe tyl his men were fayne to bere away his hors dounge, & make clene *pe*
28 strety. ¶ And whan *pe* Duke was come ayen in-to Engeland, he enformyd *pe* Kyng & his lordys *perof*; and they were sore amevyd therwith. And anon Sir Humfray, Duke of Gloucestre, & Sir Thomas Bewfourde, Duke of Exetyr, his brothyr, *with* *oper* lordys,
32 made a gret power, and yede ayen in-to Flaundrys, & destroyed moche peple, and brent meny townys, & dyd moche harme; & *pe* Duke of Burgoyne fled *with* his peple. And *pe* Duke of Exetyr yede & brent vp Popryng & meny mo townys *pere* aboute, & dyd
36 moche harme, ynsomoche *pat* they brent *pe* whete & corne *pat* grewe in *pe* feelde: & *pat* was an evyl deede, ffor, sen *pat* tyme hydyrward, our whete & corn haue be brent in Engeland, yn on place or in othyr, as it growyth in *pe* feelde, be *pe* hande of God;
40 whiche brennyng, men callyth 'Ablastid or seynte.' ¶ And at *pe*

last, þe Duke of Burgoyne was fayne to mede þe Duke of Gloucestre
 & oure lordis, & gave them a myty thyng of good to turne ayen &
 seese ther warre, & do no more harme. & than þey turny[d] ayen
 in-to Engelond. And in despyte of þe Flemynges, an Englysshe
 man made this Englyshe, yn Baladdys :

(1)

¹o ff stryvys new, & fraudulent falsnesse,
 Who-so lyst to seek out þe cheef occasioun,
 Late hym resorte, & his wey dresse
 In-to Flaundrys, streyght to the Blak Lyoun, 9
 Whiche hathe compassed, be fals collusioun,—
 Lyk in his standard as betyn is the signe,—
 That moved his countre of presumpcioun,
 Ageyn Ingelond frowardly to malygne. 13

(2)

Fyrst to remembre, the deede beryth wytnesse,
 Of his fadyr mowrdred be tresoun,
 How Herry the Fyfthe, of knyghtly gentylnesse,
 Had of his dethe manly compassioun, 17
 Leete digge hym vp, stank for corrupcioun,
 Of a prynce a mercyable sygne.
 But thou ageynward, be fals decepcioun,
 Madest Flaundrys ageyn Ingelond to malygne. 21

(3)

Thou madist an oothe, be gret avisynesse,
 Vppon the sacrament at Amyas, in that toun,
 Ay to be trewe, voyde of dobylnesse.
 But vndyr the courteyne of fals collusioun, 25
 Thou gat at Araas an absolucioun,
 Thy feyned feythe vp falsly to resygne,
 Causyng Flaundrys, to ther confusioun,
 Ageyn Ingelond prowldy to malygne. 29

(4)

The pees purposyd at Araas in soothnesse,
 Whan our' embassatourys, of hool affeccioun,
 Cam goodly thedyr, dyd ther bysinesse,
 To haue concluded a parfyte vnyoun 33

¹ leaf 201, back.

Twyxt to reavmus, for ful conclusioun,
Thou, shewyng there a face ful benyg[n]e,
Vndyr a veyle of fals decepcioun,
Record of Flaundrys, whiche falsly dothe malygne. 4

(5)

What hast thou wonne *with* al thy bysnesse
And alle thy tentys to Caleys caryed down,
Thyn ordynauncys, whiche cost gret rychesse,
Bastyle, and cartys of fagot gret foyssoun, 8
Of thy gounnys the dredful noyse and soun?
Peyse al to-gedyr, *with* many anothyr sygne,
Thy cowardly flyght, cokeney of a chaumpyoun,
Whyche darst not fyght, and canst so wel malygne. 12

X.

[*The Battles of St. Alban's I and II, of Blore Heath, Ludlow,
Northampton, Wakefield, and Wigmore.*]

¹ They dyd moche harme, & many a man was slayne; & they
woolde neuer sese, tyl þe drawbrygge was set on fyre betwene hem.
And aftyrward þere captayn was take in a gardyn in Kent, & þere
16 he was slayne; & aftyr þat, his body was quarteryd; & his hede
smytyn of, & set on Londen Brygge. ¶ And in þe xxiiij. yer of
his regne was þe first batel of Seint Albonys; & þere Kyng Herry
was shotte in þe nekke *with* an Arrwe. And ayenst hym cam
20 Rycherde Plantagynet, Duke of Yorke, & Richard Nevel, Erle of
Salisbury, & his sone Richard Nevel, Erle of Warwyk. And þere
was slayne of þe Kingis party, Sir Edmund, Duke of Somyrset,
þe Erle of Northombyrland, & Lord Clyfford; & Humfray, Duke
24 of Bokyngham, was sore hurte, whom they caryed *with* hem to
Londen.

And in þe xxxvij yer was þe batel at Bloorhethe, & of Ludlowe;
& þere was slayne be þe Erle of Salisbury, Lord Avdele, & xiiij.
28 knyghtes new made; & þe Baroun of Dudle was take & led *with*
hem. ¶ And in þe .xxxviii. yer was þe batayle of Northamptoun;
where cam on þe ton party, Edward þe Erle of Marche, þe eldest
sone of þe Duke of Yorke, & þe Duke of Northfolke, & Richard

¹ leaf 202. It follows the Ballad.

Nevyle, Erle of Warwyk. And þere was slayne of þe Kyngis party be them: *Sir* Humfray, Duke of Bokyngham, & *Sir* Iohn Talbot, Erle of S[h]rewisbury, & Vicount Bemounde; & þere was take Kyng Herry, & brouht *with* them to Londen. 4

And in þe same yer was þe batayle of Wakefeelde, whiche was on þe ton party, þe Duke of Somyrset, þe Erle of Northumbirlond, Lord Clifford, & *Sir* John Nevyl of Westmerland, which was þe Erles sone of Westmerland. And þere was slayne be them: 8 Richard, Duke of Yorke, Edmund, Erle of Rutlond, his sone; & Richarde Nevyle, Erle of Salysbury, was take þere, & behedyd at Pounfret. ¶ And in þe same yer was þe ij^{de} batayle of Seint Albonis: & þere com in on þe ton party: Kyng Herry, þe Duke of 12 Northfolke, þe Erle of Warwyk, Lord Facounbryge, & Vicount Bowser. And ayenst them cam Queen Margeryt, & Prince Edward her sone, [L]ord Wellis, Lord [C]lyfford, & ouerthrewe þe tothyr party, & toke away King Herry from them; and, be the commaund- 16 ment of þe young Prince, þere was behedyd þere, Lord Bonvyld, & Thomas Kyrel, knyht of Kent; & they led *with* hem in-to þe Northe, Lord Mountegew, [a]nd toke hym to [þ]e Mayre of [Y]orke to kepe. 20

And in þe same yer was þe bateyle of Wygmore, be Edward, Erle of Marche; wher fled, *Sir* Herry Bewforde, Duke of Exestyr, & Iamys Ormond, Erle of Wylshyre, & Iasper, Erle of Penbrook; & his fadyr, Owen Tedder, was takyn, & behedyd at Herforde; 24 and ther was takyn þe Baroun of Burforde; & pardounde of his lyfe. An[d] after this, Edward, Erle of Marche, *with* þe lordys on his party, yede to Londen; and on þe iiij. day of Marche he toke vpon hym þe Regimen, *with* þe wyll of þe lordys & þe comouns 28 bothe.

XI.

[*K. Edward IV (1461); the Battle of Barnet (14 April, 1471); and the Death of Henry VI (20 June, 1471).*]

¹a Nd after this, In þe yer of our Lord Mt. CCCC lx, And in þe regne of Kyng Herry .xxxix.; Edward, Erle of Marche, *with* þe lordys þat were on his party, yede to Londen; and on þe iiij. 32 day of Marche he took vpon hym þe Regimen, *with* þe wyll of þe lordys & þe commouns also. ¶ And after þat, Kyng Edward toke

¹ leaf 202, back.

his lordys, & yede Northeward; and on Palmisson evyn was Tauntoun feelde, callyd York feelde. And pere was on Kyng Edwardys party, pe Duke of Northfolke, pe Erle of Warwyk, Lord
4 Acrys of pe southe, Lord Faucounbrygge, & many oper lordys & knyhtis moo. And ayenst hym cam Prynce Edward, Kyng Herryes sone, pe Duke of Somyrset, pe Erle of Northumbyrlond, whiche was slayne pere, & many oper lordis & knyhtes also. And
8 King Herry, with Queen Mergeret, lay in York; & pey toke pe Prince her sone, & be mydnyght they were fledde to Berewyk; & they yaf pat toun to pe Scottis, to haue socour & helpe of them, whiche toun was Englysshe befor. ¶ And thus Kyng Edward, pe
12 sone of Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York, ouercam his enemyes, & put them to flyght, & returnyd ayen to Londen, & pere he was crownyd at Westmester, ryghtful Kyng of Engeland & of Fraunce, Castylle, & Legyoun. ¶ And sone aftyr, he weddyd Dame Elysa-
16 beth, pe Erle Ryuers doulityr, on whom he begat, Elysabeth, Marie, Cicile, Edward Prince, Margarete, Richard, Duke of York & of Northfolke, Anne, George.

And aftyr this, Herry, pat was Kyng, was take in Yorkshire,
20 in pe Abbey of Furnes; & put in pe Toure of Londen. ¶ And aftyr pat, pere aperyd in pe firmament a gret sterre, pat yaf out vij stremys, whiche synified gret sorw, & mysche[f] pat fylle aftyrward; & also ther wer sene in pe Temys at Londen, many whyrlepolys, &
24 anoper tyme a whale, pat signyfyed not good. For aftyrward fylle gret devisyoun betwene pe Kyng & his lordys; & pey kept a gret batayle on Estyr day, whiche is callyd 'Barnet Feeld.' & pere was slayne Richard Nevyle, Erle of Warwik, & Markys Montegew, his
28 brothir; & pe Erle of Oxynford fled. And from thens pe Kyng yede to Tewkysbery; & pere was slayn, Edward, pe sone of Kyng Herry; & Queen Margarete, his modyr, was take, whiche were come out of Fraunce. And thus Kyng Edward ouercam all his enemyes,
32 thankyd be God! And in alle pese batayles, was pe sone ayenst pe fadyr, and brother aye[n]st brother. ¶ And anon aftyr, deyde Kyng Herry in pe Toure of Londen; & is beryed at Charchesbey. And he foundyd pe Coleges of Etoun & of Cambrygge, callyd pe
36 'newe Colege': on whois soule, God haue mercy! Amen!

And aftyr this, Kyng Edward yed ouer beyon the se into Fraunce, & chalengyd Gascoyne & Gyen. And pe Kyng of Fraunce was fayne to desyre trewys with hym, & agreyd to pay yerly to
40 oure Kyng, X M^t. li. for Gascoyne & Gyen: & he payd it long

after. And in þat Iorney our Kyng lost many a man þat fylle to þe lust of women, & wer brent be them; & pere membrys rottyd away, & pey dyed. ¶ And aftyr þat, ther fylle a gret dissesse in Engelond callyd þe 'stychē,' þat moche peeple deyde sodeynly þerof. And also anoper dissesse reyned aftyr þat, callyd þe 'fflyx,' þat neuer was seen in Engelond before; & peeple deyde hogely therof iij yer togedyr, in on place or oper. And aftyr þat, ther bred a Raven on Charyng Crosse at Londen; & neuer was seen 8 noone brede pere before. & aftyr þat, cam a gret dethe of Pestilence, þat lastyd iij. yer; & peeple dyed myhtely in euery p[la]ce, man, woman & chylde: on whois soulis, God haue mercy! Amen! [end.]

APPENDIX TO H.

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF THE BATTLE ABBEY ROLL OF 371
NAMES OF NORMAN KNIGHTS. [See p. 535-537].

[*Harl. MS. 53, collated with Lambeth 6.*]

	Abvile	BaywaH (29) ¹	Bruce (58)	Colvile (86)
	Achard	Beauchamp	Budler	Comyn
	Akeny	Beaumeis	Buket	Corbet
4	Amondevile	Belcr	Burdet	Cornor
	Anney	Belet	Burle	Costentyn
	Arcy	Berard	BurneH	Cosyn
	Arvile	Berevile	BusseH	CoudreH
8	Ascher ¹	Bereward	Bussey	Courtheuse
	Aspreville	Bernevile	Butevile	Crecy
	Aubeny	Berry	Butteler	CrieH
	Aubray	Beygnard ³	Butvileyn (68)	Cunly
12	Audeny	Bigot		Curecy
	Audevile	Birset	Camois	Curly
	AuenH	Bleis	Candrey	Curteis
	Auerenges	BloundeH	Canneville	Curteneis ⁴
16	Ayelard (16)	Bluet	Cardevile	Curthose
		Boner	Carevile	Curty (102)
	Bagot	Bontvile	Challenges	
	Banaster	Boynet	Chalurs	Dalamare
20	Bardulf	Brachet	Chambreleyn	Danstervile
	Baret	Bracy	ChameH	Darcy
	Barevile	Brassard	CharneH	DariH
	Barry	Bratet	Chastelleyn	Despenser
24	Bars	Bret	Chaucer *	Deynecourt
	Baskervile	Breuse	Chaundos	DrutaH
	Basset	Brian	Chene ¹	DucrcH
	Bastard	Bricourt	Cheyne	Duket
28	Baucan	Britoun	Clare	Dulapenne
	Baynard ² (28)	Brok (57)	ClareH (85)	Duredent (113)

¹ *om.* L.

² Barnard L.

³ Boigmard L.

⁴ Carteneis L.

Escot (114)	Gorger (150)	Lescey (184)	Moreus ⁶ (220)
Eurons	Gorunvile ³	Leverer	Morley
	Gower	Lincot	Morteyn
Ferebrace	Grace	Lonetot	Mortymen 4
Ferrer	Grauntsoun ²	Longchampe	Morville
Ferrers	Graynvile	Longevile	Motoun ²
Feschampe	Greis	LoveH	Moubray
Fetepace	Grenevile	Lucy	Mounfichet 8
Fitz ¹ Brian	Gunter	Lunar	Mountanasy
Fitz ¹ Garin	Gurnay (159)	Luncy	Mountegu
Fitz ¹ Geffray		Lyard	Mounteny
Fitz ¹ Herbert	Harecourt	Lynet	Mulet 12
Fitz ¹ Hu	Hachet	Lysle (196)	Murdak
Fitz ¹ Piers	Haket		Musard (233)
Fitz ¹ Symond	Hamelyn	Maignard ⁴	
Fitz ¹ Vise	Hanet	Malemayn	Neomarch 16
Fitz ¹ Water	Hansard	Malet	Nepount
Foleyn	Hanvile	Malynoler	Nevile
Foliambe ²	Hasard	Mamelbarin ²	Neyrout
Folville	Hautevile	Mansey	Niuelent(238) 20
Formentyn	Hay	Manus (or Manns)	Nunchampe
Fossard	Heiroun		
FreseH	Herey	Manyn ²	Ofvile
Fresvile	Heris	Marcimas	OreH ⁷ 24
Freyne	Hubert	Mareis	OrivaH
Frisoun	Hurfer	MarteH	Orrewar (243)
Frivile	Huscharles	Massy	
FurnyvaH		Matroners	Pachet 28
Fyneux (141)	Iardyn (176)	MaunceH	Palet
		Maundevile	PameH
Gamager	Keynes	Maureward	Panely
Gantlou	Kirlecot (178)	Meisy ⁵	Pantulf 32
Gaugy		Meyne	Parles
Gaunt	Lacy	MeyniH	Passamere
Gauter	La Heuse	Miler	Passauazunt
Gerard	Lambert	Mire	Peisoun ⁸ 36
Giffard	Ledet	Mongomery	Penire (or
Gorge (149)	Leoun (183)	MoreH (219)	Pemre) (253)

¹ Filz L.⁵ Mersy L.² om. L.⁶ Morens ? L.³ Gonurville L.⁷ Torell L.⁴ Maynard L.⁸ Tyson L.

	Percy (254)	Rosynis ² (284)	Soldeny (316)	Tuchet (347)
	Perly	Roter	Somerville	Tuny
	PevereH	Rusak	Sonevile	Tupet ⁷
4	Phanecourt	RusseH (287)	SouppiH (or SoupeiH)	Turbeville [Tyson, <i>see</i> Pei-soun]
	Picard	SaintbreneH	SpigurneH	
	Pigot	Saintclus	Spynevile	
8	Pilet ¹	Sainteler	Sunely	Valeus ⁸ (351)
	PineH	Sainterois	SurdevaH	Vauesour
	Pipard	Saintgorge ²	Swyward ⁶ (324)	VeeH
	Piroun ²	Sainthelyn		Veer
12	Pleisy	SaintIohn	Tabot	Veisyn
	Plevien	Saintleger	Taillepas	Venour
	Poer	Saintmore	Taillois	Verly
	Pouchet	Saintmoris	Tallebot	Vernoun
16	Pountfract	Saintnoyre	Tanet	Vescy
	Prers ²	Saintomer	Taryn	Vilers
	Punegis	Saintquintyn	Tenere	Vmframvile
	PurceH	Sancey (301)	Tibot	
20	Pus	Sanctclou	Tiptot	WadeH (362)
	[Putnell] ³	Sandervile	TireH (334)	Warrenne
	Putrell (274)	Santemareis ⁴	TorchappeH	Wasteneis
		Saucer	ToreH	Welby
24	Quatremars	Saunzaner	Toret	Widvile
	Quincy (276)	Saunzire	Torevile	Wildbef
		Savage	Tracy	Wishard
	Raynes	Say	TrameH	Wivile
28	Renger	Saylard	Trauers ²	
	Richemount	Scutevile	Trevet	Ynogre
	RideH	Sechevile	Truan	
	RocheH	Semery	Truret	Zoochh ⁹ (371)
32	Roos	Setvaus ⁵	Trusbut	
	Rosyn (283)	Seygues (315)	TrusseH (346)	

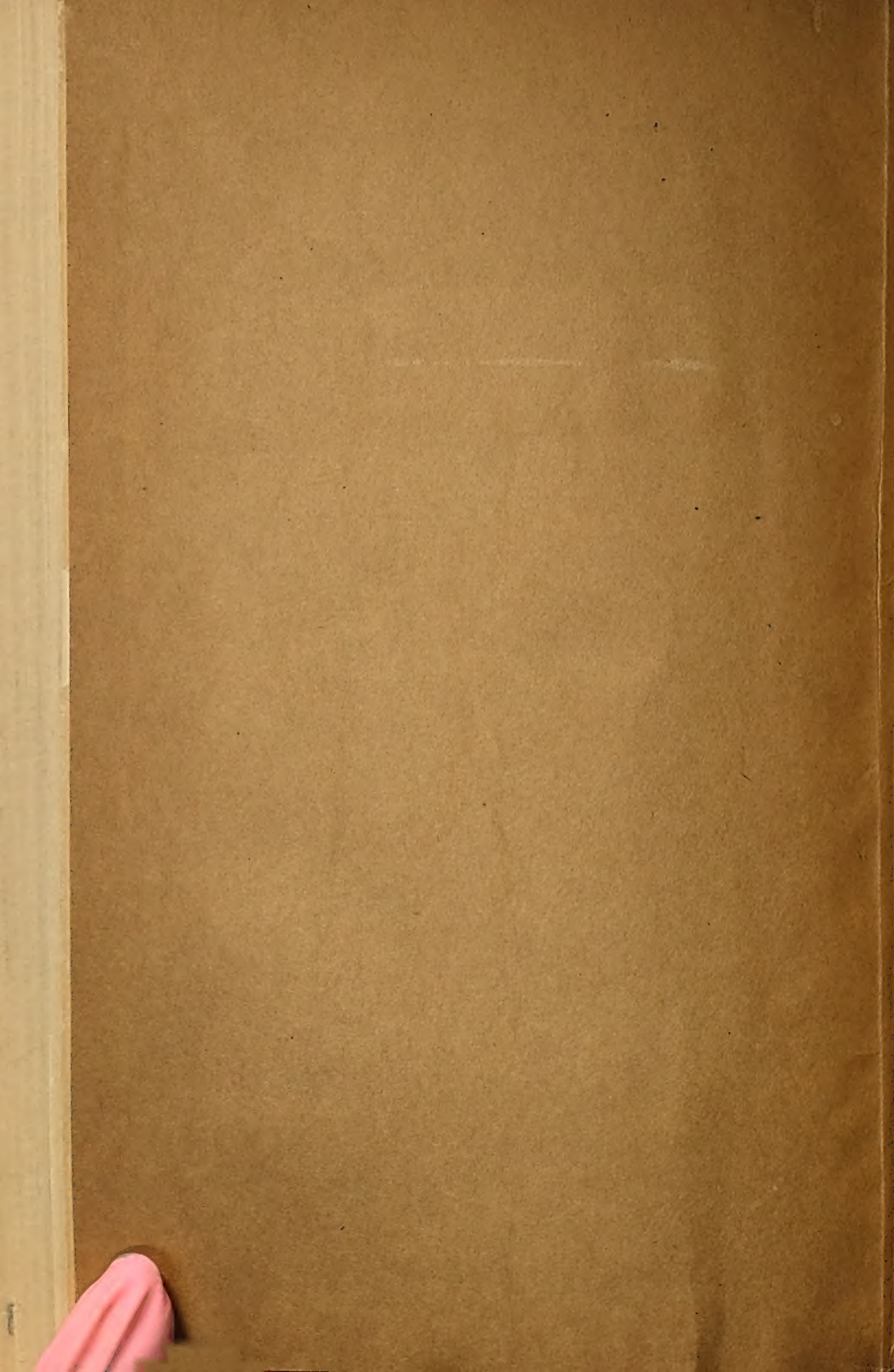
¹ Pelet L. ² *om.* L. ³ *only in* L. ⁴ Saintrioris² L.

⁵ Setvans ? L. ⁶ Swyand L. ⁷ Tapet L. ⁸ Valens ? L.

⁹ [?] *om.* L.

(211)

204



46685

SEP 18 '39

PR 1119 A2 no. 136

The Boat

cen



3 0081 003 315 292